

A NEW
GRAMMAR,
Italian-English,
AND
English-Italian:

Which contains a True and Easy METHOD
for acquiring these two LANGUAGES.

With many useful REMARKS, which are not to
be found in any other GRAMMAR of this Kind.

By *F. ALTIERI*, *K*
AUTHOR of the *Italian and English*
DICTIONARY, and PROFESSOR of the
Italian TONGUE in *LONDON*.



L O N D O N:

Printed for WILLIAM INNYS, at the West
End of *St. Paul's* Church-yard.]

M. DCC. XXVIII.

L
a
L
al
an
uf
un
E
th
as
ma
th



TO THE
HONOURABLE
Mrs. Berkley.

I Had no sooner resolved upon publishing this my Grammar, but that I perswaded my self of a favourable Reception, should I beg Leave to present it to You, who are always ready to encourage Industry, and to countenance whatever is usefully designed: For none so well understands how to promote the Endeavours of those who aim at the Improvement of Knowledge, as those who, like you, are intimately acquainted with it. Upon this Account, I presume to lay before

A 2 fore

DEDICATION.

fore You the following Sheets, as the Product of my best Endeavours ; and though they bear so mean a Name as mine in the Title Page ; yet as they tend to facilitate the Means to the Knowledge of the *Italian* Tongue ; of which you are so great an Admirer, and which is so universally esteem'd amongst the *English* Nobility ; I flatter my self, that you will take them under your Protection. Your kind Acceptance, Madam, I shall think so much the greater Happiness, not only as it gives me a Prospect of being serviceable to the World ; but much more, that I have at the same Time so favourable an Opportunity of expressing my Gratitude for the Favours you have already bestowed on me. Nor will it be only an Happiness to me, that you are pleased to patronize my present Undertaking ; but it will, in a great Measure, recommend it to
the

DEDICATION.

the candid Acceptance of the Ladies, for whose Improvement it was chiefly intended; since all the World is satisfied, that the Knowledge of polite Languages, amongst which is the *Italian*, is justly looked upon as one of the chief Qualifications of a liberal Education. I am afraid, Madam, that endeavouring to make an Apology for this Dedication, I ought to make another for having been too tedious already; since your own Judgement will satisfy you of the Usefulness of my Work, and since that Consideration alone is enough to induce you to Encourage it. But, Madam, as the World is accustomed to expect in Dedications the Character of our Patrons, so it may be wondered, that I have declined the usual Method; since any one, that has the Honour of knowing you, cannot want Materials that might be of use in setting them a good Pattern to imitate:
Yet

DEDICATION.

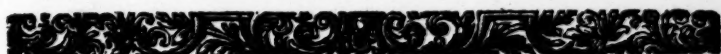
Yet since the Character would be drawn to a great Disadvantage by so mean a Pen as mine, I chose rather to be thought out of the common Road, than to be mistaken by following it ; since, especially, any Body that knows what Character belongs to a truly generous, bountiful, and accomplished Lady, cannot be unacquainted with yours. Therefore since no Encomiums can add to that which is already compleat, and can only be augmented by a Continuance of your Life, the Fear of misrepresenting it, is the Reason I decline it. Declaring my self,

Your most Humble,

and most obedient Servant,

Ferdinando Altieri.

T
tha
bee
my
der
win
W
Ho
trib
I w
ther
Dep
fall
since
Gra
Use
lian
of t
but
very
with
have
to de
migh
to she
a new



TO THE READER.

THE good Success my Dictionary has met with in the World; encouraged me to compose a Grammar, that might supply the Deficiency of those that have been printed before. Besides, the pressing Instances of my Friends have so far prevailed with me, as to undertake that laborious, though useful Work, but not without some Fear; knowing too well how apt the World is to Criticize upon Things of this Nature. However, as I have omitted nothing, that might contribute to render this my Grammar useful to Learners, I would desire the kind Reader to peruse it first, and then speak in praise or dispraise of it, according to its Deserts. Toriano has given us a Grammar, which falls very short of being so compleat as it ought to be; since the Syntax, which is the principal Part of a Grammar, is not extensive enough in explaining the Use of Particles; nor the Reference the Tenses of Italian Verbs have with the English; which makes one of the greatest Difficulties of the Italian Language; but he contented himself with laying down a few Rules, very useful indeed, but not sufficient to learn the Italian without the Assistance of a good Master. By what I have said against Toriano's Grammar, I don't mean to depreciate his Capacity; for I don't question but he might have given us a better if he had pleased; but only to shew, That I would have never attempted to compose a new one, had I not thought it useful, and necessary,

2

and

To the Reader.

and yet without incroaching upon another Man's Labour. As for Veneroni's, I have nothing to object, but this; that as he composed his Grammar for the French, by consequence, the Rules are adapted only to the French Idiom; whereas had he composed one for the English, he would have laid down other Rules conformable to the English Idiom. Now, can any one think that such a Grammar, though perfect in it self, could ever be of any service to an Englishman, who is to learn Italian, not by the French, but by the English? Don't we know the wide Difference between the French and English Languages, in regard to their Idioms? And yet the Translator, for he is nothing else, has so long imposed upon the Publick, by giving out a Grammar, which the Author never designed for the English. You will see in this my Grammar the Use of the Italian Particles so clearly explained, that without the least Trouble, you will understand how to use them, though they seem to cause the greatest Difficulty of the Italian Tongue. The Use of Tenses is also explained in a particular, easy, (and I may say) new Manner, with other Remarks upon that Subject, useful to be learned. And since the English Tongue is now so much recommended and desired abroad, especially in the Sea-port Towns in Italy, I have thought fit to add an English Grammar to the Italian; and for that I have chosen the best English Grammars, concerning the Pronunciation of Letters, explaining their different Sounds, by others adapted to the Italian Pronunciation; omitting nothing that might be useful and advantageous: Assuring the kind Reader, that the whole has been performed with Zeal for his Improvement, and with no other View, but to serve the English Nation in general.

A New

Lang
Mou
Ho
Gram
as cle
say, if
them
follow
other,
the P
they a
the on
say, up
by free

A NEW

Italian Grammar.

C H A P. I.

Of the Pronunciation.

IT is almost as impossible for an Author to express the true Pronunciation of Words in writing, as it is impossible for a Painter to represent a Sound by Colours. The best Rule I would establish to pronounce the Languages well, would be to learn them from the Mouth of those who pronounce them the best.

However, to conform myself to the usual way of Grammarians, I will endeavour to give some Rules as clear as possible: For what would the Publick say, if before I teach them to speak, I did not teach them how to pronounce? The Order that I shall follow will be to examine each Letter, one after the other, by explaining the Qualities, the Nature, and the Proprieties of them; upon what Occasions they are incompatible among themselves, and when the one is changed for the other. In short, I shall say, upon this Subject, what I have learned, either by frequenting with those who pronounce the best,

B

or

2 *A New Italian Grammar.*

or by reading the best Authors ; which will be useful, not only for the Pronunciation, but also for the Orthography, and for to know the Beauty of our Poetry.

SECT. I.

Of simple Sounds, and Letters in general.

The *Italians* have but twenty Letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, Z.

SECT. II.

Of the Division of Letters.

Letters are divided into Vowels and Consonants.

The Vowels are,

A, E, I, O, U.

The Consonants,

B, C, D, F, G, H, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S, T, Z.

The Vowels are thus called, because they form a Voice or perfect Sound of themselves, without the Help of another.

The rest of the Letters are called Consonants, that is, sounding with another, because they cannot make a Sound, or be pronounced without the help of another, either before or after; as *be*, *ce*, *em*, *en*.

As for *h*, it is neither Vowel nor Consonant, but only a Mark of Aspiration; as in these Words, *Ho*, *hanno*, *Hanno*.

In the *Italian* Language all the Letters are pronounced, and there is none but what is useful, except the *H*, as I have said before, that is never founded; which makes Foreigners to have less

Trouble

Trouble to learn *Italian*, than the *Italians* to learn foreign Languages.

SECT. III.

Of the Combination of Sounds and Letters.

From some Letters singly pronounced, or joined with others, arise Syllables; one or more Syllables make Words; Words make Sentences; which last make up the whole Language or Speech.

A Syllable is the Sound of one or more Letters pronounced at one Time: As for Example, there are three Syllables in *A-mo-re*, Love; and four in *Giu-ra-men-to*, Oath.

A Word consists of one, or more Syllables; as, *con*, with; *Tempo*, Time; *Amare*, to Love.

A Sentence or Phrase is made up of several Words that make Sense together; as, *La vostra Compagnia m'è stata sempre cara*, your Company was always agreeable to me.

A Language or Speech is the Way of expressing our Thoughts, which may be done either by Word of Mouth, or in writing: Therefore, there are two chief Things required for that Purpose, *viz.* true Pronunciation, and Spelling.

SECT. IV.

Of the Pronunciation of Letters.

Of the Vowel A.

A in *Italian* sounds like *A* in *English*, in these Words, *All*, tall, *War*; as, *Amore*, Love; *cantare*, to sing; *parlare*, to speak.

A sometimes is pronounced with more strength; as, *Andare*, to go; and sometimes softer; as, *A-more*, love; and sometimes we draw it long, as if there

there were two *aa* ; as, *ah crudele!* ah cruel ! perhaps 'tis the Effect of the Aspiration that follows it. The Reason why they pronounce with more strength the Vowel *a* in *andare*, than in *Amore*, is, because in the first Word 'tis followed by two Consonants, that always cause a longer Sound, than in the others; which makes me to establish this general Rule, not only for the *a*, but also for the other Vowels ; that They have always two Sounds, the one soft; when they are followed by a single Consonant, the other stronger when they are followed by two Consonants; as *caro*, dear ; *Carro*, a Cart ; *Velo*, a Veil ; *Vello*, Fleecce ; *vile*, vile ; *Ville*, Cities ; *colo*, I love with ardour ; *Collo*, the Neck ; *Bruto*, a Brute ; *brutto*, ugly.

A is cut off in the Article, and the Pronoun, *la*, before a Vowel, as in *l' Anima*.

A is sometimes an Article of the Dative Case ; as, *a me*, to me, *a noi*, to us ; with an Apostrophe 'tis used instead of *ai*, *a' miei Amici*, to my Friends.

Feminine Nouns ending in *a* are never abridged, except the Words *Hora*, *leggiera*, *suora*, instead of which one may say *Hor*, *leggier*, *suor*.

C.

The Letter *C* before the Vowels *e*, *i*, is pronounced like the English *ch* ; as, *Centro*, *Cecità*, *Celebrare*, *Città*, read *Tchentro*, *Tchetchità*, *Tchelebrare*, *Tchittà*.

C before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, and before the *h*, is pronounced like our *k* ; as, *Capo*, *Cavallo*, *Conto*, *Custode*, read *Kapo*, *Kavallo*, *Konto*, *Kustode*.

If *cc* come before *h*, or before *a*, *o*, *u*, they are pronounced strong ; as *Specchi*, Looking-glasses, *Vacca*, a Cow, *stracco*, weary, *occupato*, employed.

CC before *e* or *i*, are pronounced like *tch*; as, *eccedere*, to exceed, *uccidere*, to kill.

Ch before *e* or *i*, is pronounced like *k*; as, *cheto*, *chino*, read *keto*, *kino*.

Note, that *ch* may have two different Sounds, the one stronger, the other softer. Their different Sounds may be learned by the following Rules.

Chi, which in *English* signifies who, with its Compounds, *chiunque*, whosoever; *chi che si sia*, whosoever, is pronounced strong.

All the Words which begin by the same Syllable *chi*; as, *chiro*, *Chirurgo*, *Chimera*; together with all the Words that have the Diphthong with *i* at the last Syllable, are pronounced soft; as, *vecchio*, old; *Occhio*, Eye; *Cocchio*, Coach.

But all the Words which don't begin by *chi*, nor have the Diphthong with *i* at the last Syllable, generally are pronounced stronger; as, *Spechi*, Grotto's, *Buchi*, Holes.

We have said before that the Words having the Diphthong with *i* at the last Syllable have a soft Sound; but you must observe, that if the same Diphthong is preceded by *s*, it ought to be pronounced strong; as, *Maschio*, *muschio*.

In the Syllables *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, the *i* is sounded slightly; as, *Bracia*, *laccio*, *ciurma*, read *Bratcha*, *latcho*, *churma*.

E.

The Letter *e* has two different Sounds, the one open like *ay* in *dayly*, the other close as like the *English* word *Mellow*. 'Tis in what consists the greatest Part of the Beauty of the *Italian* Pronunciation, which, however, can't be learned but by a long Use, notwithstanding all the Rules that can be given for it.

B 3

E pre-

E preceeded by *i*, forms with it a Diphthong, and it is pronounced open, in any Syllable whatsoever; as *Piè, Diè, Cieco, Chiedo, Miele, Sieguo, vieto, volontieri, bandiera, altiero*; also in all Nouns feminine of the same Termination; as *Guerriera, Lusinghiera*.

But in the Nouns masculine, although ending in *iero*, the Diphthong is pronounced with a Sound less opened; and, because the Nicety of this Pronunciation is hardly attained by Foreigners, the best Way for them is to pronounce it close; *Ca-valiero, Barbiero, Nocchiero*.

From this Rule must be excepted the *Latin* Nouns that have an *i*, which in *Italian* is changed in *e*. The Vowel *e* in these Words ought to be pronounced open, as *bicco, pieco, Diego*, which come from the *Latin, obliquus, plico, Didacus*.

The Pronouns *miei, colei, lei, costei*, and all the first Persons singular of the Optative of the Verbs *amerei, leggerei, udirei*, follow the same Rule.

The Imperfects, *facea, dicea, volea*, are pronounced with the *e* close, because the *ea* is not a true Diphthong, but a syncopè of the Words *faceva, diceva, voleva*, which retain the Pronunciation of their Primitives.

When the *e* is without Accent, and preceeded by a Comma, then it is a Conjunction, *io, e voi, I, and you*.

To avoid the Concurrence of two Vowels, they write *ed*, instead of *e*; *ed egli a me rispose*, and he answered to me. *E* with the Accent, is the third Person singular of the Verb *essere*, to be; *ed è ben giusto ch'io soffrisca, e peni*, and it is very just that I should suffer.

With

A New Italian Grammar.

7

With the Apostrophe, it is put instead of *egli*, he; *eglino*, they; *non sapea chi e' fosse*, or *chi e' fossero*, I did not know who he was, or who they were.

They put sometimes this *e'* with an Apostrophe, as a Particle expletive, *e' mi par di vederlo*, methinks I see him.

G.

This Letter has two Sounds; the one strong, the other soft. Before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, or before a Consonant, it is pronounced as in *English*; as, *Gabbia*, a Cage; *Godo*, I enjoy; *Gusto*, Taste; *Grido*, a Cry.

Before the Vowels *e*, and *i*, it is pronounced like *dg*; *Genero*, Son-in-law; *Ginocchio*, the Knee, read *Dgenero*, *Dginocchio*.

The *Tuscans* to give the *g* a stronger Pronunciation before the Vowels *e*, and *i*, as it is before *a*, *o*, *u*, put the *h* between; as, *Gherbino*, the south-west wind; *Ghirlanda*, a Garland.

Gg before *e*, or *i*, are pronounced like *dg*; as, *leggere*, to read; *oggi*, to day.

Gh has two Sounds, as we have said of *ch*, that is to say, the Words which begin or end with a Diphthong with an *i* in it, have a softer Sound; as, *Ghiado*, Sword; *Ghiotto*, Glutton; *Ungbia*, Nail. In other Words the *gh* is pronounced strong; as, *Ghirlanda*, *Alberghi*, *Intrighi*.

The Letter *g* may be followed by the Letters *l*, *n*, *r*, in the same Syllable; as, *Gloria*, Glory; *Bagno*, Bath; *Grande*, Great. But it is to be observed, that the Letter *l*, preceeded by a *g*, and followed by an *i*, melts into another *l*; as, *Figlio*, a Son; *Giglio*, Lilly; read *Fillio*, *Gillio*; except *Negligenza*, *Negligente*, which have the same Pronunciation as in *English*.

In the Syllables *gia, gio, giu*, the *i* is not sounded, and you must not lay a great Stress upon the *g*; as, *Giardino*, a Garden; *Giorno*, a Day; *Giustizia*, Justice.

The Syllables *gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu*, are pronounced soft, almost like *un*; as, *Campagna*, Country; *Castagne*, Chestnuts; *ogni*, every; *Ingegno*, Wit; *ignudo*, naked.

The Syllables *gua, gue, gui*, are pronounced like *gwa, gwe, gwi*; as, *guastare*, to spoil; *Guerra*, War; *Guida*, a Guide.

H.

Although *h* is not properly a Letter, but only a Mark of Aspiration, yet in our Language it is very useful; nay, in some Places very necessary, for to give a greater Force to the Letters, to avoid the Equivocation in some Words, and to give them a Sense, which otherwise they would not have. In the first Case are *cheto*, still; *chino*, bent; and several others.

As for the Equivoques, *hanno*, third Person plural of the Present of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *avere*, to have, signifies, they have; and *Anno* signifies a Year; *Ghiaccio*, Ice; *giaccio*, I lie down; *ho*, I have; *o*, or; *amo*, I love; *Hamo*, a fishing-hook; *vegghio*, I am awake; *veggio*, I see.

Io amai sempre, ed amo forte ancora.

In tale stella presi l'arco, e l'amo.

Rompete il Ghiaccio, che pietà contende.

E volo sopra il Cielo, e giaccio in terra.

In fine, the Words *occhio, vecchio*, and many others require the *h* to make Sense; for if one did pronounce *occio, veccio*, these words would have no Signification.

Before

Before *a, o, u*, the *b* has no Sound ; and therefore is omitted.

I.

The Vowel *i* is pronounced in *English* like *ee* ; as, *Libro*, a Book, read *Leebro*.

Note, That when *i* is between the Consonants *c, g, gl, sc*, and the Vowels *a, o, u*, it serves only to render the Pronunciation softer, and it is not expressed ; as, *ciascheduno, giamai, gli, scioperato*, read *schascheduno, jamai, lli, shoperato*.

I, followed by another Vowel, for the most Part forms a Diphthong ; therefore, to pronounce well these Vowels, you must make of them but one Syllable ; as, *Piaga, Fiele, Fiore*. Sometimes the *i* is separated from the Vowel, but very seldom ; as *chiunque*, whosoever, read *chi-unque*.

To avoid the Harshness in the Pronunciation, we add the *i* to the Words that begin with an *s*, followed by another Consonant, provided the Word that preceeds ends with a Consonant ; as, *per ischerzo, per isdegno*, instead of *per scherzo, per sdegno*.

The *i* is often a Consonant, when it is followed by a Vowel, and is pronounced like *y* in the Word *you* ; as, *Abbajare*, to bark ; *Ajuto*, Help.

The Vowel *i* by itself is the Masculine Article of the plural Number ; *I Libri*, the Books.

I, with an Apostrophe stands for *Io* ; which is however peculiar to Poetry.

L.

The Letter *L* is pronounced the same as in *English* ; *Legame, lontano, Lume*.

M. N. These

M. N.

These two Letters are pronounced as in *English*: But it is to be observed, that the Syllables *im*, *in*, at the Beginning of a Word, followed by a Consonant, must be pronounced so, that no Space of Time may be left between the Consonants *m*, and *n*, and the following; for Example, in the Words *imbolare*, *impedire*, *incrudelire*, *indegno*, the first Syllables ought to be pronounced so quick, that the Sound of *im*, *in*, may not be expressed separately from the following Consonant, as the most Part of Foreigners do; who, in pronouncing the Word *impero*, *indegno*, sound the Syllables *im*, *in*, as if they were followed by an *e*. The best Way to attain to the Nicety of this Pronunciation, is to learn it from the Mouth of a Master, who understands well the Language.

O.

The natural Sound of this Vowel commonly is close, as that of the *e*; but there is a great many exceptions.

1. In all the Monosyllables, the *o* is pronounced open; ex. *bò*, *pro*, *no*, *ciò*, with its Compounds, *accìò*, *perciò*.

2. In all the first Persons singular of the Futures of the Indicative Mood; as *amerò*, *leggerò*, *udirò*; but to give a more general Rule: *Note*, that the *ò* with an Accent at the End of a Word is always pronounced open.

3. In the Penultima, or last Syllable but one of the Words *Coro*, *sonoro*, *canoro*, *sodo*, *ferò*, and in several

several proper Names in *oro*, and *ora*; as *Polidoro*, *Flora*, *Leonora*,

4. In the Words derived from the *Latin*; as *dotto*, from *doctus*; *porto*, from *portus*. But the *o*, which is formed from a *Latin u*, is pronounced close; as *Giovane*, from *Juvenis*; *Giogo*, from *Jugum*; *Giovare*, from *Juvare*.

This Letter may serve to form two Diphthongs, *io*, and *uo*; in both of which the *o* is pronounced open; as *Chioma*, *chiodo*, *Gioja*, *uffignuolo*, *Cuore*, *Fuoco*, *Stuolo*, &c. except *Fiore*, in which, notwithstanding the Diphthong *io*, the *o* is pronounced close.

The *o* derived from the *Latin* Diphthong *au*, is pronounced open; as in the Words *Oro*, *Godo*, *Allo-re*, *Toro*, which have been formed from the *Latin* Words *Aurum*, *Gaudeo*, *Laurus*, *Taurus*.

When the *i* is put between two Vowels, the First of which is *o*, this *o* is pronounced open, as *Troja*, *Noja*, *Gioja*; except *Avoltojo*, a Vultur, *Ingojare*, to Swallow; *Rasojo*, a Razor; *Asciugatojo*, a Towel.

The Position, or Anteposition causes the *o* to be pronounced open, as we have said of the *e*; as *Botta*, *colgo*, *Donna*, *atroce*, *Prole*, &c. *Sprone*, Spur; *Croce*, Cross, are excepted, and the *o* is pronounced close.

In the Words derived from the *Latin*, whereof an *u* has been changed into *o*, this *o* is always pronounced close, notwithstanding the Position; as *Colomba*, *Torre*, *Orso*, from *Columba*, *Turvis*, *Ursus*.

If the Position is formed by the Letter *n*, either double or single, although the Words are not derived from the *Latin*, the *o* is pronounced also close; as *biondo*, *gonna*, *Sonno*, *Tronco*: Likewise if the Letter *n* is preceeded by a *g*; as *Sogna*, Dream; *Bisogno*, Need; *Vergogna*, Shame.

Except

Except *Bologna, Catalogna, Donna, Ponno*, where the *o* is pronounced open.

The *o* is also pronounced open in all the Words, whereof the Antepenultima, or the last Syllable but two is long; as *Fòmite, òpera, risòlvete*; except *Ordine*, in which the *o* is pronounced close.

Note, that if the *o* derives from the *u* Latin, it ought to be pronounced always close; as, *Fol-gore, Polvere, Porpora*, from *Fulgur, Pulvis, Purpura*.

In the third Persons plural of the Present, and of the Perfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, the *o* is also pronounced close; as, *pongono*, they put; *corrono*, they run; *posero*, they did put; *corsero*, they did run; with their Infinitives. In all other Words comprehend in none of the Rules which I have given; the *o* is always pronounced close. However, I say, that those who are not very much advanced in the *Italian* Tongue; or those who do not aim at the perfect Knowledge of the Language; may dispense themselves to read the Rules given about the double Sound of the *e*, and of the *o*; because they are so little sensible, that many *Italians* do not distinguish them.

P.

This Letter is pronounced the same as in *English*; and it is suppressed in some Words derived from the *Latin*, where 'tis followed by an *s*; as in *Salmo, Salmodia, Salterio*; instead of *Psalmo, Psalmodia, Psalterio*.

Q.

This Letter is mute of itself, and it does not receive its Sound but from the *u*, with which it is accom-

accompanied; so that these two Letters together, form the Sound of *ou*. The *q* before the Diphthong *ui* makes but a Syllable; as *qui*, here.

R.

The Letter *r* is naturally hard, and sometimes we double it in our Language to give it a greater hardness when there is Occasion; as, *Guerra*, *correre*, &c. sometimes we change it into an *i*, to soften the Pronunciation; as, *Acciajo*, Steel; *Danajo*, Money; instead of *Acciario*, *Danaro*; *Gennajo*, January; *Febrajo*, February, for *Gennaro*, *Febrero*.

S.

This Letter has two Sounds in our Language; the one sharp; as, *scalzare*, *esca*, in which Examples the *s* is pronounced as if it was double; as in the Words *Cassa*, Box; *stesso*, self; the other Sound is soft, as *Rosa*, *Sposa*, *accusa*, &c. In the Beginning of Words, the *s* being before a Vowel, or before any of these Consonants *c*, *f*, *p*, *t*, is generally pronounced with great Force; as, *Salute*, Health; *santo*, holy; *Servo*, Servant; *Scala*, Ladder; *Sforzo*, Effort; *sperare*, to hope; *Studio*, Study.

S c before *e*, *i*, is pronounced as *sh* in *English*; as, *scegliere*, to chuse; *scemare*, to diminish; *lasciare*, to leave; read *shigliere*, *shemare*, *lashare*.

T.

The Letter *t* followed by a single Vowel, has the same Sound as in the *English*: The Difficulty lies in the Words in which it is followed by an *i*, and another Vowel: In this Case it has two Sounds, the

the one hard; as in the Words *Malattia*, Sickneſs; *Sentiero*, Foot-path; *Simpatia*, Sympathy; in which Words the Syllable *ti* has the ſame Sound as in the *Engliſh* Words beginning with *ti*; as, *Tiberius*, titular.

The other Sound is ſofter, like *ts* in *Engliſh*; as, *Ambitione*, Ambition; *Amicitia*, Friendſhip; *Gratia*, Grace; *Punitione*, Punishment; read *Ambitione*, *Amicitſia*, &c.

Note, Alſo the *t* is pronounced hard; firſt in the firſt and ſecond Perſons plural of the Preſent Tenſes of the Verbs *Combattere*, to fight; *patire*, to ſuffer; *ſentire*, to hear; ſo we ſay, *Combattiamo*, *patiamo*, *ſentiamo*, *combattiate*, *patiate*, *ſentiate*.

2. It is pronounced the ſame in the Words where the *t* is preceeded by an *f*; as, *Careſtia*, Pe-nury; *Queſtione*, Queſtion, &c.

Note, That in the Words where the Syllable *ti* is pronounced ſoft, the *Tuſcans* write and pronounce *zi*; as, *Amicizia*, *Grazia*, *Grazie*, *Adorazione*.

U.

The Letter *u* is pronounced in *Italian* like *oo* in the *Engliſh*; as, *Luna*, Moon, read *Loona*.

It is to be obſerved, that the *u* before a Vowel is almoſt always a conſonant; as, *Vaſto*, *vero*, *Vitio*, *Volgo*.

In the Words *Uomo*, Man; *Uopo*, Need; *Uovo*, Egg, the *u* is a Vowel.

When the *u* is preceeded by a Conſonant, it does not form a Diphthong, but it is pronounced ſeparately; as, *Conſu-eto*, uſed; *perſu-aſo*, perſuaded; *Ru-ina*, Ruin.

It is not true, as ſome Grammarians pretend, that the Vowel *u* is not pronounced, when it is followed

followed by an *o* in the same Syllable. They give us as an Example in the following Words, *Buono*, good; *Fuoco*, Fire; *Cuore*, Heart. The Rule is very false; for we pronounce these two Vowels so, as the Sound of both, although distinct, do not form together but one Syllable. After all, the true Pronunciation of it is so nice, that it is not to be attained by Precepts; and therefore you must learn it of those that pronounce good *Italian*.

X.

This Letter has been received in our Language, only to preserve it in some foreign Words; as, *Xanto*, *Xantippo*, *Xenocrate*, *Xerfe*; which however are pronounced as if they were written with an *s*, *Santippo*, *Senocrate*, *Serfe*.

We use one *s* or two *ss* in the Room of the *x*; that is to say, two *ss* before a Vowel, and one before a Consonant; as, *Alessandro*, *Essemplo*, for *Alexandro*, *Exemplo*; *estinto*, *estremo*, for *extincto*, *extremo*.

In the Words taken from the Latin, where the *x* is followed by a *c*, this *x* is changed into another *c*; as, *eccellente*, excellent; *eccitare*, to excite, from *excellens*, *excitare*.

Z.

This Letter is not a double Letter, as some Grammarians pretend; for if it was, it could not be doubled, as is practised; *Pazzo*, *Bellezza*, &c.

It has two Sounds, the one strong, which we call sharp; as, *Prezzo*, Price; *Saviezza*, Wisdom, pronouncing the *z* as *ts*. The other less sharp; as, *Zio*, Uncle; *Zelo*, Zeal, read *Dzio*, *Dselo*. There

is a Kind of a third Sound that results from the Use introduced by the *Tuscans*, who instead of the *t* followed by an *i* and another Vowel, use the *z*, which forms a Sound between the first two ; as, *Orazione*, *Divozione*, for *Oratione*, *Divotione*.

SECT. V.

Of the Incompatibility of Letters.

If Softness in Languages is a Natural Beauty, without doubt it proceeds from a certain Harmony which the Disposition of Letters produces. The *Italian* Tongue, by the common Opinion of every Body the softest of all the living Languages, has in several Cases endeavoured to avoid the Meeting of Letters, which have, at least, as we think, a hard and disagreeable Sound. One may see in this Chapter the Letters that are compatible or incompatible between themselves ; and by that judge, whether it is possible to form certain Sounds that the Ignorance of some Masters pretend to teach, and the Simplicity of Scholars strive to learn. Besides, what I shall say here will serve not only for the Orthography, but will also contribute very much to the Pronunciation.

It is a certain Rule, that the Vowels may receive before and after them any of the Consonants, and that the Consonants may be preceeded or followed by any of the Vowels.

The Letter *b* receives before it *l*, *m*, *r*, *s*, but in different Syllables ; as, *Albume*, the White of an Egg ; *lambicare*, to distill ; *Erba*, Herb ; *disbattere*, to shake.

It admits after it, in the same Syllable, *l* and *r*, as, *Obbligo*, Obligation ; *Ombra*, Shade.

It takes one *r* after it, and in the same Syllable, in the Beginning of Words; as, *bramare*, to wish; *brutto*, ugly.

The Letter *c* cannot be put before any other Consonant but *l* and *r*; as, *Classe*, Class; *Clemenza*, Clemency; *Critica*, Critick; *scrivere*, to write; *incredibile*, incredible.

This Letter receives before it, but in different Syllables, *l, n, r, s*; as, *Calca*, a Crowd; *Incudine*, an Anvil; *Arcano*, a Secret; *ascondere*, to hide.

The *Italians* have not *ct* as the *English*; but they change the *c* into *t*; as, *Dottore*, a Doctor; *Aspetto*, Aspect; *Respetto*, Respect; and in the *Latin* Words where the *ct* is preceded by a Consonant, the *c* is suppressed; so of *sanctus* they make *santo*, of *Tinctura*, *tintura*, &c.

The Letter *d* does not admit any other Letter in the Beginning of a Word but *s*; as, *Sdegno*, Disdain; *sdegnare*, to disdain.

In the Middle of Words, but not in the same Syllable, it receives before it *l, n, r, s*; as, *Caldo*, Heat; *andare*, to go; *ardere*, to burn; *disdicevole*, indecent.

It does not admit any other Consonant after it but the Letter *r*; as, *Drago*, a Dragon; *Drudo*, a Gallant.

The Letter *f* admits before it, but in different Syllables, *l, n, r, s*; as, *Alfiero*, an Ensign; *Enfiato*, Swelling; *Farfalla*, a Butterfly; *disfatto*, undone.

It may be followed by the Letters *l, r*, either in the Beginning or in the Middle of Words; as, *debile*, weak; *afflitto*, afflicted; *freddo*, cold; *raffrenare*, to curb.

The Letter *g* may be preceded, but not in the same Syllable, by the Consonants *l, n, r*; as,

C

Volgo,

Volgo, the Vulgar ; *vangare*, to dig ; *Argomento*, Argument.

In the Beginning of Words it is preceeded by the Letter *s* ; as, *sguardo*, a Look ; *sgridare*, to rebuke.

It may be followed either in the Beginning or in the Middle of Words, by *l*, *n*, *r* ; as, *gli*, the ; *Guadagno*, Gain ; *grave*, heavy.

The *b* is never followed by a Consonant ; it is commonly preceeded by *c* or *g* ; as, *Occhi*, Eyes ; *Ghirlanda*, a Garland.

The Letter *l* may be followed by all the others, except *n*, *r*, but in different Syllables.

It admits before it in the same Syllable *b*, *c*, *f*, *p*, *s*, *t* ; as, *Blardizie*, Caresses ; *Clamore*, Clamour ; *Flauto*, Flute ; *placido*, calm ; *slogare*, to dislocate ; *Atlante*, Atlas.

The Letter *m* receives before it *b*, *p*, but in different Syllables ; as, *Ambasciata*, Embassy ; *Impéro*, Empire.

It may be preceeded by an *l*, an *r*, and an *s*, but not in the same Syllable ; as, *Alma*, the Soul ; *Norma*, Rule ; *Risma*, Ream of Paper ; *Scisma*, Schism.

The Letter *n* does not admit in the same Syllable but the *g* before it ; as, *ogni*, every ; *Guadagno*, Gain. In the Beginning of Words it is not to be found after the *g*, but in *Gnaffe*, Zookers.

The Letter *n* admits after it, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *s*, *t*, *v*, *z*, but in different Syllables.

The Letter *p* can be followed by the Letters *l* and *r*, in the same Syllable ; as, *placare*, to appease ; *Prato*, Field.

It may be preceeded by the Letters *l*, *m*, *r*, *s*, in the Middle of Words, but in different Syllables ;

bles ; as, *alpestre*, rugged ; *Imperio*, Empire ; *Arpa*, Harp ; *Sospetto*, Suspicion.

It receives the Letter *s* in the Beginning of Words, and by Consequence in the same Syllable ; as, *Spada*, Sword ; *Spettacolo*, Spectacle.

The Letter *q* admits no Consonant after it, but is always followed by the Vowel *u*, and before, it does not admit any but the *n* ; as, *dunque*, then ; *unqua*, never : As for the *c* 'tis but the Changing of the *q* that ought to be doubled ; as, *Acqua*, Water ; *nacque*, he was born ; *piacque*, he pleased.

The Letter *r* receives all the Letters after it ; as, *Barba*, a Beard ; *Varco*, a Passage ; *verde*, green, &c.

It admits before it, in the same Syllable, either in the Beginning or in the Middle of Words the Letters *b, c, d, f, g, p, t, v* ; as, *Brodo*, Broth ; *credere*, to believe ; *Drudo*, a Gallant, &c.

The Letter *s* can be followed by all the Letters, either in the Beginning or in the Middle of Words, except the *z*.

It admits before it the Letters *l, n, r*, but not in the same Syllable ; as, *Balsamo*, Balm ; *Eccelfo*, high ; *Consolazione*, Comfort ; *arse*, he burned.

The Letter *t* admits after it the Letter *l*, but 'tis only in some foreign Words ; as, *Atleta*, a Champion ; *Atlante*, Atlas.

It admits also after it, in the same Syllable, the Letter *r* ; as, *Trave*, Beam ; *Scaltro*, Cunning.

The Letter *t* can be put in the same Syllable with the Letter *s* ; as, *Istoria*, History ; *Studio*, Study.

The Consonant *v* receives before it, *l, n, r, s*, but not in the same Syllable ; as, *Selva*, Forest ; *Convito*, Feast ; *Disvario*, Difference.

This Letter admits no other Consonant after it but the *r*, when it is put instead of *f*; as, *sovra*, upon; *Cavriuolo*, a Kid.

The Letter *z* can neither be preceeded nor followed by any Consonant.

Of the Accent.

The Accent is the raising of one's Voice, or a remarkable Sound of one of the Syllables of the Words we pronounce.

We admit no other Accents in our Language but two, the Grave and the Acute; the Grave is expressed thus (`); the Acute thus (´).

The Grave Accent is to be put upon the last Vowel that ends the Words, either whole or abridged.

The Words that are whole; as, *Giesù*, Jesus; *Corfù*, the Island of *Corfù*.

The Words with a syncopé or abridged; as, *Onestà*, *Beltà*, *Virtù*, *Gioventù*, instead of *Onestate*, *Beltade*, *Virtude*, *Gioventude*.

We mark also with the same Accent the third Persons singular of the Verbs of the first Conjugation in the Preterit Tense; as, *cantò*, he sung; *amò*, he loved, to distinguish them from the first Persons singular in the Present of the Indicative Mood; *io canto*, I sing; *io amo*, I love. It serves also for the third Persons singular of the same Tenses in the Verbs of the second and third Conjugation; as, *credè*, he believed; *udì*, he heard; and for the first and third Persons singular of the Future in all the Verbs; as, *amerò*, I shall love; *amerà*, he shall love; *crederò*, I shall believe; *crederà*, he shall believe; *udirò*, I shall hear; *udirà*, he shall hear.

This Accent is also marked upon the Words of one Syllable, either Nouns, Verbs, or Adverbs.

In

In the Nouns ; as, *Rè*, the King ; *Pò* the River *Po*. In the Verbs ; as, *hò*, I have ; *può*, he can. In the Adverbs ; as, *già*, already ; *giù*, down ; *sù*, above ; *più*, more. But very often we put no Accent upon the Monosyllables, because they are naturally accented, and they are always pronounced as if they had an Accent.

The Article *la*, the ; and the Particle Copulative *e* and, have no Accent ; but it is necessary to put the Accent upon the Adverb *là* there. It is the same with *e* : for with an Accent thus *è*, is the third Person singular of the Present of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *to be*, and signifies *is*. The Acute that is placed on the Penultima, or the last Syllable but one, serves either to avoid the Ambiguity of two Words of the same Spelling, but of different Signification ; as, *già*, he went ; and *già*, already : the first has two Syllables, and is the third Person of the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood of the defective Verb *gire*, to go ; and the second of one Syllable is an Adverb of Time, taken from the *Latin*, *jam*, already.

It serves also to shew that a Word has been shortned ; as, *fuggìro*, they flew ; *amàro*, they loved, instead of *Fuggirono*, *amarono*.

Of the Apostrophe, or Elision.

The Apostrophe, which is also called Elision is the striking out of a Vowel before another, which is generally marked by an inverted *c* thus (*'*).

We use the Elision in all the Words ending with a Vowel, and followed by another that begins with a Vowel ; as, *Amor' è cosa amara*, Love is a bitter thing.

The Words ending in *a*, though followed by a Vowel, suffer no Elision ; *ancora ei vive*, he is still alive.

Proper Names follow the same Rule ; *Annibale e'l mio Nome*, my Name is Annibal ; *Romà è una gran Città*, Rome is a great City.

Gli, the, is never written with an Elision ; *gli amori*, *gli Elementi*, *gli Occhi*, *gli Uccelli* : but you must pronounce these Words so nimbly as if the final Vowels and the Initial made a Diphthong, thus ; *gliamori*, *glie-lement*, *glioc-chi*, *gliuc-celli*.

But when the Word that follows begins with an *i*, then the *i* of *gli* is drowned, and its Absence is marked with an Apostrophe ; *gl' Ingegni*, *gl' Idoli*.

These Words *Animo*, the Courage ; *duro*, hard ; *Volo*, Flight, suffer no Elision ; as also the Nouns, whose last Vowel is preceded by a double Consonant ; as, *destro*, right ; *tristo*, sorrowful ; *aspro*, sharp.

The Particle, *che*, that, in Prose being with an *h*, has no Elision, but in Verse the *h* is drowned by the Word that follows ; so that only the *c* is left : Here are two Examples, *gli Uomini che hanno Moglie sono privi di Libertà*, Men that have a Wife are deprived of Liberty.

Se non se aliquanti c'hanno invidia al sole.

On the contrary, we add an *h* either in Prose or Verse at the End of Words ending in *ca*, *co*, *ga*, *go*, when the Elision is to be made before the Words beginning with *e* and *i* ; as, *Dich'io*, say I, instead of *Dico io* ; *Vengh'io*, come I.

SECT. VI.

Of the Syllables that ought to be pronounced short or long in the Nouns.

The Pronunciation of Syllables, either short or long, is one of the Difficulties of our Language, that embarrasses Foreigners, who do not know distinctly but one kind of Pronunciation. To facilitate however the Knowledge of it, I shall give here some general Rules, without pretending to comprehend all the Words of the *Italian* Tongue, which one may know better, if they consult my Dictionary, where all the Words are very carefully marked with a grave Accent, shewing what Words are short and what are long.

In the Words of one or two Syllables one cannot distinguish the Difference of the Long or Short ; therefore, I shall speak only of the Words of several Syllables.

The Penultima, or the last Syllable but one, is always long,

1. In the Nouns ending in *ano*, or *ana* ; as, *umàno*, humane ; *Settimàna*, a Week.

2. In the Words ending in *anza*, *enzè* ; as, *Costanza*, Constancy ; *Baldanza*, Pride ; *Prudenza*, Prudence ; *Penitènza*, Penitence.

3. The Nouns ending in *ca* for the Singular, and *che* for the Plural, have their Penultima sometimes long and sometimes short. The Words of the first Kind are these, *Fatica*, Labour ; *Festuca*, a Mote ; *Formica*, an Ant ; *Lumaca*, a Snail ; *Mellica*, Crum of Bread ; *Monarca*, a Monarch ; *Nemica*, an Enemy ; *Ortica*, a Nettle ; *Pastinaca*, a Parsnip ; *Patriarca*, Patriarch ; *Ricerca*, Inquiry ;

Spelonca, a Grotto ; *Tartaruca*, Tortoiseshel ; *Teriaca*, Treacle ; *Verruca*, a Wart ; *Vessica*, a Bladder.

The Nouns of this Termination are all of the second Kind, that is to say, they have their Penultima short ; *Càrica*, Charge ; *Mànica*, Sleeve, &c.

4. The Nouns ending in *ce* ; as, *tenàce*, clammy ; *Fenìce*, Phoenix ; *feroce*, fierce, &c.

Except *Anice*, Anni-seed ; *Artefice*, Artisan ; *Calice*, a Cup ; *Camice*, an Albe or Surplice ; *Carnefice*, an Executioner ; *Cimice*, a Bug ; *Codice*, a Book of Law ; *Complice*, an Accomplice ; *Indice*, Index ; *Forbice*, Sizzars ; *Giudice*, Judge ; *Mantice*, Bellows ; *Orefice*, a Goldsmith ; *Pomice*, a Pumice Stone ; *Pontefice*, the Pope ; *partecipe*, partaking ; *semplice*, simple ; *triplice*, three-fold.

5. The Words ending in *cia*, *cio*, *chia*, *chio* ; *Bonaccia*, a Calm at Sea : *Donnaccia*, a bad Woman ; *Cornacchia*, a Crow ; *Comacchio*, a Town in Italy.

6. The Words ending in *ina* and *ino* ; *Fucina*, a Forge ; *Indovino*, a Sooth-sayer ; *divino*, divine.

Except *àsino*, an Ass ; *àcino*, the Stone of Grapes ; *Daino*, a Fallow Deer ; *Frassino*, an Ash Tree ; *gemino*, double ; *pristino*, ancient ; *Zaino*, a Budget.

7. All the Words in *oso* ; *ritroso*, peevish ; *amoroso*, amorous ; *favoloso*, fabulous ; *litigioso*, litigious ; *misterioso*, mylterious.

8. All the Words in *iva* ; *Aspettativa*, Expectation ; *Oliva*, Olive ; *Sempreviva*, House-leek.

9. All the Words in *era* or *iera* ; *Pantera*, a Panther ; *Primavera*, the Spring ; *Riviera*, a River.

Except *Camera*, a Chamber ; *Cifera*, Cipher ; *Colera*, Choler ; *Efimera*, a Quotidian Fever ; *Fodera*, Lining ; *Lettera*, a Letter ; *Maschera*, a Mark ; *mifera*,

miserà, miserable ; *Naccherà*, a Rattle ; *opera*, work ; *Passera*, a Sparrow ; *Pinzochera*, a Bigot ; *Zinghera*, a Gipsy ; *Tempera*, a Temper ; *Vipera*, a Viper ; *Zaccherà*, Dirt ; *Zazzera*, a Head of Hair.

10. All the Words in *ela* : *Candela*, a Candle ; *Cautela*, Caution.

11. All the Nouns in *eso* and *oso* : *Paleso*, Publick ; *difeso*, defended ; *famoso*, famous ; *fabuloso*, fabulous.

12. All the Nouns in *me* : *Costume*, Custom ; *Letame*, Dung-hill ; *Ossame*, an Heap of Bones.

13. All the Nouns in *ato* : *amato*, loved ; in *eta*, *eto* ; *Pianeta*, a Planet ; *Laurèto*, a Thicket of Laurel Trees : in *ito* : *vestito*, dressed : in *uto* : *ereduto*, believed ; *contenuto*, contained.

Except, *Apòstata*, an Apostate ; *Fegato*, Liver ; *Sàbato*, Saturday, *Abito*, a Suit of Cloaths.

The Penultima is always short,

1. In all the Nouns ending in *ape* : *Cànape*, Hemp ; in *ipe* : *Prìncipe*, a Prince.

2. In all the Nouns in *bile* ; *amabile*, lovely ; *volubile*, changeable ; *incredibile*, incredible.

3. In all the Words in *ine* ; *Ordine*, Order ; *origine*, Origine ; *Vertigine*, Giddiness.

Except *Confine*, a Limit ; *Moine*, Cajolings or Caresses.

4. In all the Nouns ending in *elo* and *ola* : *àngelo*, an Angel ; *Fàvola*, a Fable ; *Tàvola*, a Table.

5. In all the Words in *pia*, *pio*, when the *ia*, *io*, are of two Syllables ; *Indòpia*, Want ; *Còpia*, Plenty.

Of

Of the Syllables that ought to be pronounced short or long in Verbs.

We have more certain Rules for the Syllables of Verbs, to know when they are to be pronounced long or short, than we have for the Nouns; therefore what I shall say here will be very useful to learn.

The Penultima is always long,

1. In all the Persons singular of all Tenses that have some Syllables more than the third Person singular of the Present of the Indicative Mood; *Amàvo, Credèvo, Sentivo, Amài, Credèi, Sentij, Amàssi, Credèssi, Sentissi, Amarèi, Crederèi, Sentirèi, Amerài, Crederài, Sentirài.*

The first and third Person of the Future of the Indicative Mood are also long; but the Accent being upon the last Syllable, the Stress must be laid upon that: *amerò, amerà, crederò, crederà, sentirò, sentirà.*

2. In the first Persons plural of the Present, of the Imperfect, Perfect, and Future Tenses of the Indicative, of the Present, and of the first Imperfect Tense of the Conjunctive Mood; *amiàmo, crediàmo, sentiamo, amavàmo, credevàmo, sentivàmo, amàmmo, credèmmo, sentimmo, amerèmo, crederèmo, sentirèmo, amerèmmo, crederèmmo, sentirèmmo.*

3. In all the second Persons plural of all the Tenses; *amàte, credàte, sentite, amavàte, credevàte, sentivàte; amerète, crederète, sentirète; amiàte, crediàte, sentiàte; amerèste, crederèste; sentirèste.*

4. In

4. In all the third Persons plural of the Future of the Indicative Mood; *ameranno, crederanno, sentiranno.*

The Penultima is always short,

1. In all the first Persons plural of the Second Imperfect Tense of the Conjunctive Mood; *amàssimo, credèssimo, sentìssimo.*

2. In all the third Persons plural of all Tenses, except those of the Future; *àmano, credono, sentono; amavano, credevano, sentivano; amarono, credèrono, sentirono; àmino, credano, sentano; amerèbbero, crederèbbero, sentirebbero; amassero, credessero, sentissero.*

SECT. VII.

Of Points or Stops.

It is of no small Importance in Orthography, or true Writing, to observe with Care *Points* or *Stops*, that is, those Marks which are made use of to distinguish the Parts of Sentences, and which are seven in Number, *viz.*

- | | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------|-----|
| 1. A Comma | } thus marked { | , |
| 2. A Colon | | : |
| 3. A Semi-colon | | ; |
| 4. A Period, or Full Stop | | . |
| 5. A Note of Interrogation | | ? |
| 6. A Note of Admiration | | ! |
| 7. A Parenthesis | | () |

A Comma (,) marks the little Pauses one makes in a Discourse, both to grace it, and to make it clearer to the Reader.

A Colon (:) marks a Sense that seems to be compleat ; but so that something may still be added to it.

A Semi-colon (;) marks a short Member of a Sentence ; which though it has a Sense of itself, yet contributes towards the making up of a compleat Period.

A Period or Full Stop (.) shews, that the Sense of the Sentence is full.

A Note of Interrogation (?) is used when a Question is asked.

A Note of Admiration (!) where one admires or cries out for Wonder ; it serves also to express Grief, Pain, and other violent Passions.

A Parenthesis () incloses within its two Figures, a Sentence by itself, which may be either used or omitted, and yet the Sense remain entire.

Of Analogy.

Analogy is that Part of Grammar which treats of all the Words of a Language, and distributes them into certain Classes or Ranks, commonly called *Parts of Speech*, which in *Italian* are Nine in Number, viz.

- | | |
|--------------------|----------------------|
| 1. The Article. | 6. The Adverb. |
| 2. The Noun. | 7. The Conjunction. |
| 3. The Pronoun. | 8. The Preposition. |
| 4. The Verb. | 9. The Interjection. |
| 5. The Participle. | |

C H A P. II.

Of the Article.

ARTICLES are Particles before Nouns, to shew their Genders either Masculine, or Feminine; their Number, either singular or plural; and their Cases, either direct or oblique.

There are seven and twenty Articles in *Italian*, viz.

Masculine, S.	Masculine, Pl.
1. <i>il</i> , the	14. <i>degli</i> , of the
2. <i>del</i> , of the	15. <i>agli</i> , to the
3. <i>al</i> , to the	16. <i>dagli</i> , from the
4. <i>del</i> , from the	Feminine, S.
Pl.	17. <i>la</i> , the
5. <i>i</i> , the	18. <i>della</i> , of the
6. <i>dei</i> , <i>de'</i> of the	19. <i>alla</i> , to the
7. <i>ai</i> , <i>a'</i> to the	20. <i>dalla</i> , from the
8. <i>dai</i> , <i>da'</i> from the	Pl.
S.	21. <i>le</i> , the
9. <i>lo</i> , the	22. <i>delle</i> , of the
10. <i>dello</i> , of the	23. <i>alle</i> , to the
11. <i>allo</i> , to the.	24. <i>dalla</i> , from the
12. <i>dallo</i> , from the	25. <i>di</i> , of
P.	26. <i>a</i> , to
13. <i>gli</i> , the	27. <i>da</i> , from.

Before we engage in discoursing of the Articles, it will be necessary to make a particular Observation: That the greatest Part of Grammarians divide the Articles into Definite and Indefinite, without understanding well what they mean by such a Distinction. Those Particles called *Articles* are properly Prepositions put before Nouns, and

sometimes before Pronouns, the Infinitive of Verbs, and certain Adverbs. Now these Articles are Definite or Indefinite, according as their Signification, when joined with the Noun, is either determined or undetermined. The Particles *di*, *a*, *da*, are said to be Indefinite, and *il*, *del*, *al*, *dal*, *lo*, *dello*, *allo*, *dallo*, and their plurals Definite; but that is only partly true. For all these Articles are sometimes Definite and sometimes Indefinite, according to the different Signification of the Nouns they are construed with: as for Example, *di* is definite when joined to a proper Name; *la Gloria di Dio*, the Glory of God; *parlo di Pietro*, I speak of Peter.

Di is indefinite in the following Expressions: *è un Comando di Rè*, 'tis a King's Command; *è un Tratto di Villano*, 'tis a knavish Trick.

A is definite in this Sentence, *ho detto a Pietro*, I told Peter; but it is indefinite in this Expression: *non ne parlate a Nissuno*, say nothing of it to any Body.

The Oblique Cases of all Articles are also definite or indefinite, according to the Signification of the Words they are joined with.

They are definite in the following Examples: *la Grandezza di Dio*, the Greatness of God; *la Potenza del Re*, the King's Power; *ho parlato al Re*, I spoke to the King; *parlo della Guerra di Fiandra*, I speak of the War of Flanders, &c.

But they are indefinite in the following Examples: *l' Uomo è un Animale ragionevole*, Man is a rational Animal; *la Donna è stata creata per aiuto dell' Uomo*, Woman was created for an Help to Man; *gli Uomini sono soggetti a molte Infermità*, Men are subject to several Diseases; *la Virtù è amabile*, Virtue is amiable; *ho del Vino in Cantina*,

I have Wine in my Cellar ; *parlate de' Principi con rispetto*, speak respectfully of Princes ; *esser civile alle Dame*, to be civil to the Ladies.

By all these Examples it plainly appears, that most Grammarians have very wrong Notions about Articles ; and that when the Article restraineth the Sense to a particular Thing, it is definite ; and when we speak generally, without restraining to particular Things, it is indefinite.

CHAP. II.

Of the Noun.

A Noun is a Word that serves to express a Thing without any Circumstance either of Time or Person ; as, *Dio*, God ; *Libro*, Book ; *Uomo*, Man ; *Casa*, House ; *buono*, good ; *grande*, great ; *bello*, handsome.

A Noun is divided into { Substantive
and
Adjective.

A Noun Substantive signifies a Thing subsisting of it self, and to whose Signification nothing needs to be added ; as, *il Sole*, the Sun ; *la Luna*, the Moon ; *il Mondo*, the World ; *Donna*, Woman.

A Noun Substantive is sub-divided into Proper, and Appellative. A proper Noun is the particular Name of any singular Thing ; as, *Pietro*, Peter ; *Guglielmo*, William ; *Anna*, Anne ; *Parigi*, Paris ; *Londra*, London.

An

An Appellative or common Noun is that which is applicable to all Things of the same Kind; as *Casa*, House; *Città*, Town; *Servo*, Servant; *Montagna*, Mountain; *Fiume*, River.

A Noun Adjective signifies nothing of it self, but being joined to the Substantive, expresses its Qualities and Circumstances; as, *buono*, good; *grande*, great; *bello*, handsome; *felice*, happy; signify nothing unless they be joined to a Substantive; ex. *buon Vino*, good Wood; *un grand' Uomo*, a great Man; *un bel Giardino*, a fine Garden; *un felice Successo*, a happy Success.

There are Four Things called Accidents, to be considered in Nouns, *viz.*

- | | |
|----------------|--------------------|
| 1. The Gender. | 3. The Case. |
| 2. The Number. | 4. The Comparison. |

SECT. I.

Of the Gender.

The Gender is properly that which shews the Difference of Sexes.

There are two Genders in *Italian*, *viz.*

The Masculine marked by *il*, or *lo*; ex. *il Rè*, the King; *lo Studio*, the Study.

The Feminine marked by *la*; ex. *la Regina*, the Queen; *la Strada*, the Street.

Although the primitive and proper Uses of Genders, be only to distinguish one Sex from another; yet the *Italians*, like the *Greeks* and *Latins*, observe that Distinction even in inanimate Things; so that there is not one Noun in *Italian*, but what is either Masculine or Feminine.

All Nouns in *Italian* are terminated by one of these Four Vowels, *a, e, i, o*; for the two Genders.

There

There are no other Nouns ending in *u* but *Giesù*, Jesus; *Corfù*, the Island of *Corfù*; *Peru*, the Province of *Peru*; *Gru*, a Crane; *tu*, thou. As for *Gioventù*, Youth; *Servitù*, Slavery; *Virtù*, Virtue, they are an Abbreviation of *Gioventude*, *Servitude*, *Virtude*, &c.

There are Rules to know the Genders of Substantives; but they are liable to so many exceptions, that the best Way would be to consult my Dictionary, in which I have been very exact in setting down the Gender of every Noun; yet I will endeavour to give some general Rules to save the Beginners the Trouble to look in the Dictionary for the Gender of every Word.

Of the Nouns ending in A.

Nouns ending in *a* are commonly feminine, and make their Plural by changing the *a* into *e*; as, *la Stella*, the Star; *le Stelle*, the Stars; *la Donna*, the Woman; *le Donne*, the Women.

There are some Nouns in *a*, which are masculine; such as proper Names of Men; as, *Luca*, Luke; *Enea*, Eneas; *Pitagora*, Pithagoras; some Nouns appellative; as *Poeta*, a Poet; *Papa*, the Pope; *Profeta*, a Prophet. But these Nouns Masculine end in *i* in the Plural; *i Poeti*, *i Papi*, *i Profeti*.

The Nouns ending in *à*, with an Accent over it, have no Plural, but keep the Termination of the Singular; as, *la Bontà*, *le Bontà*; *la Generosità*, *le Generosità*.

All Nouns terminated in *ca* and in *ga*, take an *b* after the *c*, and *g* in their Plural; as *Fatica*, Labour; *Fatiche*, Labours; *Piaga*, Wound; *Piaghe*, Wounds.

The Nouns *Tema*, a Theme; *Sistema*, a System; *Pianeta*, a Planet, are of the masculine Gender; but *Tema*, when it signifies Fear; and *Pianeta*, a Priest's Cope, are of the feminine Gender.

Of the Nouns ending in E.

All the Nouns ending in *e*, of whatsoever Gender they may be, Substantives or Adjectives, change the *e* into *i* in the Plural; as, *Amore*, Love; *Amori*, Loves; *grande*, great; *grandi*, great.

EXCEPTIONS.

Of all the Nouns ending in *e*, there are but four that do not change their Termination in the Plural; viz. *il Re*, the King, *i Re*, the Kings; *la Specie*, the Kind, *le Specie*, the Kinds; *la Effigie*, the Effigy, *le Effigie*, the Effigies; *la Superficie*, the Surface, *le Superficie*, the Surfaces.

Mille, a Thousand, preceded by another Number, makes *Mila* in the Plural; *Mille Scudi*, a Thousand Crowns; *Due Mila Scudi*, Two Thousand Crowns.

Moglie, a Wife; makes *Mogli* in the Plural, leaving out the *e*; *la Cara Moglie*, the Dear Wife; *le Care Mogli*, the Dear Wives.

We have some Nouns that may terminate in *e* and in *o*; but the First of these Terminations is more proper for the Prose, and the Second for Verses; as, *Cavaliero*, and *Cavaliere*, Knight; *Destriero*, and *Destriere*, a Horse; *Pensiero*, and *Pensiere*, a Thought; *Corriero*, and *Corriere*, a Courier.

Genders of Nouns ending in E.

All Nouns ending in *me* are masculine ; as, *il Fiume*, the River ; *il Costume*, the Custom ; *Le-tame*, a Dung-hill.

Except *Fame*, Hunger ; *Speme*, Hope ; that are feminine.

Nouns ending in *re* are masculine ; except *Madre*, Mother ; *Febre*, Fever ; *Polvere*, Dust ; *Torre*, Tower ; that are feminine : *Genere*, Ashes ; *Folgore*, a Thunder-bolt ; *Carcere*, a Prison ; *Lepre*, a Hare ; are of both Genders.

Almost all Nouns ending in *ore* are masculine ; *l' Amore*, the Love ; *il Fiore*, the Flower, *il Dolore*, the Grief or Pain. &c.

Nouns ending in *ente* are masculine ; *il Dente*, the Tooth ; *il Serpente*, the Serpent.

Except *la Gente*, the People ; *la Mente*, the Mind ; that are feminine.

All the other Terminations are liable to so many Exceptions, that it is impossible the Reader should reap any Benefit from the Rules we could give him.

Of Nouns ending in I.

The Number of Nouns ending in *i* is very small ; and they are all masculine ; such as the Days of the Week ; *Lunedì*, Monday ; *Martedì*, Tuesday, &c. Proper Names of Men ; as, *Giovanni*, John ; *Luigi*, Lewis, &c. Names of Towns ; as, *Parigi*, Paris ; *Napoli*, Naples, &c. The Cardinal Numbers ; as, *Dieci*, Ten ; *Undici*, Eleven ; *Venti*, Twenty, &c. Names of Families ; as, *Neri*, *Mattei*, *Medici*, &c.

All these Nouns ending in *i*, if we were to decline them in the Plural, would keep the same Termination; as, *il Di*, the Day; *i Di*, the Days.

The Noun *pari*, equal; is of both Genders, and both Number; *pari vostro*, your equal; *pari vostra*, your equal.

Of Nouns ending in O.

All Nouns ending in *o* are masculine; and change the *o* into *i* in the Plural; as, *il Libro*, the Book; *i Libri*, the Books.

Except *Mano*, the Hand, which is feminine; *la Mano*, the Hand; *le Mani*, the Hands.

The Word *Tempora*, which is the Plural of *Tempo*, still keeps its antient Termination; but it signifies only the Ember Weeks; as, *le Quattro Tempora*, the Four Ember Weeks.

Uomo, Man, not only changes the *o* into *i* in the Plural, but it takes a Syllable more; as, *Uomo*, Man; *Uomini*, Men.

Turbo, a Whirl-wind; follows the same Termination; *Turbini*, Whirl-winds.

Observations upon the Nouns in aro.

Nouns substantive in *aro*, may change their Termination into *ajo*; ex. *Gennaro*, and *Gennajo*, January; *Febraro*, and *Febrajo*, February; *Scolaro*, and *Scolajo*, a Scholar: In forming the Plural, if the Nouns are terminated in *aro*, the *o* is changed into *i*, according to the general Rule; *Scolaro*, *Scolari*; but if it is terminated in *ajo*, you must strike off the last *o*, leaving *ai*; as, *Scolajo*, *Scolai*, &c.

Of

Of Nouns in *co* and in *go*.

Nouns ending in *co*, and *go*, of two Syllables, take an *h* in the Plural; as, *Fico*, a Fig; *Fichi*, Figs; *Cieco*, Blind; *ciechi*, blind; *Luogo*, a Place; *Luoghi*, Places.

Except *Greco*, a Grecian; *Porco*, an Hog; that make *Greci*, *Porci* in the Plural.

All other Nouns in *co* and *go* of more than two Syllables, do not admit of the *h* in the Plural; as, *Amico*, a Friend; *Amici*, Friends.

Except *Albergo*, an Inn, *Alberghi*.

Antico, *antichi*, antient.

Astrologo, *Astrologhi*, and *Astrologi*, an Astrologer.

Beccafico, *Beccafichi*, a Figsnapper.

Bifolco, *Bifolchi*, a Clown.

Castigo, *Castighi*, Chastisement.

Catafalco, *Catafalchi*, a Mausoleum.

Dialogo, *Dialoghi*, a Dialogue.

Fiamingo, *Fiaminghi*, a Flemming.

Reciproco, *reciprochi*, Reciprocal.

Siniscalco, *Siniscalchi*, a Seneschal.

Tedesco, *Tedeschi*, a German.

Traffico, *Traffichi*, Traffick, or Trade.

Formation of the Plural of Nouns in *io*.

Nouns ending in *io*, if these two Letters make but one Syllable, make their plural by striking off the last *o*; ex. *Bacio*, a Kiss; *Baci*, Kisses; *Figlio*, a Son; *Figli*, Sons; *Raggio*, a Beam of the Sun; *Raggi*, Beams, &c.

Sometimes we admit of two *ii*, to avoid the Equivocation in the Nouns; as, *Tempii*, Temples;

Principii, Beginnings ; to distinguish them from *Tempi*, Times ; *Principi*, Princes.

Now the general Rule for using two *ii* in the Plural, is, when the Diphthong *io* in the Singular makes two Syllables ; ex. *Incendio*, a Conflagration ; *Incendii*, Conflagrations ; *Nazio*, Native ; *Nazii*, Natives.

To know when the Diphthong *io* forms one or two Syllables, I could not give any other Rules, but when the Nouns that end in *cio*, *chio*, *gio*, *glio*, make one Syllable of *io*, ex. *Impaccio*, *Impacci*, Embarrassment ; *Occhio*, *Occhi*, Eye ; *Paggio*, *Paggi*, Page ; *Scoglio*, *Scogli*, Rock ; *Figlio*, *Figli*, Son.

Note, that the *Tuscans*, instead of using two *ii*, write one *i* thus, *j. studj, varj.*

Of the Nouns in U.

We have already said, that there is no Nouns in *Italian* ending in *u*, but that of our Saviour, *Giesù*, Jesus ; *tu*, thou ; *Peru*, the Province of *Peru* ; *Corfu*, the Island of *Corfu* ; *Tru*, a Crane. As for *Virtù*, Vertue ; *Gioventù*, Youth ; and the like ; I take them to be Nouns abridged of *Virtute* or *Virtude* ; *Gioventute*, or *Gioventude*.

Of the Augmentatives.

We have this advantage in our Language, that by adding a Syllable to our Nouns, we increase or diminish their Signification ; as, *Cappello*, a Hat ; *Cappellino*, or *Cappellaccio*, a large Hat ; *Cappelletto*, or *Cappelluccio*, a little Hat.

The Termination of the Augmentatives, are in *one*, in *accio*, or *accia*. The First increases the

the Signification of the Thing; the others make something bad, or dispicable in it, *ex.*

Donna, a Woman; *Donnone*, a large Woman; *Donnaccia*, a bad Woman; *Casa*, a House; *Casone*, a large House; *Casaccia*, an old ruinous House.

Note, that the Augmentatives cannot be formed of all Nouns, because, sometimes they would signify a quite different Thing; as for *ex.* *Tinca*, a Tench; if one would form of it a Noun in *one*, he would make a great blunder.

Note, also, that the Augmentatives in *one* imply something vile and dispicable; *ex.* *Dormiglione*, a great Sluggard; *Gocciolone*, a Dunce, a Ninny.

The Augmentatives in *one* are masculines, though they are formed of Nouns feminine; as, *Porta*, F. makes *Portone*, M. *Casa*, F. *Casone*, M.

We have another Kind of Augmentatives in *ame*, which signify a great Quantity, or great Number; *ex.* *Osso*, a Bone, *Ossame*, a great Quantity, or a great Heap of Bones; *Gente*, People, *Gentame*, a Multitude of People.

Our Language has also Augmentatives in *aglia*, but marks with it something vile and despicable; *ex.* *Cane*, a Dog; *Canaglia*, the Mob, the Dregs of the People; *Gente*, People; *Gentaglia*, the Mobility, the common People.

Note, also, that there are some Nouns that have all the abovesaid Terminations without being Augmentatives: *ex.* in *one*, we have *Basone*, a Stick; in *Ame*, as, *Stame*, Yarn; in *Accio*, as *Laccio*, a Gin, or Snare; in *Accia*, as *Faccia*, the Face; in *Aglia*, as *Maglia*, a Mail.

Of the Diminutives.

Although the Diminutives are augmented with one or more Syllables, they lessen, however, the Signification of their Primitives: Their different Terminations are;

In *ello*: as *Arditello*.

In *etto*: as *Sdegnosetto*.

In *ino*: as *Martellino*.

In *olo*: as *Lacciuolo*.

In *otto*: as *Sempliciotto*.

In *uccio*: as *Andreuccio*.

In *uzzo*: as *Pensieruzzo*.

It is not very easy to know the true Signification of Diminutives; since they signify sometimes something genteel and pretty; as, *un Fanciullino*, a pretty Child; and sometimes they imply something despicable; as, *una Feminuccia*, a poor ordinary Woman.

Note, that there are several Diminutives that do not follow the common Way of others; as, *Bastone*, *Bastoncino*; *Porta*, *Porticella*.

Note, also, that there are some Nouns ending in *ino*, *ello*, *etto*, &c. that are not always Diminutives; since there are several that are Primitives; ex. *Cittadino*, a Citizen; *Coltello*, a Knife; *Diletto*, Delight.

Of the Adjectives.

Adjectives in our Language have three Terminations; in *o*, for the Masculine; in *a*, for the Feminine; and in *e*, for both Genders: ex. *il caro Sposo*, the dear Spouse; *la cara Moglie*, the dear

dear Wife ; *il dolce Sonno*, the sweet Sleep ; *la dolce Stagione*, the sweet Season.

Adjectives in *o* end in *i* in the Plural ; *bello, belli, casto, casti* : Adjectives in *a* end in *e, bella, belle, casta, caste* : Adjectives in *e* end in *i*, both for Masculine and Feminine ; *i dolci Baci*, the sweet Kisses ; *le dolci Parole*, the sweet Words.

Several Adjectives taking the Article before, become Substantives, ex. *il Dolce mi Piace*, I love sweet Things ; *il Bello è amato da Tutti*, every body loves what is handsome.

S E C T. II.

Of the Number.

The Number is an Accident of Nouns, which shews the Difference that is betwixt one and several Things.

And so it is either } Singular,
 } or
 } Plural.

The Singular speaketh of one single Thing ; as, *il Libro*, the Book ; *la Casa*, the House.

The Plural speaketh of more Things than one ; as, *i Libri*, the Books ; *le Case*, the Houses.

The Plural is generally formed by changing the Termination of the Singular, for the Nouns in *o*, and in *e*, into *i* ; as, *Libro*, Book, *Libri*, Books ; *Madre*, Mother, *Madri*, Mothers ; for the Nouns in *a*, into *e* ; as, *Casa*, House, *Case*, Houses.

E X C E P T I O N S.

1. Some Nouns in *o* and in *e* are generally used in the Singular ; as, *Oro*, Gold ; *Argento*, Silver ; *Cento*, an Hundred .

There

There are some Nouns ending in *e* that do not alter their Termination in the Plural; as, *il Re, i Re; la Specie, le Specie; la Superficie, le Superficie; l'Effigie, le Effeggie.*

Singular Nouns ending in *a*, of the masculine Gender, make their Termination in *i* in the Plural; as, *Poeta, Poeti; Profeta, Profeti; Papa, Papi.*

All Nouns ending in *à*, with an Accent, are still the same, both in the Singular and Plural; as, *la Bontà, le Bontà, la Maestà, le Maestà, &c.*

Nouns ending in *i*, keep the same Termination in the Plural; as, *il Dì, i Dì; il Lunedì, i Lunedì, &c.*

Singular Nouns in *u*, are still the same in the Plural; as, *la Virtù, le Virtù; la Gioventù, le Gioventù, &c.*

Nouns of Cardinal Numbers are the same in the Plural; as, *Tre, Three; Quattro, Four; Otto, Eight, &c.*

SECT. III.

Of the Case or Declension.

The Case is properly the ending or Termination of a Noun, which serves to distinguish it according to its several Significations. There is no such Thing as different Cases in *Italian*, no more than in *English*; but we have borrowed that Word from the *Latins*, whose Nouns have six distinct Terminations, and distinct Significations, viz. The Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Vocative, and Ablative: But instead of different Terminations, we make use of Articles, to express the various Senses of a Word.

The Declension of Nouns is the Manner of turning and changing them according to their several

veral Significations, both in the Singular and Plural; which, as I hinted before, is performed in *Italian*, as in *English*, by the help of Articles.

Declension of Nouns of the masculine Gender, beginning with a Consonant.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>il Libro</i> , the Book.	Nom. <i>i Libri</i> , the Books.
Gen. <i>del Libro</i> , of the Book.	G. <i>Dei</i> , or <i>de' Libri</i> , of the Books.
Dat. <i>al Libro</i> , to the Book.	D. <i>Ai</i> or <i>a' Libri</i> , to the Books.
Abl. <i>dal Libro</i> , from the Book.	A. <i>Dai</i> , or <i>da' Libri</i> , from the Books.

Nouns of the feminine Gender, beginning with a Consonant, are thus declined,

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>La Casa</i> , the House,	Nom. <i>Le Case</i> , the Houses.
Gen. <i>Della Casa</i> , of the House.	Gen. <i>Delle Case</i> , of the Houses.
Dat. <i>Alla Casa</i> , to the House.	Dat. <i>Alle Case</i> , to the Houses.
Abl. <i>Dalla Casa</i> , from the House.	Abl. <i>Dalle Case</i> , from the Houses.

Nouns ending in a, of the masculine Gender, are thus declined,

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>il Poeta</i> , the Poet.	Nom. <i>I Poeti</i> , the Poets.
Gen. <i>Del Poeta</i> , of the Poet.	G. <i>Dei</i> , or <i>de' Poeti</i> , of the Poets.
Dat. <i>Al Poeta</i> , to the Poet.	D. <i>Ai</i> or <i>a' Poeti</i> , to the Poets.
Abl. <i>Dal Poeta</i> , from the Poet.	A. <i>Dai</i> , or <i>da' Poeti</i> , from the Poets.

Nouns ending in à with an Accent, are thus declined,

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>La Maestà</i> , the Majesty.	Nom. <i>Le Maestà</i> , the Majesties.
Gen. <i>Della Maestà</i> , of the Majesty.	Gen. <i>Delle Maestà</i> , of the Majesties.
Dat. <i>Alla Maestà</i> , to the Majesty.	Dat. <i>Alle Maestà</i> , to the Majesties.
Abl. <i>Dalla Maestà</i> , from the Majesty.	Abl. <i>Dalle Maestà</i> , from the Majesties.

Declension of Nouns of the masculine Gender, beginning with an S followed by a Consonant.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>Lo Studio</i> , the Study.	Nom. <i>Gli Studj</i> , the Studies.
Gen. <i>Dello Studio</i> , of the Study.	Gen. <i>Degli Studj</i> , of the Studies.
Dat. <i>Allo Studio</i> , to the Study.	Dat. <i>Agli Studj</i> to the Studies.
Abl. <i>Dallo Studio</i> , from the Study.	Abl. <i>Dagli Studj</i> , from the Studies.

Nouns of the masculine Gender, beginning with a Vowel, are thus declined.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>L' Amore</i> , the Love.	Nom. <i>Gli Amori</i> , the Loves.
Gen. <i>Dell' Amore</i> , of the Love.	Gen. <i>Degli Amori</i> , of the Loves.
Dat. <i>All' Amore</i> , to the Love.	Dat. <i>Agli Amori</i> , to the Loves.
Abl. <i>Dall' Amore</i> , from the Love.	Abl. <i>Dagli Amori</i> , from the Loves.

Nouns of the feminine Gender, beginning with a Vowel, are thus declined.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>L' Anima</i> , the Soul.	Nom. <i>Le Anime</i> , the Souls.
Gen. <i>Dell' Anima</i> , of the Soul.	Gen. <i>Delle Anime</i> , of the Souls.
Dat. <i>All' Anima</i> , to the Soul.	Dat. <i>Alle Anime</i> , to the Souls.
Abl. <i>Dall' Anima</i> , from the Soul.	Abl. <i>Dalle Anime</i> , from the Souls.

Declension of proper Names.

Proper Names of Men, Women, Cities, and Villages, are generally declined in the following Manner; where it is to be observed; that if those Nouns be of the singular Number, they have no Plural; and if of the Plural, they have no Singular.

SINGULAR.	SINGULAR.
Nom. <i>Pietro</i> , Peter.	Nom. <i>Maria</i> , Mary.
Gen. <i>Di Pietro</i> , of Peter.	Gen. <i>Di Maria</i> , of Mary.
Dat. <i>A Pietro</i> , to Peter.	Dat. <i>A Maria</i> , to Mary.
Abl. <i>Da Pietro</i> , from Peter.	Abl. <i>Da Maria</i> , from Mary.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *Londra*, London.
Gen. *Di Londra*, of London.
Dat. *A Londra*, to London.
Abl. *Da Londra*, from London.

PLURAL.

Nom. *Parigi*, Paris.
Gen. *Di Parigi*, of Paris.
Lat. *A Parigi*, to Paris.
Abl. *Da Parigi*, from Paris.

When those proper Names begin with a Vowel, the *i* is cut off in the Article *di*, and we add a *d* to the Article *a*.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *Antonio*, Anthony.
Gen. *D' Antonio*, of Anthony.
Dat. *Ad Antonio*, to Anthony.
Abl. *D' Antonio*, from Anthony.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *Anna*, Anne.
Gen. *D' Anna*, of Anne.
Dat. *Ad Anna*, to Anne.
Abl. *D' Anna*, from Anne.

Proper Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Seas, Rivers, and Mountains, are thus declined.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *La Spagna*, Spain.
Gen. *Della Spagna*, of Spain.
Dat. *Alla Spagna*, to Spain.
Abl. *Dalla Spagna*, from Spain.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *Il Piemonte*, Piemont.
Gen. *Del Piemonte*, of Piemont.
Dat. *Al Piemonte*, to Piemont.
Abl. *Dal Piemonte*, from Piemont.

SINGULAR.

N. *Il Tamigi*, the Thames.
G. *Del Tamigi*, of the Thames.
D. *Al Tamigi*, to the Thames.
A. *Dal Tamigi*, from the Thames.

PLURAL.

Nom. *Le Alpi*, the Alps.
Gen. *Delle Alpi*, of the Alps.
Dat. *Alle Alpi*, to the Alps.
Abl. *Dalle Alpi*, from the Alps.

When these Nouns begin with a Vowel, they are thus declined.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *L' Inghilterra*, England.
Gen. *Dell' Inghilterra*, of England.
Dat. *All' Inghilterra*, to England.
Abl. *Dall' Inghilterra*, from England.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *L' Olanda*, Holland.
Gen. *Dell' Olanda*, of Holland.
Dat. *All' Olanda*, to Holland.
Abl. *Dall' Olanda*, from Holland.

SECT. IV.

Of the Comparison of Adjectives.

Besides the three forementioned Accidents of Nouns, which are common both to Substantives and Adjectives; there is a fourth peculiar to these, called Comparison.

The Comparison of Adjectives is the Way of increasing, or raising their Signification by certain degrees, which are three, *viz.*

1. The POSITIVE.
2. The COMPARATIVE.
3. The SUPERLATIVE.

The Positive lays down the natural Signification of the Adjective; as, *bello*, handsome; *nobile*, noble.

The Comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it to the Positive; which in *Italian*, is performed by the Adverb, *più*, more; ex. *più bello*, handsomer; *più grande*, greater.

There is also another Comparative which lessens the Signification by the Help of the Particles, *meno*, and *si*; as, *ella è meno bella di voi*, she is less handsome than you; *egli non è sì grande che voi*, he is not so tall as you.

The Superlative raises the Signification as high as possible, which in *Italian* is terminated in *issimo*, M. *issima*, F. as, *bellissimo*, *bellissima*, very handsome; *grandissimo*, *grandissima*, very great.

EXCEP-

EXCEPTION.

The following Adjectives go from the Rule.

POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.	
M. <i>Buono</i> ,	} Good.	M. <i>Migliore</i> ,	} Better.
F. <i>Buona</i> ,		F. <i>Migliore</i> ,	
M. <i>Cattivo</i> ,	} Bad.	M. <i>Peggior</i> ,	} Worse.
F. <i>Cattiva</i> ,		F. <i>Peggior</i> ,	
M. <i>Piccolo</i> ,	} little.	M. <i>Minore</i> , or <i>più Piccolo</i> ,	} less, or
F. <i>Piccola</i> ,		F. <i>Minore</i> , or <i>più Piccola</i> ,	

SUPERLATIVE.	
M. <i>Il Migliore</i> ,	} the best.
F. <i>La Migliore</i> ,	
M. <i>Il più Peggior</i> ,	} the worst.
F. <i>La più Peggior</i> ,	
M. <i>Il Menomo</i> , or <i>il più Piccolo</i> ,	} the least.
F. <i>La Menoma</i> , or <i>la più Piccola</i> .	

REMARKS.

1. Substantives are sometimes improperly compared: ex. *è più Bestia di tutte le Bestie*, he is a greater Brute, than the Brutes themselves.

2. When the Comparison is made between two Substantives, two Adjectives, or two Adverbs, one after another, then the Particle *che* is used in the following Manner; *la Signora ha più Grazia, che Bellezza*, the Lady has more Grace than Beauty; *Lucrezia è più bella che buona*, Lucretia is handsomer than good; *è meglio tardi, che mai*, 'tis better late, than never.

3. When the Comparison is made of two Actions; *Beve più, che non Mangia*, he drinks more than he Eats; *è più bella, che non pensavo*, she is handsomer than I thought; *è meglio morire, che offender Dio*, 'tis better to Die, than to offend God.

4. When

4. When the Comparifon is made between two Nouns that are declined with the Article *il*, or *la*, then we ufe *del*, or *della*, according to their Gender and Number. *Ella è più bella del Sole*, ſhe is handſomer than the Sun; *il Cielo è più grande della Terra*, Heaven is larger than the Earth; *il mio Giardino è più bello del voſtro*, my Garden is handſomer than yours; *i ſuoi Occhi ſono più riſplendenti delle Stelle*, her Eyes are brighter than the Stars; *l'Oro è più prezioſo dell' Argento*, Gold is more pretious than Silver.

5. When the Comparifon is made between two Nouns that are declined with the Article *di*, then we uſe the ſame Article for both Genders and Numbers: as, *Antonio è più ricco di Pietro*, Anthony is richer than Peter; *lo ſo meglio di voi*, I know it better than you; *queſto è più grande di quello*, this is larger than that; *la figlia è più ſaggia di ſua Madre*, the Daughter is wiſer than her Mother.

The Comparatives *maggiore*, greater; *minore*, leſſer; *migliore*, better; *peggiore*, worſe; follow the ſame Rules.

As we ſaid before, our Superlatives end in *iſſimo*, *iſſima*, &c. as *dottiſſimo*, *dottiſſima*, *dottiſſimi*, *dottiſſime*: But it is to be obſerved, that we never ſay, *il dottiſſimo di tutti*, the moſt learned of all; but *il più dotto di tutti*: and the Reaſon is, that our Superlatives mark an Amplification without Compariſon; and when we expreſs Amplification with a Compariſon, we uſe *più*, more; as in the following Examples. *Pietro è dottiſſimo nella Medicina*, Peter is very learned in Phyſick; *è la più bella Donna di quante n'abbia mai vedute*, ſhe is the handſomeſt Woman I ever ſaw.

SECT. V.

Of the Figure and Species of Nouns.

Besides the four principal Accidents of Nouns already mentioned, their Figure and Species are also to be considered.

The Figure of Nouns is that Accident which shews whether they be Simple; as, *giusto*, just; or Compound; as, *ingiusto*, unjust.

The Species is an Accident of Nouns, whereby we know whether they be Primitive; such as, *Mondo*, the World; *buono*, good: or Derivative; as, *mondano*, worldly; *Bontà*, Goodness.

There are several Sorts of Primitive Nouns, of which the following are the Chief.

1. The Noun Collective, which in the singular Number signifies a Multitude; as, *la Corte*, the Court; *il Senato*, the Senate; *un' Esercito*, an Army; *una Dozzina*, a Dozen.

2. The Distributive, which is the contrary of the Collective, and divides a Multitude; as, *ogni*, every; *due a due*, two and two.

3. The Equivocal Nouns, which have a double Meaning; as, *Tema*, a Theme; *Tema*, Fear.

4. Synonyma's, two or three of which signify almost the same Thing; as, *breve*, *corto*, short; *forte*, *gagliardo*, *robusto*, strong, lusty, robust; *Via*, *Cammino*, Way, Road.

5. Nouns Numeral, which serve to distinguish the Numbers, and are either Cardinal, or Ordinal.

The Cardinal Number is the Fountain of the others, and expresses, or joins Units together; as, *Uno*, *Due*, *Tre*, *Quattro*, &c. One, Two, Three, Four, &c

The Ordinal Number derives from the Cardinal, and shews the Order and Rank of every Thing; as, *Primo*, *Secondo*, *Terzo*, &c. First, Second, Third, &c.

The Principal Derivative Nouns are the following.

1. The Verbal, which comes from a Verb; as, *Amore*, Love, from *Amare*; *Parliero*, Talker, from *Parlare*.

2. The Diminutive, which decreases or diminishes the Signification of its Primitive; as, *Bastoncino*, a little Stick; *Figliuolo*, a little Boy; from *Bastone*, and *Figliolo*.

3. The Augmentative, which augments or increases the Signification of its Primitive; as, *Cappellone*, a large Hat; *Casone*, a large House; from *Cappello*, and *Casa*.

4. The Name of one's Nation; as, *Italiano*, an Italian; *Inglese*, English.

5. The Name of one's Province; as, *Toscano*, Tuscan; *Piemontese*, Piemontese; *Gallese*, Welsh.

6. The Name of one's Town or City; as, *Florentino*, a Florentine; *Romano*, a Roman.

7. The Nick-names given either out of Spite or Derision; as, *Ugnotto*, a Hugonot; *Papista*, a Papist.

C H A P. III.

Of the Pronouns.

THE Pronoun is a Part of Speech, so called, because it is often used instead of a Noun, to avoid the too frequent Repetition thereof, which would be troublesome and unpleasant.

Ex. 10

Ex. *Io amo Pietro, Perch' egli è mio amico*, I love *Peter*, because he is my Friend; which is as much as to say, (suppose there were no Pronouns) *Io amo Pietro, Perche Pietro è mio amico*, I love *Peter*, because *Peter* is my Friend.

Pronouns have six Accidents, viz.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------|
| 1. The Gender. | 3. The Person. |
| 2. The Number. | 5. The Figure. |
| 3. The Case, or Declension. | 6. The Species. |

1, 2. The two first are the same as in the Noun.

3. The Case and Declension of Pronouns are also the same as in Nouns; with this only Difference, that some Pronouns have an accusative Case.

4. There are three Persons both in the Singular and Plural.

The first is that which speaks; as, *Io vi vedo*, I see you; *noi vi amiamo*, we love you.

The second is that which one speaks to; as, *tu sei ricco*, thou art rich; *voi sete bello*, you are handsome.

The third is that which one speaks of; as, *egli è dotto*, he is learned; *ella è amabile*, she is lovely; *eglino cantano*, they Sing; *elleno ballano*, they Dance.

Note, that except these Pronouns, *io, noi, tu, voi*, all the others are of the third Person.

5. The Figure of Pronouns are twofold; viz. Simple; as, *io, lui, ella, noi*, I or me, he, she, we; and Compound; as, *io stesso*, my self; *lui stesso*, himself; *ella stessa*, herself, &c.

6. The Species of Pronouns is also twofold; viz. Primitive; as, *io, tu, &c.* I, thou, &c. And Derivative; as, *mio, tuo, &c.* mine, thine, &c.

Pronouns are also divided according to their Signification, into seven Sorts, viz.

- | | |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| 1. Personal. | 5. Interrogative. |
| 2. Possessive. | 6. Numeral. |
| 3. Demonstrative. | 7. Indefinite. |
| 4. Relative. | |

SECT. I.

Of the Pronouns Personal.

Pronouns Personal are five; viz. *io, tu, egli, ella, se*, they are declined with the Article *di, a, da*.

Io, I, is of the common Gender, and is thus declined.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>Io, I.</i>	Nom. <i>Noi, we.</i>
Gen. <i>Di me, or mi, of me.</i>	Gen. <i>Di noi, of us.</i>
Dat. <i>A me, to me.</i>	Dat. <i>A noi, or ci, ce, ne, to us.</i>
Acc. <i>Me, or mi, me.</i>	Acc. <i>Noi, or ci, ce, ne, us.</i>
Abl. <i>Da me, from me.</i>	Abl. <i>Da noi, from us.</i>

Declination of tu, also of the common Gender.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>Tu, thou.</i>	Nom. <i>Voi, you or ye.</i>
Gen. <i>Di te, of thee.</i>	Gen. <i>Di voi, of you.</i>
Dat. <i>A te, or ti, to thee.</i>	Dat. <i>A voi, or vi, ve, to you.</i>
Acc. <i>Te, or ti, thee.</i>	Acc. <i>Voi, or vi, ve, you.</i>
Abl. <i>Da te, from thee.</i>	Abl. <i>Da voi, from you.</i>

Egli,

Egli, or Eſſo, is of the masculine Gender.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>Egli</i> , or <i>eſſo</i> , he.	Nom. <i>Eglino</i> , they.
Gen. <i>Di lui</i> , of him.	Gen. <i>Di loro</i> , of them.
Dat. <i>A lui</i> , or <i>li</i> , to him.	Dat. <i>A loro</i> , or <i>loro</i> , to them.
Acc. <i>Lui</i> , or <i>lo</i> , him.	Acc. <i>Loro</i> , or <i>gli, li</i> , them.
Abl. <i>Da lui</i> , from him.	Abl. <i>Da loro</i> , from them.

Ella, or eſſa, expreſſes the feminine Gender.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. <i>Ella</i> , or <i>eſſa</i> , ſhe.	Nom. <i>Elleno</i> , or <i>eſſe</i> , they.
Gen. <i>Di lei</i> , of her.	Gen. <i>Di loro</i> , of them.
Dat. <i>A lei</i> , or <i>le</i> , to her.	Dat. <i>A loro</i> , or <i>loro</i> , to them.
Acc. <i>Lei</i> , or <i>la</i> , her.	Acc. <i>Loro</i> , or <i>le</i> , them.
Abl. <i>Da lei</i> , from her.	Abl. <i>Da loro</i> , from them.

Se, one's ſelf, is a reciprocal Pronoun of the third Perſon, of the common Gender, and of both Numbers, but without a nominative Caſe.

Singular and Plural.

Nom.
Gen. <i>Di ſe</i> , of one's ſelf, himſelf, herſelf.
Dat. <i>A ſe</i> , or <i>ſi</i> , to one's ſelf, &c.
Acc. <i>Se</i> , or <i>ſi</i> , one's ſelf, &c.
Abl. <i>Da ſe</i> , from one's ſelf, &c.

Remarks upon io, me, mi, noi, ce, ci, ne.

We often find inſtead of *Io*, *I'* with the Apoſtrophe.

I' mi vivea di mia Sorte contento.

I lived ſatisfied with my Deſtiny.

Io repeated, gives the Diſcourſe more Force or more Grace; ex. *fate pur Ben voi, ch'io farò Ben'io s'io potrò*, do your own Buſineſs, I will do mine if I can.

Qual Donna canterà, s'io non cant'io.

Who is the Woman that will sing, if I do not sing?

Different Uses of me, mi.

Me, mi, that are of the Oblique Cases of *io*, have the same Signification; but they are differently used.

1. *Me* serves for all the Cases, after the Particles, *di, a, da*; ex. *di me*, of me; *a me*, to me; *da me*, from me.

2. After all the Prepositions; ex. *per me*, for me; *verso me*, towards me; *contro me*, against me.

3. Before, or after some Interjections; ex. *lasso me*, alafs! *felice me*, or *me felice*, how happy I am.

4. Before *lo, la, le, gli*; as, *melo, mela, mele, meglio*; ex. *ditemelo*, tell it me; *datemela*, give it me.

5. Before the Particle Relative *ne*; ex. *mene pento*, I repent of it; *datemene*, give me some of it.

Note, that when we make an Opposition, we use *me*, without joining it to the Verb; which is very graceful in our Language; as it may be seen in the following Example:

*Ferir me di saetta in quello stato,
E a voi armata non mostrar pur l'arco. Petr.*

Mi, serves only for the Dative and the Accusative, and it is placed either before or after the Verb; as, *mi vidde*, he saw me; *fatemi questo favore*, do me that favour.

Mi is also put before the Monosyllables *ci, si, vi, ne*; as, *continua Concordia mi ci è paruta di vedere*, I thought I saw there a perpetual Concord;
mi

mi si fece incontro, he met me ; *ma io mi ti voglio un poco scusare*, but I will excuse my self a little to you ; *come a Padre mi vi scuso*, I excuse my self to you, as I would to my Father ; *io mi vene dolse*, I grieved at it.

Mi is often put before the Verb, as an Expletive Particle ; as, *io mi morrò*, I shall die.

Different ways of using ce, ci, ne.

Although I have said that the Pronoun *io*, I, makes *noi*, in the Plural ; yet it is to be observed, that we use very often *ce*, *ci*, *ne*, for the Dative and Accusative Cases ; with this Difference, that we put *ce*, before the Particles *lo*, *la*, *ne* ; as, *celo mostrò*, he shewed it to us ; *cela diede*, he gave it us ; *che non cene andiamo noi* ? Why do not we go ? And *ci*, is put before or after the Verb ; as, *ci fece molti Regali*, he made us a great many Presents ; *sen'-andò senza dirci addio*, he went away without bidding us Farewell.

Ci, either Pronoun or Adverb, being joined to the Monosyllables, *mi*, *si*, *ti*, *vi*, is put before *si*, but with the others, it is put after : I will explain my self better by the following Examples.

Dì e Notte ci si lavora, they work there Night and Day ; *mi ci hanno fatto entrar per Inganni*, they made me go in there by Treachery ; *il Diavolo ti ci reca*, the Devil brings you to us ; *dirà, che io vi ci abbia fatta venir per Danari*, he will say, that I made you, come to us for Money.

Ne for *noi*, for the Dative or the Accusative, is put either before, or after the Verb ; *perchè crudo Destino ne disunisci tu, s'amor ne stringe* ? thou cruel Destiny, why do you part us, if Love joins us ?

us? *Honne vedute cento come voi*, I have seen a hundred like you.

Remarks upon tu, te, ti.

Tu often serves for an Ornament, as a Particle expletive; as, *tu ti se' ben vendicato*, thou hast revenged thy self well.

'Tis now out of Use to join *tu* at the End of the Verb; as, *mandastu, avestu, fostu*, instead of *mandasti tu, aveffi tu, fossi tu*.

When *tu* is followed by the Article *il*, we write *tu'l*, and not *tu il*; as, *Signor, tu'l puoi saper*, Sir, you may know it.

Te, ti, follow the same Rules; as, *me, mi*; *te* is put after the Particles, *di, a, da*; as, *di te*, of thee; *a te*, to thee; *da te*, from thee. Also,

Before *la, le, lo, gli*; *tela, tele, telo, tegli*; as, *tela manderò*, I will send it thee, &c. Likewise, before *ne*; *tene ringrazio*, I thank thee for it. After some Interjections; as, *lassò te*, wo to thee. After the Verb *essere*, to be, we put *te*; but this Way of Speaking is rather *Latin*, than *Tuscan*; as, *credendo ch'io fossi te*, thinking that I was thee.

When *te* is followed by *il*, we write *te'l*, and not *te il*; as, *io non te'l potei dire allor, ne volli*, I could, nor would not tell it you then.

Ti is put before and after the Verb; as, *ti vergogni di dirlo, e non averesti vergogna di riceverlo*, thou art ashamed to speak it, and thou wouldst not be ashamed to take it; *per dirti la Cagion del mio venir a te sì ratto*, to tell thee the Reason of my coming in such a Haste.

Ti is put before *se*, and after *vi*; as, *questo chi che ti se l'abbia detto, io no'l nego*, whoever has told thee so, I cannot deny it; *vi ti porrò una Coltricetta*,

ta,

ta, e dormiviti, I will put there a little Counterpoint for thee, and sleep upon it.

Remarks upon voi, vi, ve.

Although *voi* is the Plural of *tu*, 'tis used for a single Person, which is used also in *English*; as, *voi sete molto ardito*, you are very bold.

Ve, follows the same Rules; as, *me, te*; that is to say, that *ve* is put before *la, le, lo, li, ne*; as, *vela do volontiere*, I give it thee willingly, &c.

But if the Pronoun is put after the Particle, you must say *vi*, and not *ve*; *le vi recò*, he brought them to you; *io gli vi donerò*, I will give them you.

Vi is placed before or after the Verb; as, *questo vi dico per l'ultima volta*, I tell you this for the last Time; *a dirvi il vero, voi sete troppo importuno*, to tell you the Truth, you are very troublesome.

Vi is put before *ci, si, ti*; as, *io non so come vi ci possiamo pervenire*, I do not know how we shall come there; *vi si accordò*, he agreed to it; *vi ti menerò*, I will carry you thither. But in all these Examples, the Particle *vi* is an Adverb, and not a Pronoun.

Remarks upon lui and lei, with the Particle come.

We use *lui*, and *lei*, with the Particle *come*, when Comparison or Equality is signified; as, *cosloro ch' erano maliziosi come lui*, they who were as malicious as he: But if the Word *come* expresses Similitude, and not Equality, *egli* and *ella* must be used; as, *che direste voi, s'io fossi nella Via come egli, or ella?* What would you say if I were in the Way as well as he or she.

Remarks

Remarks upon egli, ella, lui, and lei, with the Gerund.

When any of these Pronouns is accompanied by a *Gerund*, independently of the Verb that follows, then *lui*, and *lei* must be used; ex. *Dormendo lui, io cantava*, whilst he slept, I sung; one may see by this Example, that *lui* has no Reference to the Verb *cantava*. On the contrary, one must say *egli*, and *ella*, if the Verb that follows depends upon these Pronouns; as, *scrivendo egli s'ingegnò di mostrare la Verità del Fatto*, by Writing he strove to shew the Truth of the Matter; *filando ella a poco a poco s'addormentò*, as she was spinning she fell asleep.

Remarks upon esso, essa, desso, dessa.

The Pronoun *esso*, is almost indeclineable, and is used as a Particle Expletive before the Pronouns *lui, lei, loro, noi, voi, Mano, Piedi*; as, *con esso lui*, with him; *con essa lei*, with her; *con esso loro*, with them; *cominciàro a cantare, e le Valli con esso loro*, they began to sing, and the Vallies with them; *con esso le Mani*, with the Hands; *con esso i Piedi*, with the Feet.

Desso, and *dessa*, have the same Signification as, *esso*, and *essa*; but they have a Signification more energetick in expressing the Person or the Thing we speak of; as, *egli è desso*, he is the very Man; *tu non mi par dessa*, I do not think you are the same Woman.

SECT. II.

Of the Pronouns Possessive.

Pronouns Possessive, are so called, because they signify the Possession or Appurtenance of a Thing; and they are declined by the Article *il, del, al, dal,* for the Masculine, and *la, della, alla, dalla,* for the Feminine.

There are Twelve Pronouns Possessive in *Italian*; viz. *il mio, il tuo, il suo, il nostro, il vostro, il loro; la mia, la tua, la sua, la nostra, la vostra, la loro.*

EXAMPLES.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *il mio*, my, or mine.
Gen. *Del mio*, of my, or mine.
Dat. *Al mio*, to my, or mine.
Acc. *il mio*, my, or mine.
Abl. *Dal mio*, from my, or mine.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *I miei*, my, or mine.
Gen. *De' miei*, of my, or mine.
Dat. *A' miei*, to my, or mine.
Acc. *I miei*, my, or mine.
Abl. *Da' miei*, from my, or mine.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La mia*, my, or mine.
Gen. *Della mia*, of my, or mine.
Dat. *Alla mia*, to my, or mine.
Acc. *La mia*, my, or mine.
Abl. *Dalla mia*, from my, or mine.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le mie*, my, or mine.
Gen. *Delle mie*, of my, or mine.
Dat. *Alle mie*, to my, or mine.
Acc. *Le mie*, my, or mine.
Abl. *Dalle mie*, from my, or mine.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *il tuo*, thy, or thine.
Gen. *Del tuo*, of thy, or thine.
Dat. *Al tuo*, to thy, or thine.
Acc. *il tuo*, thy, or thine.
Abl. *Dal tuo*, from thy, or thine.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *I tuoi*, thy, or thine.
Gen. *De' tuoi*, of thy, or thine.
Dat. *A' tuoi*, to thy, or thine.
Acc. *I tuoi*, thy, or thine.
Abl. *Da' tuoi*, from thy, or thine.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La tua*, thy, or thine.Gen. *Della tua*, of thy, or thine.Dat. *Alla tua*, to thy, or thine.Acc. *La tua*, thy, or thine.Abl. *Dalla tua*, from thy, or thine.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le tue*, thy, or thine.Gen. *Delle tue*, of thy, or thine.Dat. *Alle tue*, to thy, or thine.Acc. *Le tue*, thy, or thine.Abl. *Dalle tue*, from thy, or thine.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Il suo*, his, or hers.Gen. *Del suo*, of his, or hers.Dat. *Al suo*, to his, or hers.Acc. *il suo*, his, or hers.Abl. *Dal suo*, from his, or hers.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *I suoi*, his, or hers.Gen. *De' suoi*, of his, or hers.Dat. *A' suoi*, to his, or hers.Acc. *I suoi*, his, or hers.Abl. *Da' suoi*, from his, or hers.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La sua*, his, or hers.Gen. *Della sua*, of his, or hers.Dat. *Alla sua*, to his, or hers.Acc. *La sua*, his, or hers.Abl. *Dalla sua*, from his, or hers.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le sue*, his, or hers.Gen. *Delle sue*, of his, or hers.Dat. *Alle sue*, to his, or hers.Acc. *Le sue*, his, or hers.Abl. *Dalle sue*, from his, or hers.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Il nostro*, our, or ours.Gen. *Del nostro*, of our, or ours.Dat. *Al nostro*, to our, or ours.Acc. *il nostro*, our, or ours.Abl. *Dal nostro*, from our, or ours.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *I nostri*, our, or ours.Gen. *De' nostri*, of our, or ours.Dat. *A' nostri*, to our, or ours.Acc. *I nostri*, our, or ours.Abl. *Da' nostri*, from our, or ours.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La nostra*, our, or ours.Gen. *Della nostra*, of our, or ours.Dat. *Alla nostra*, to our, or ours.Acc. *La nostra*, our, or ours.Abl. *Dalla nostra*, from our, or ours.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le nostre*, our, or ours.Gen. *Delle nostre*, of our, or ours.Dat. *Alle nostre*, to our, or ours.Acc. *Le nostre*, our, or ours.Abl. *Dalle nostre*, from our, or ours.

SIN

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Il vostro*, your, or yours.
 Gen. *Del vostro*, of your, or yours.
 Dat. *Al vostro*, to your, or yours.
 Acc. *Il vostro*, your, or yours.
 Abl. *Dal vostro*, from your, or yours.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *I vostri*, your, or yours.
 Gen. *De' vostri*, of your, or yours.
 Dat. *A' vostri*, to your, or yours.
 Acc. *I vostri*, your, or yours.
 Abl. *Da' vostri*, from your, or yours.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La vostra*, your, or yours.
 Gen. *Della vostra*, of your, or yours.
 Dat. *Alla vostra*, to your, or yours.
 Acc. *La vostra*, your, or yours.
 Abl. *Dalla vostra*, from your, or yours.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le vostre*, your, or yours.
 Gen. *Delle vostre*, of your, or yours.
 Dat. *Alle vostre*, to your, or yours.
 Acc. *Le vostre*, your, or yours.
 Abl. *Dalle vostre*, from your, or yours.

Loro, *their*, is of the common Gender.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Il loro*, their, or theirs.
 Gen. *Del loro*, of their, or theirs.
 Dat. *Al loro*, to their, or theirs.
 Acc. *Il loro*, their, or theirs.
 Abl. *Dal loro*, from their, or theirs.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *I loro*, their, or theirs.
 Gen. *De' loro*, of their, or theirs.
 Dat. *A' loro*, to their, or theirs.
 Acc. *I loro*, their, or theirs.
 Abl. *Da' loro*, from their, or theirs.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *La loro*, their, or theirs.
 Gen. *Della loro*, of their, or theirs.
 Dat. *Alla loro*, to their, or theirs.
 Acc. *La loro*, their, or theirs.
 Abl. *Dalla loro*, from their, or theirs.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Le loro*, their, or theirs.
 Gen. *Delle loro*, of their, or theirs.
 Dat. *Alle loro*, to their, or theirs.
 Acc. *Le loro*, their, or theirs.
 Abl. *Dalle loro*, from their, or theirs.

By

By the foregoing Examples, it plainly appears, that the *Italian* Tongue has but one Kind of Pronouns Possessive, to answer the double Pronouns in *English*; my, and mine; thy, and thine; our, or ours, &c. We say then, *Questo Libro è mio*, this is my Book, whether *mio* be accompanied with a Noun, or be a Relative; whereas, the *English* say, this Book is mine, or this is my Book.

Note, also, that these Pronouns may be put, either before or after the Noun; but in *English*, must always go before; so we say, *i miei Libri*, and *i Libri miei*, my Books.

Although I have said before, that the Pronouns Possessive are declined by the Article *il, del, &c.* yet you must observe, that if these Pronouns are joined to a Noun of Quality, or Kindred, then they are declined by the Article *di, a, da*; as, *sua Maestà*, his Majesty; *di sua Maestà*, of his Majesty; *a sua Maestà*, to his Majesty; *da sua Maestà*, from his Majesty: *Mio Padre*, my Father; *di mio Padre*, of my Father; *a mio Padre*, to my Father; *da mio Padre*, from my Father; *mia Madre*, my Mother; *di mia Madre*, of my Mother, &c. But in the Plural, we use the Article *i, de, le, delle, &c.* *i miei Fratelli*, my Brothers; *de' miei Fratelli*, of my Brothers, &c. *le mie Sorelle*, my Sisters; *delle mie Sorelle*, of my Sisters, &c.

Note, that *loro*, before a Verb is a Pronoun Personal; as, *io dissi loro*, I told them; and before a Noun is a Pronoun Possessive; *i Beni loro*, their Estate.

S E C T.

SECT. III.

Of the Pronouns Demonstrative.

Pronouns Demonstrative serve to shew a Person or a Thing. We have in *Italian* but two Sorts; some to shew a Person or Thing that is near us, and others to shew a Person or Thing at some Distance. These Pronouns are declined with the Article *di, a, da*.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *questo*, this.
Gen. *Di questo*, of this.
Dat. *A questo*, to this.
Acc. *Questo*, this.
Abl. *Da questo*, from this.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *Questi*, these.
Gen. *Di questi*, of these.
Dat. *A questi*, to these.
Acc. *Questi*, these.
Abl. *Da questi*, from these.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *Questa*, this.
Gen. *Di questa*, of this.
Dat. *A questa*, to this.
Acc. *Questa*, this.
Abl. *Da questa*, from this.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Queste*, these.
Gen. *Di queste*, of these.
Dat. *A queste*, to these.
Acc. *Queste*, these.
Abl. *Da queste*, from these.

Cotesto, he, or this; cotesta, she, or this; cotesti, coteste, they or those, are declined like questo, and questa.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Quello*, that.
Gen. *Di quello*, of that.
Dat. *A quello*, to that.
Acc. *Quello*, that.
Abl. *Da quello*, from that.

PLURAL Masc.

Nom. *Quei*, or *quelli*, those.
Gen. *Di quei*, or *quelli*, of those.
Dat. *A quei*, or *quelli*, to those.
Acc. *Quei*, or *quelli*, those.
Abl. *Da quei*, or *quelli*, from those.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *Quella*, that.
Gen. *Di quella*, of that.
Dat. *A quella*, to that.
Acc. *Quella*, that.
Abl. *Da quella*, from that.

PLURAL Fem.

Nom. *Quelle*, those.
Gen. *Di quelle*, of those.
Dat. *A quelle*, to those.
Acc. *Quelle*, those.
Abl. *Da quelle*, from those.

SING-

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Costui*, he, or this Man.Gen. *Di costui*, of him, or this Man.Dat. *A costui*, to him, or this Man.Acc. *Costui*, him, or this Man.Abl. *Da costui*, from him, or this Man.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *Costei*, she, or this Woman.Gen. *Di costei*, of her, or this Woman.Dat. *A costei*, to her, or this Woman.Acc. *Costei*, her, or this Woman.Abl. *Da costei*, from her, or this Woman.

PLURAL Masc. Fem.

Nom. *Costoro*, they, or these Men and Women.Gen. *Di costoro*, of them, &c.Dat. *A costoro*, to them, &c.Acc. *Costoro*, them, &c.Abl. *Da costoro*, from them, &c.

Costestui, he or this Man; *cotestei*, she, or this Woman, are declined like *costui*, and *costei*.

SINGULAR Masc.

Nom. *Colui*, he, or that Man.Gen. *Di Colui*, of him, or that Man.Dat. *A colui*, to him, or that Man.Acc. *Colui*, him, or that Man.Abl. *Da colui*, from him, or that Man.

SINGULAR Fem.

Nom. *Colei*, she, or that Woman.Gen. *Di colei*, of her, or that Woman.Dat. *A colei*, to her, or that Woman.Acc. *Colei*, her, or that Woman.Abl. *Da colei*, from her, or that Woman.

PLURAL

PLURAL Masc. and Fem.

Nom. *Coloro*, they, or those Men or Women.

Gen. *Di coloro*, of them, &c.

Dat. *A coloro*, to them, &c.

Acc. *Coloro*, them, &c.

Abl. *Da coloro*, from them, &c.

SINGULAR.

Nom. *Cio*, this, or that.

Gen. *Di cio*, of this, or that.

Dat. *A cio*, to this, or that.

Acc. *Cio*, this, or that.

Abl. *Da cio*, from this, or that.

Remarks upon the Pronouns Demonstrative.

One ought to say *questi*, and never *questo*, when this Pronoun is used alone for this Man; as, *questi vorrebbe persuadermi, che, &c.* this Man would fain persuade me, that, &c.

If *questo* is used alone, and without any Substantive, it signifies this or that; as, *questo vi dico per l'ultima Volta*, I tell you this for the last Time; *questo mi piace*, I like that.

When it is joined with a Substantive, it agrees with it in Gender, Number, and Case; as, *questo Vizio*, this Vice; *questa Virtù*, this Virtue; *questi Doni*, these Gifts; *queste Parole*, these Words.

There is always some Difference between *questo*, and *cotesto*, *questa* and *cotesta*; for *questo* is used by him that speaks to another; as, *vi ho partecipato questo mio Pensiero, perche so che sete mio Amico*, I have imparted this Resolution of mine to you, knowing you to be my Friend; and *cotesto* is used by the Person

that is spoken to ; as, *cotesto vostro Pensiero mi piace*, I approve of this your Resolution.

Before *Mane*, or *Mattina*, *Sera*, *Notte*, we put *sta* instead of *questa* ; as, *Stamane*, or *Stamattina*, this Morning ; *Sta sera*, or *Stanotte*, this Night. But before all other Words we always say *questa*.

Note, that we make Use of *questo* and *questa*, when the Thing spoken of is near ; and of *quello* and *quella*, when the Thing spoken of is more remote.

Costui, and *cotestui*, *costei*, and *cotestei*, have almost the same Signification ; the only Difference, is, that *cotestui* and *cotestei* serve to shew a Thing near, and *costui* and *costei*, a Thing more distant.

Note, also, that these Pronouns are always relative to a Substantive animate.

The Pronoun *cio*, is indeclinable, and signifies *questo*, this or that, and is always Relative to a Substantive inanimate : as,

Nè di cio lei, ma mia Ventura incolpo, nor do I lay the Fault of that on her, but on my bad Fate. Upon some Occasions *cio* has been used as Relative to an animate Thing ; as, *la quale io credei incontanente, ch' ella fosse cio ch' ella era*, whom I soon knew to be what I thought she was ; *Ric. Minut.*

SECT. IV.

Of the Pronouns Relative.

Pronouns Relative, are those which shew the Relation, or Reference, which a Noun has to what follows it.

Most Pronouns in *Italian* have sometimes a Relative Signification ; but the chiefest and properly so called Relative, are *che*, and *quale*.

Note,

Note, that *che* has two Significations, of the Thing, and of the Person. When it is Relative to a Thing, 'tis common to all Numbers, Genders, and Cases; as, *il Libro, che*, the Book, which; *la Lettera, che*, the Letter, which; *i Libri, che*, the Books, which; *le Lettere, che*, the Letters, which; and it is declined thus.

SINGULAR and PLURAL.

Nom. *Che*, which.
Gen. *Di che*, of which.
Dat. *A che*, to which.
Acc. *Che*, which.
Abl. *Da che*, from which.

Che, when it is relative to a Person, and signifies who, is either Masculine or Feminine, and serves for both the Numbers, Singular and Plural; but 'tis used only in the Nominative Case of both Numbers; and for the other Cases we say *cui*; and 'tis declined thus;

SINGULAR and PLURAL.

Nom. *Che*, who.
Gen. *Di cui*, of whom, or whose.
Dat. *A cui*, or *cui*, to whom.
Acc. *Che*, or *cui*, whom.
Abl. *Da cui*, from whom.

Quale, when it is taken relatively, requires the Article *il*, or *la*; as, *Pietro, il quale*, Peter, who; *la Doglia, la quale*, the Grief, which; it is declined thus;

SINGULAR Masc.	PLURAL Masc.
Nom. <i>Il quale</i> , who, or which.	Nom. <i>I quali</i> , who, or which.
Gen. <i>Del quale</i> , of whom, or which.	Gen. <i>De' quali</i> , of whom, or which.
Dat. <i>Al quale</i> , to whom, or which.	Dat. <i>A' quali</i> , to whom, or which.
Acc. <i>Il quale</i> , whom, or which.	Acc. <i>I quali</i> , whom, or which.
Abl. <i>Dal quale</i> , from whom, or which.	Abl. <i>Da' quali</i> , from whom, or which.

SINGULAR Fem.	PLURAL Fem.
Nom. <i>La quale</i> , who, or which.	Nom. <i>Le quali</i> , who, or which.
Gen. <i>Della quale</i> , of whom, or which.	Gen. <i>Delle quali</i> , of whom, or which.
Dat. <i>Alla quale</i> , to whom, or which.	Dat. <i>Alle quali</i> , to whom, or which.
Acc. <i>La quale</i> , whom, or which.	Acc. <i>Le quali</i> , whom, or which.
Abl. <i>Dalla quale</i> , from whom, or which.	Abl. <i>Dalle quali</i> , from whom, or which.

When *quale* denotes Quality, it is used without the Article; as, *se tu sapessi, qual' è l' Dolor ch'io sento*, if you knew what Grief I feel.

SECT. V.

Of the Pronouns Interrogative.

Pronouns Interrogative, are those that are used in asking a Question, and are only three, viz. *chi?* who? *quale?* which? *che?* what?

SINGULAR and PLURAL. Masc. and Fem.	SINGULAR and PLURAL. Masc. and Fem.
Nom. <i>Chi?</i> who, whom?	Nom. <i>Che?</i> what?
Gen. <i>Di chi?</i> of whom?	Gen. <i>Di che?</i> of what?
Dat. <i>A chi?</i> to whom?	Dat. <i>A che?</i> to what?
Acc. <i>Chi?</i> whom?	Acc. <i>Che?</i> what?
Abl. <i>Da chi?</i> from whom?	Abl. <i>Da che?</i> from what?

SIN

SINGULAR Masc. and Fem.	PLURAL Masc. and Fem.
Nom. <i>Quale?</i> which, or what?	Nom. <i>Quali, qua' or quai?</i> which, or what?
Gen. <i>Di quale?</i> of which, or what?	Gen. <i>Di quali, &c.</i> of which, or what?
Dat. <i>A quale?</i> to which, or what?	Dat. <i>A' quali?</i> to which, or what?
Acc. <i>Quale?</i> which, or what?	Acc. <i>Quali?</i> which, or what?
Abl. <i>Da quale?</i> from which, or what?	Abl. <i>Da quali?</i> from which, or what?

SECT. VI.

Of the Pronouns Numeral.

Numeral Pronouns serve to express the Number and Quantity, and are these following;

Ogni, every.

Ognuno, Ognuna,

Ciascuno, or Ciascheduno,

Ciascuna, or Ciascheduna,

Niuno, or Nessuno,

Veruno, Veruna,

Tutto, tutta, all.

Molti, molte, several.

Pochi, poche, few.

} every one.

} no Body.

These Pronouns are declined with the Article *di, a, da*; *Ogni*, is declinable, and 'tis only used in the Singular; and *molti* and *molte* have no Singular.

SECT. VII.

Of the Pronouns Indefinite.

Indefinite Pronouns signify a Person or Thing in a general, and unlimited Sense; and are the following.

F 3

Uno,

Uno, una, one.

Gli uni, some.

Altro, altra, other.

L'Altro, l'altra, the other.

Altrui, others.

Alcuno, } some Body.

Qualcuno, }

Chiunque, } whosoever.

Qualunque, }

Qualche, } some.

Qualcuno, }

Qualunque, whatsoever.

Certo, certa, certain.

Stesso, stessa, self-same.

Tale, such.

All these Pronouns are declined with the Article *di, a, da*; except *l'uno, l'una, l'altro, l'altra*; and these two *certo, tale*, which are declined either with the Article *un*, or the Particles *di, a, da*.

R E M A R K S.

Uno, one, when it stands for a Pronoun, needs not a Substantive to accompany it; as, *non ne passa per via uno, che a me non dispiaccia come la mala Ventura*, there is not one passes by, but what displeases me, as some unlucky Thing.

Uno being used as a Numeral, has no Plural; but distributively taken, it assumes the Plural; as, *gli uni, e gli altri tementi Annibale*, the one and the other being afraid of *Hannibal*.

Uno accompanied with *tutto*, has a neutral Signification; as, *Cortesia ed Onestà è tutt' uno*, Civility and Honesty are the same Thing.

From

From *uno* are formed, *Alcuno*, some Body; *Ciascuno*, and *Ciascheduno*, every one; *nessuno* and *niuno*, no Body; *Qualcuno*, some Body; *Veruno*, no Body.

Altro, by it self, without being accompanied with a Substantive, signifies, one, or another Thing; as, *altro è parlar di Morte*, *altro è morire*, it is one Thing to talk of Death, and another to Die; *vuoi altro?* do you want any Thing else.

From *altro*, are formed several Expressions; as, *tu non sei da altro*, you are good for nothing else; *per altro*, however.

Altro being a Pronoun adjective, is declined, *altro, altra, altri, altre*.

Altri, being a Noun Substantive, signifies another Man; and makes *altrui* for the Oblique Cases; thus,

Nom. *Altri*, another.

Gen. *Altrui*, or *d' altrui*, of another.

Dat. *Altrui*, or *ad altrui*, to another.

Acc. *Altrui*, another.

Abl. *D' altrui*, from another.

Lasso ch'io ardo, ed altri non me'l crede, alas! I burn, and no Body believes me.

Tal biasma altrui, che se stesso condanno, some by blaming others, condemn themselves.

But *altri* being in the plural Number, is not declined; as, *facciano prima essi, e poi ammaestrino gli altri*, let them set a good Example, before they instruct others.

Alcuno, some one, has Gender, Number, and Case; viz. *alcuno, alcuna, alcuni, alcune*; &c. Being put alone, it has the Nature of a Pronoun, and signifies a Person indeterminately: *allor mi strinsi a rimirar se alcuno riconoscessi*, I applied my self to

them if I could know any of them; *secondo alcuni affermano*, as some assure.

We use *alcuno*, after a Verb, that is preceeded by the Particle *non*; as, *non vi è alcuna, che sia più bella di voi*, there is no Woman handsomer than you.

Ciascuno, or *ciascheduno*, every one, has no Plural, and it has the same Signification as *ognuno*; but with this Difference; that *ciascuno* marks something more particular, and *ognuno* has a more general Signification.

Ma ciascuna per se pareva ben degna, but each of them separately seemed well deserving.

Ognun lo crede, e ben lo credo anch'io, every Body believes it, and I believe it also.

Qualunque, and *Chiunque*, have the same Signification, and signify whosoever. They are both indeclinable, and very seldom are found in the Plural Number; but the Difference between them is, that *chiunque* is always spoken of a Person, and *qualunque* is spoken of the Person and of the Thing.

From the Pronouns *qual* and *che* is formed *qualche*, and it serves for all Genders, Numbers, and Cases.

Qualche tu sie, od Ombra, od Uomo certo, whosoever you are, either a Ghost, or a real Man.

In qualche Strada, o in qualche strani Lidi, in some way, or in some strange Shoar.

Ogni and *tutto*, all, have the same Signification; but the First is indeclinable, and for the Singular only; the Second is declinable, both for the Singular and Plural.

Ogni Luogo m'attrista, ov'io non veggio que' begli Occhi soavi, I am sad in every Place, where I do not see those sweet Eyes.

In

In ogni Cosa le femmine sempre pigliano il Peggio, Women in every Thing, betake themselves to the Worst.

There are some Examples, where *ogni* is used in the Plural, but they are few; *appresso la festa d'ogni Santi*, All Saints Day: *I miei Affanni ogni altri trapassano di gran lunga*, my Misfortunes are by far greater than any.

Ogni, with *cosa*, signifies every; it may agree with the Noun Adjective of the masculine Gender; *fu ogni Cosa di Romore, e di Pianto ripieno*, every Thing was full of Noise, and Grief; *caricato ogni Cosa sene tornò in Palermo*, every Thing being packed up, he returned to Palermo.

There is another Difference between *ogni* and *tutto*; viz. that the First being an Adjective, ought always to be followed by a Substantive; and *tutto* is often imployed alone as a neuter absolute.

Tutto is used very gracefully without Article; as, *che tutte altre Bellezze indietro vanno*, because all other Beauties do not come up to them: But when they are joined together, the Article must precede; as,

Sopra gli Omeri avea sol due grand' Ali, di Color mille, e tutto l'altro ignudo, he had to his Shoulders two large Wings of sundry Colours, and the rest of the Body naked.

Niuno, or *nessuno*, formerly *neuno*, no one, or no Body, either without, or with the Negative *non*, were always taken negatively; *non vado con nessuno*, I go with no Body; but sometimes they are used affirmatively, if a Question be asked; as, *vi è nessuno, che mi voglia?* is there any Body that wants me?

These two Pronouns may equally be accompanied by the Pronoun *altro*; as, *niun' altro*, and *nessun' altro*, no Body else.

Qualcuno,

Qualcuno, and *qualche*, some, have the same Signification; but the First is always singular, and the Second may be also plural, although it does not change its Termination.

Veruno, is the same as *niuno*; but the First has more Force in a negative Proposition.

Note, that these two Pronouns are taken negatively with the Particle *non*; otherwise they serve to affirm; as, *non fa caldo veruno*, 'tis not hot at all; *seco nella sua Cella nela menò, che nessuna persona se n'accorse*, he carried her into his Cell, without being perceived by any Body.

Stesso, the same or self, follows the Pronoun, with which it is joined; as, *io stesso*, I my self; *mia Madre stessa*, my Mother her self: It is used neutrally with the Article *lo*, and with the Pronouns *questo*, and *quello*; as, *lo stesso*, the same; *questo stesso*, this same; *quello stesso*, that same.

Medesimo, and in verse *medemo*, the same, is used like *stesso*, and follows the Pronouns it is joined with; *io medesimo*, I my self; *egli medesimo*, he himself.

Tale, such, or such an one, ought with more Reason to be called a Pronoun than any other; because, in some Cases where we do not mean a particular Person, it is an indefinite Term: It is common to the masculine and to the feminine Gender, and makes *tali*, in the Plural for both Genders; *tale Carne*, *tale Coltello*, such Meat, such a Knife; *tali Mariti*, *tali Mogli*, such Husbands, such Wives.

Tale, is sometimes an Adjective of Similitude, between two or several Things; and in this Sense it is a Pronoun relative; and the Pronoun *quale* answers to it; as, *si pensò costui esser tale, quale la Malvagità de' Borgognoni il richiedeva*, this Man thought he was such, as the Wickedness of the Burgognons required.

Tale,

Tale, supplies sometimes the Place of the Person, whose Name is not specified; as, *un tal Briccone dovrebbe esser punito*, such a Rogue ought to be punished.

We say *da tale e da quale*, instead of *Ognuno*, every one; as, *non sono le mie Bellezze da lasciarsi amare ne da tale, ne da quale*, my Charms are not for every one to be in Love with.

It is better to say *tal*, than *tale* in the Singular; as, *tal Marito, tal Donna*, such a Husband, such a Wife; and in the Plural, we often say *tai* and *ta'* instead of *tali*.

C H A P. IV.

Of Verbs.

TO give a true Definition of a Verb in general, it must be considered, what is essential, and what is accidental to it.

The Verb, considered by what is essential to it, is a Part of Speech, which serves to describe the Being, and the State of Things, and of Persons, the Actions which they do, and the Impressions which they receive; ex. *essere*, to be; *Amare*, to love; *essere amato*, to be loved.

If we consider it, by what is accidental to it, 'tis a Part of Speech that receives divers Inflexions or Variations, distinguished among themselves by Moods, Tenses, Persons, Numbers and Conjugations.

Of

Of the Accidents of Verbs.

They reckon fix Accidents in Verbs, *viz.*

The Gender, or Form.	The Person.
The Tense.	The Number.
The Mood.	The Conjugation.

S E C T. I.

Of the Gender.

The Gender or Form of Verbs, is that which shews their Nature, and proper Signification.

The First, and the most general Division of Verbs is to divide them into Personal, and Impersonal.

A Verb Personal is conjugated by three Persons; ex.

<i>Io amo</i> , I love.	<i>Noi amiamo</i> , we love.
<i>Tu ami</i> , thou lovest.	<i>Voi amate</i> , ye love.
<i>Egli ama</i> , he loves.	<i>Eglino amano</i> , they love.

A Verb Impersonal is conjugated by the third Person of the Singular only; ex. *piove*, it rains; *grandina*, it hails; *tuona*, it thunders.

A Verb considered in regard to the Syntax, is of five Sorts, *viz.* Active, Passive, Neuter, and Reciprocal.

An Active Verb is that which expresses an Action that passes from the Agent to the Patient; that is, from the Subject that does, or produces an Action, to that which suffers, or receives it; ex. *un buon Padre ama i suoi Figliuoli*, a good Father loveth his Children; *ho mangiato un Pollastro*, I have eat a Chicken.

A Passive

A Passive Verb expresses the Suffering or Reception of an Action; as, *io sono lodato*, I am praised; *tu sei amato*, thou art loved.

A Neuter Verb serves to express the Existence of a Thing, or an Action which remains in the Subject that produces it; ex. *Io sono*, I am; *Io sto*, I stay or remain; *Io corro*, I run; *Io dormo*, I sleep.

A Verb Reciprocal is an Active Verb, that reflects the Action upon the Agent that produces it; ex. *rallegrarsi*, to rejoice one's self; *ricordarsi*, to remember; so that all Active Verbs may be turned into Reciprocal or reflected, by the Help of the Particles *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c. *io mi amo*, I love my self; *tu ti lodi*, thou praisest thy self; *egli si crede*, he thinks himself.

SECT. II.

Of the Moods.

A Mood is an accident of Verbs, which expresses the different Ways an Action is done by.

There are properly but four Moods; viz. the Indicative, Imperative, Conjunctive, and Infinitive.

The Indicative expresses the Action simply, directly, and absolutely; ex. *io canto*, I sing; *egli andò*, he went; *ella verrà*, she will come.

The Imperative Mood commands, or forbids; ex. *va*, go thou; *che venga*, let him come; *non fate questo*, do not do that.

The Conjunctive is so called, First, because it is generally used with Conjunctions before it; such as, *che*, that; *benchè*, although; *affinchè*, that; or, to the End that; *purchè*, provided that; *voglia Dio che*, would to God that: Secondly, because it never

never makes a compleat Sense unless it be joined with the Indicative; as, *se vuoi ch'io l'ami*, if you will have me love you; *credo che l'averebbe a caro*; I believe he would be glad of it.

The Infinitive has an indeterminate Signification, and expresses the Action without any Circumstance, either of Number or Persons: It has in *Italian* but two Tenses, viz. The Present, and the Perfect; ex. *amare*, to love; *avere amato*, to have loved; and it is construed with the other Moods; by which only it is determined; ex. *io voglio parlare*, I will speak; *vorrei sapere*, I would fain know.

Some Grammarians multiply the Number of Moods, and, besides the Four already mentioned, they reckon the Potential, Conditional, and Optative, which is altogether void of Reason, since these three are all reducible to the Conjunctive.

SECT. III.

Of the Tenses.

The Tense or Time, is that accident of Verbs, which shews when the Action is done; so that there are properly but three Tenses; viz. The Present, the Preter or Time past, and the Future, or Time to come: But the Preter in *Italian* is divided into five Branches generally called,

<i>In the Indicative Mood.</i>	<i>And in the Conjunctive.</i>
Preterimperfect.	First Preterimperfect.
Preterperfect Definite.	Second Preterimperfect.
Preterperfect.	Preterperfect.
First Preterpluperfect.	First Preterpluperfect.
Second Preterpluperfect.	Second Preterpluperfect.

The

The Imperative Mood has but one mixed Tense, which relates both to the Present and the Future.

The Infinitive has but two Tenses, viz. The Present, and the Future.

Of the TENSES of the INDICATIVE Mood.

The Indicative Mood, as we hinted before, has seven Tenses, of which four are Simple, and three Compound; the four Simple Tenses are,

1. The Present, which signifies the Time wherein the Action is doing; ex. *Io parlo*, I speak; *tu mangi*, thou eatest, &c.

2. The Preterimperfect, is so called, because it expresses an Action begun, and not ended; ex. *Io scrivevo quando entrò*, I was writing when he came in.

3. The third Simple Tense is called, Perfect Definite; because it is used to express a precise and determinate Time; ex. *Ieri parlai al Re*, yesterday I spoke to the King; but you must observe, that it is never used to signify an Action done the Day we speak in.

4. The Future expresses an Action which is to be done; ex. *Io anderò*, I shall or will go; *egli manderà*, he shall or will send.

The three Compound Tenses are those that are compounded with the three First simple Tenses of the Auxiliary Verbs *Avere*, to have; or *essere*, to be; and the Participle Preter, or Passive, of the Verb which is to be conjugated; ex.

Io ho parlato, I have spoken. *Io sono venuto*, I am come.
Io avevo parlato, } I had spoken. } *Io ero venuto*, } I was come.
Io ebbi parlato, } *Io fui venuto*, }

The first Compound Tense, called Preterperfect, or Perfect Indefinite, is used to express an Action perfectly past, without determining any precise Time;

Time; or the Reiteration of an Action; ex. *io l'ho veduto prima di voi*, I have seen it before you; *io li ho parlato piu di cento volte*, I have spoken to him above a hundred Times; or else it serves to express an Action done the same Day one speaks in; ex. *l'ho veduto stamattina*, I saw him this Morning.

The second Compound Tense, called first Preterpluperfect, expresses an Action, not only perfectly past, but done also before another, of which one speaks, was begun; ex. *avevo finito di scrivere, quando egli entrò*, I had done Writing when he came in; *l'Opera era finita, quando il Re parti*, the Opera was done, when the King went away; *avevo risoluto d'andare in Italia, ma i miei affari non m'elo permisero*, I was resolved to go to Italy, but my Business did not permit me.

The third Compound Tense, commonly called second Pluperfect Tense, but more properly Definite Compound, expresses also an Action perfectly past, and preceeding another; and, besides, it has a perfect and determined Signification; as, *intesa ch'ebbi questa novella, ne feci partecipe suo Padre*, as soon as I had learned that News, I acquainted his Father with it.

Of the TENSES of the IMPERATIVE Mood.

This Mood, as we have said before, has but one Tense, which relates both to the Present, and the Future.

Of the TENSES of the CONJUNCTIVE Mood.

The three Simple Tenses are,

The Present, which sometimes has also a future Signification; ex. *benchè io ami*, though I love; *purchè vogliate*, provided you will; *supposto che venga*, suppose he comes. The

The first Preterimperfect, called by some the uncertain Tense, but more properly the Future Conditional; as, *se tu m'amaffi, io t'amerei*, if thou didst love me, I should love you.

The third Simple Tense is the second Imperfect, which is derived from the Perfect Definite of the Indicative; ex. *benchè io amassi*, though I loved.

The four Compound Tenses are those that are formed of the three Simple Tenses of the Conjunctive Mood, and of the Future of the Indicative, of the Auxiliary Verbs *avere* to have, and *essere* to be, and the Participle past of the Verb, which is to be conjugated.

Ex. The Preterperfect; as, *io abbia amato*, I have loved; *io sia stato*, I have been.

First Preterpluperfect, or Preter Conditional; as, *io averei amato*, I had loved, or I should or would have loved; *sarei stato amato*, I had been loved, or I should or would have been loved.

Second Pluperfect; as, *avessi amato*, I had loved; *fossi stato amato*, I had been loved.

Future; as, *averò amato*, I shall have loved; *sarò stato amato*, I shall have been loved.

Of the TENSES of the INFINITIVE Mood.

The Infinitive Mood has but two Tenses, one Simple, viz. the Present; ex. *amare*, to love; the other Compound, viz. the Preter; as, *avere amato*, to have loved.

SECT. IV.

Of the Persons.

There are three Persons in Verbs, as in Pronouns; ex. *io amo, tu ami, egli or ella ama*, I love,

G

82 *A New Italian Grammar.*

love, thou lovest, he or she loves; *noi amiamo*,
voi amate, *eglino* or *elleno amano*, we love, you
love, they love.

SECT. V.

Of the Numbers.

Every Tense, in the three first Moods, has two
Numbers, *viz.* the Singular; as, *io amo*, I love;
and the Plural; as, *noi amiamo*, we love; which
in the Conjugations we shall mark thus, *S. P.*

SECT. VI.

Of Conjugation.

Conjugation is the due Distribution of the
several Parts of Verbs; *viz.* Moods, Tenses, Per-
sons, and Numbers.

There are three different Conjugations in *Itali-
an*, which are distinguished by the Termination of
the Infinitive.

The First,	{	makes the	{	are; as, <i>amare</i> , to love.
The Second,				ere; long, as, <i>temere</i> to fear; and
The Third,				ere, short; as, <i>credere</i> , to believe.
			{	ire; as, <i>dormire</i> , to sleep.

General Rules for the Termination of Verbs.

I thought that one could more easily learn the
Conjugation, if he would Form him self an Idea
of all the Tenses: Therefore I shall give here some
Rules, which will contribute very much to the
Learning of them.

Of

Of the Tenses of the Indicative Mood.

All the first Persons Singular of the Present of the Indicative Mood, do terminate in *o* ; ex. *io amo*, I love ; *io credo*, I believe ; *io dormo*, I sleep.

The second Persons Singular of the same Tense, are terminated in *i* ; ex. *tu ami*, thou lovest ; *tu credi*, thou believest ; *tu dormi*, thou sleepest.

The third Persons of the first Conjugation are terminated in *a* ; ex. *egli ama*, he loves : Those of the Second and Third, are terminated in *e* ; ex. *egli crede*, he believes ; *egli dorme*, he sleeps.

The first Persons of the Plural, terminate in *iamo* ; ex. *noi amiamo*, we love ; *noi crediamo*, we believe ; *noi dormiamo*, we sleep.

The second Persons in *ate*, *ete*, *ite* ; ex. *voi amate*, ye love ; *voi credete*, ye believe, *voi dormite*, ye sleep.

The third Persons terminate in *ano*, for the first Conjugation, and in *ono*, for the Second and third ; ex. *eglino amano*, they love ; *eglino credono*, they believe ; *eglino dormono*, they sleep.

The first Persons of the Imperfect Tense, are terminated in *avo*, *evo*, *ivo*, for the Singular ; as, *io amavo*, I did love ; *io credevo*, I did believe ; *io dormivo*, I did sleep.

The second Persons do terminate in *avi*, *evi*, *ivi* ; ex. *tu amavi*, *tu credevi*, *tu dormivi*.

The third Persons, in *ava*, *eva*, *iva* ; ex. *egli amava*, *egli credeva*, *egli dormiva*.

The first Persons Plural in *vàmo* ; ex. *noi amavàmo*, *noi credevàmo*, *noi dormivàmo*.

The second in *vàte* ; ex. *voi amavàte*, *voi credevàte*, *voi dormivàte*.

The third in *vano* ; ex. *eglino amavano*, *eglino credevano*, *eglino dormivano*.

The first Persons Singular of the Preter Definite, are terminated in *ai*, for the first Conjugation; as, *io amai*, I loved; in *ei* for the Second, *io credei*, I believed; and in *ii*, for the Third; *io dormii*, I slept.

The second Persons, in *asti*, *esti*, *isti*; as, *tu amasti*, *tu credesti*, *tu dormisti*.

The third Persons, in *ò*, *è*, *ì*; as, *egli amò*, *egli credè*, *egli dormì*.

The first Persons Plural in *ammo*, *emmo*, *immo*; as, *noi amammo*, *noi credemmo*, *noi dormimmo*.

The second Persons, in *aste*, *este*, *iste*; as, *voi amaste*, *voi credeste*, *voi dormiste*.

The third Persons, in *arò*, *erò*, *irò*; as, *eglino amarò*, *eglino crederò*, *eglino dormirò*.

The first Persons Singular of the Future, do terminate in *erò* for the first and second Conjugation, and in *irò* for the Third; as, *io amerò*, I shall love; *io crederò*, I shall believe; *io dormirò*, I shall sleep.

The Second in *rai*; as, *tu amerai*, *tu crederai*, *tu dormirai*.

The Third in *rà*; as, *egli amerà*, *egli crederà*, *egli dormirà*.

The first Plural in *remo*; as, *noi ameremo*, *noi crederemo*, *noi dormiremo*.

The Third in *ranno*; as, *eglino ameranno*, *eglino crederanno*, *eglino dormiranno*.

Of the Imperative Mood.

The second Persons Singular of the Imperative, terminate in *a*, for the first Conjugation; and in *i* for the Second and Third; ex. *ama tu*, love thou; *credi tu*, believe thou; *dormi tu*, sleep thou.

The third of the first Conjugation, terminate in *i*, and of the Second and Third in *a*; as, *ami egli*, let him love; *creda egli*, let him believe; *dorma egli*, let him sleep.

The first of the Plural, in *iamo*; as, *amiamo, crediamo, dormiamo*.

The Second in *ate, ete, ite*; as, *amate, credete, dormite*.

The Third in *ino*, for the first Conjugation; and in *ano*, for the Second and Third; as, *amino, credano, dormano*.

Of the Conjunctive Mood.

The three Persons Singular of the Conjunctive Mood, for the first Conjugation, terminate in *i*; and for the Second and Third, are terminated in *a*; as, *ch'io, tu, egli ami*, that I, thou, he may love; *ch'io, tu, egli creda*, that I, thou, he may believe; *ch'io, tu, egli dorma*, that I, thou, he may sleep.

The first Persons Plural, in *iamo*; as, *noi amiamo, noi crediamo, noi dormiamo*.

The second Persons in *iate*; as, *voi amiate, voi crediate, voi dormiate*.

The third Persons in *ino*, for the first Conjugation; and in *ano*, for the Second and Third; as, *eglino amino, eglino credano, eglino dormano*.

The first Persons of the second Imperfect, for the first Conjugation, do terminate in *assi*; in *essi*, for the Second; in *issi*, for the Third; as, *io amassi, io credessi, io dormissi*.

The second Persons, do terminate in the same; as, *tu amassi, tu credessi, tu dormissi*.

The third Persons in *asse, esse, isse*; as, *egli amasse, egli credesse, egli dormisse*.

The first Persons Plural in *assimo, essimo, issimo*; as, *noi amassimo, noi credessimo, noi dormissimo*.

The second Persons in *aste, este, iste*; as, *voi amaste, voi credeste, voi dormiste*.

The third Persons in *assero, essero, issero*; as, *eglino amassero, eglino credessero, eglino dormissero*.

The first Persons of the Preterimperfect, are terminated in *rei*; as, *io amerei, io crederei, io dormirei*.

The second Persons in *resti*; as, *tu amaresti, tu crederesti, tu dormiresti*.

The third Persons in *rebbe*; as, *egli amerebbe, egli crederebbe, egli dormirebbe*.

The first Persons Plural, terminate in *remmo*; as, *noi ameremmo, noi crederemmo, noi dormiremmo*.

The second Persons in *reste*; as, *voi amereste, voi credereste, voi dormireste*.

The third Persons in *rebbero*; as, *eglino amerebbero, eglino crederebbero, eglino dormirebbero*.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

The Infinitive Mood, for the first Conjugation, terminates in *are*; as, *amare*, to love; for the Second, in *ere* short or long; as, *credere*, to believe, *temere*, to fear; and for the Third in *ire*; as *dormire*, to sleep.

The Gerund, or the Participle Active, for the first Conjugation, terminates in *ando*; as, *amando*, loving; for the Second, and for the Third, in *endo*; as, *credendo*, believing; *dormendo*, sleeping.

The Participle Passive, does terminate in *ato*, for the first Conjugation; as, *amato*, loved: in *uto*, for the Second; as, *creduto*, believed: and in *ito*, for the Third; as, *dormito*, slept. But there are a great many Exceptions for the Verbs of the Second and third Conjugation. Before

Before we proceed, we must take Notice of the *English* Conjugation, with reference to the *Italian*; for, towards the true Understanding of the *Italian* Conjugation; it is highly necessary to know the *English* too, and what Tenses in *English* answer the Tenses in *Italian*.

The *English*, both in the Indicative and Conjunctive Moods, have but five Tenses, as you see in the following Scheme.

INDICATIVE.	CONJUNCTIVE.
<i>Present</i> , I love, or I do love.	<i>Present</i> , I love.
<i>Imperfect</i> , I loved, or did love.	<i>Imperfect</i> , I loved, or I could, should, or would love.
<i>Perfect</i> , I loved, or I have loved.	<i>Perfect</i> , I have loved.
<i>Pluperfect</i> , I had loved.	<i>Pluperfect</i> , I had loved, or I should, would, could have loved.
<i>Future</i> , I shall, or will love.	<i>Future</i> , I shall have loved.

Where you may observe, that the Conjunctive borrows all its Tenses from the Indicative, except the Future.

Now to return to our purpose; since, as you have seen before, the *Italians* have seven Tenses in both these Moods,

First, In the Indicative, the *English* Imperfect answers to the *Italian* Imperfect and Perfect Definite; and the Pluperfect to both Pluperfects; *ex.*

Io amavo, } I loved, or I did love.

Io amai, }

Io avevo amato, } I had loved.

Io ebbi amato, }

Secondly, In the Conjunctive Mood, the *English* Imperfect relates to both the *Italian* Imperfects, and the Pluperfect to both Pluperfects; as,

Io amerei, } I had loved, or I could, should, would

Io amassi, } love.

Io averei amato, } I had loved, or I could, should,
Io avessi amato, } would have loved.

Which ought carefully to be observed, to avoid the common Mistake of those, who say, *io viddi Stamattina*, instead of *io ho visto Stamattina*, I saw this Morning; *ho visto ieri*, instead of *viddi ieri*, I saw Yesterday; *se io porterei*, instead of *se io portassi*, if I carried.

As for the Tenses of the Imperative and Infinitive Moods, they are the same in *English* as in *Italian*.

But to return to the *Italian* Conjugations; you must observe that no Verb can be conjugated through all its Moods and Tenses, without these two, *avere*, to have; and *essere*, to be; which, upon that account, are called Auxiliary, or helping Verbs, and must be learned before one goes on to the Conjugation of others.

Some Grammarians reckon a third Auxiliary, viz. *Dovere*, to owe, or to be; because it is often joined with the Infinitive of other Verbs through most of its Moods, Tenses, and Persons, to signify an Action that must or shall be done; in this manner, *io devo andare*, I ought to go, or I must go; *tu dovereffi far cio*, you should do that; *dovendo partire per la Campagna*, being to go into the Country. But *Dovere* is no more an helping Verb, than many others, which are joined to the Infinitive, through all their Moods, Tenses, and Persons; such as *volere*, to will; *cominciare*, to begin, &c. because these Verbs can be conjugated without them.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, avere, to have.

Indicative Mood Present.

- S. *Io ho*, I have.
Tu hai, thou hast.
Egli ha, he has.
- P. *Noi abbiamo*, we have.
Voi avete, ye have.
Eglino hanno, they have.

Preter-Imperfect.

- S. *Io avevo, aveva, or avea*, I had.
Tu avevi, thou hadst.
Egli aveva, he had.
- P. *Noi avevamo*, we had.
Voi avevate, ye had.
Eglino avevano, they had.

Preterperfect Definite.

- S. *Io ebbi*, I had.
Tu avesti, thou hadst.
Egli ebbe, he had.
- P. *Noi avemmo*, we had.
Voi aveste, ye had.
Eglino ebbero, they had.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io ho avuto*, I have had.
Tu hai avuto, thou hast had.
Egli ha avuto, he has had.
- P. *Noi abbiamo avuto*, we have had.
Voi avete avuto, ye have had.
Eglino hanno avuto, they have had.

First

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avevo avuto*, I had had.
Tu avevi avuto, thou hadst had.
Egli aveva avuto, he had had.
- P. *Noi avevamo avuto*, we had had.
Voi avevate avuto, ye had had.
Eglino avevano avuto, they had had.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io ebbi avuto*, I had had.
Tu avesti avuto, thou hadst had.
Egli ebbe avuto, he had had.
- P. *Noi avemmo avuto*, we had had.
Voi aveste avuto, ye had had.
Eglino ebbero avuto, they had had.

Future.

- S. *Io averò*, or *avrò*, I shall or will have.
Tu averai, or *avrà*, thou shalt or wilt have.
Egli averà, or *avrà*, he shall or will have.
- P. *Noi averemo*, or *avremo*, we shall or will have.
Voi averete, or *avrete*, ye shall or will have.
Eglino averanno, or *avranno*, they shall or will have.

Imperative Mood.

- S. *Abbi tu*, have thou.
Abbia egli, let him have.
- P. *Abbiamo noi*, let us have.
Abbiate voi, have ye.
Abbiano eglino, let them have.

Conjunctive Mood Present.

- S. *Che io abbia*, that I have.
Tu abbia, or *abbi*, thou have.
Egli abbia, he have.
P. *Noi abbiamo*, we have.
Voi abbiate, ye have.
Eglino abbiano, they have.

First Preterimperfect.

- S. *Io averei*, or *avrei*, I should, would, or could have.
Tu averesti, or *avresti*, thou shouldst, &c. have.
Egli averebbe, *avrebbe*, or *averia*, he should have.
P. *Noi averemmo*, or *avremmo*, we should have.
Voi avereste, or *avreste*, ye should have.
Eglino averebbero, *avrebbero*, or *avriano*, they should have.

Second Preterimperfect.

- S. *Che io avessi*, that I had, or I should, would, or could have.
Tu avessi, thou hadst, &c.
Egli avesse, he had, &c.
P. *Noi avessimo*, we had, &c.
Voi aveste, ye had, &c.
Eglino avessero, they had, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Che io abbia avuto*, that I have had.
Tu abbia avuto, thou hast had.
Egli abbia avuto, he hath had.
P. *Noi abbiamo avuto*, we have had.
Voi abbiate avuto, ye have had.
Eglino abbiano avuto, they have had.

First

First Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io avrei avuto*, I had had, or I could, should, or would have had.

Tu avresti avuto, thou hadst had, &c.

Egli avrebbe avuto, he had had, &c.

P. *Noi averemmo avuto*, we had had, &c.

Voi avreste avuto, ye had had, &c.

Eglino avrebbero avuto, they had had, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io avessi avuto*, I had had, or I could, should, or would have had.

Tu avessi avuto, thou hadst had, &c.

Egli avesse avuto, he had had, &c.

P. *Noi avessimo avuto*, we had had, &c.

Voi aveste avuto, ye had had, &c.

Eglino avessero avuto, they had had, &c.

Future.

S. *Io averò avuto*, I shall have had.

Tu averai avuto, thou shalt have had.

Egli averà avuto, he shall have had.

P. *Noi avremo avuto*, we shall have had.

Voi averete avuto, ye shall have had.

Eglino avranno avuto, they shall have had.

Infinitive Mood.

Present. *Avere*, to have.

Preterperfect. *Avere avuto*, to have had.

Participles.

Participles.

Present. *Avendo*, having.

Coll' avere,

Con avere,

In avere,

Nell' avere,

} In having, or by having.

Preterperfect. *Avendo avuto*, having had.

The Supine, or Participle Passive.

Avuto, avuta, avuti, avute, had.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, essere, to be.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io sono*, I am.

Tu sei, thou art.

Egli è, he is.

P. *Noi siamo*, we are.

Voi sete, or siete, ye are.

Eglino sono, they are.

Preterimperfect.

S. *Io ero*, I was.

Tu eri, thou wast.

Egli era, he was.

P. *Noi eràmo, or eravamo*, we were.

Voi eràte, or eravate, ye were.

Eglino erano, they were.

Preter-

Preterperfect Definite.

- S. *Io fui*, I was.
Tu fosti, thou wast.
Egli fu, he was.
P. *Noi fummo*, we were.
Voi foste, ye were.
Eglino furono, they were.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io sono stato*, I have been.
Tu sei stato, thou hast been.
Egli è stato, he has been.
P. *Noi siamo stati*, we have been.
Voi siete, or *sete stati*, ye have been.
Eglino sono stati, they have been.

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io ero stato*, I had been.
Tu eri stato, thou hadst been.
Egli era stato, he had been.
P. *Noi eramo stati*, we had been.
Voi erate stati, ye had been.
Eglino erano stati, they had been.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io fui stato*, I had been.
Tu fosti stato, thou hadst been.
Egli fu stato, he had been.
P. *Noi fummo stati*, we had been.
Voi foste stati, ye had been.
Eglino furono stati, they had been.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io farò*, I shall, or will be.
Tu sarai, thou shalt, or wilt be.
Egli sarà, he shall, or will be.
P. *Noi saremo*, we shall, or will be.
Voi sarete, ye shall, or will be.
Eglino saranno, they shall, or will be.

Imperative.

- S. *Sii*, or *sia tu*, be thou.
Sia egli, let him be.
P. *Siamo noi*, let us be.
Siate, or *siete voi*, be ye.
Siano, or *sino eglino*, let them be.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io sia*, that I be.
Tu sia, or *sii*, thou be.
Egli sia, he be.
P. *Noi siamo*, we be.
Voi siate, ye be.
Eglino siano, or *sino*, they be.

First Preterimperfect

- S. *Io farei*, I should, would, or could be.
Tu faresti, thou shouldst be, &c.
Egli farebbe, or *faria*, he should be, &c.
P. *Noi saremmo*, we should be, &c.
Voi fareste, ye should be, &c.
Eglino farebbero, or *fariano*, they should be, &c.

Second

Second Preterimperfect.

S. *Io fossi*, I were, or I should, would, or could be.

Tu fossi, thou wert, &c.

Egli fosse, he were, &c.

P. *Noi fossimo*, we were, &c.

Voi foste, ye were, &c.

Eglino fossero, they were, &c.

Preterperfect.

S. *Io sia stato*, I have been.

Tu sia stato, thou hast been.

Egli sia stato, he hath been.

P. *Noi siamo stati*, we have been.

Voi siate stati, ye have been.

Eglino siano stati, they have been.

First Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io sarei stato*, I had been, or I should, would, or could have been.

Tu saresti stato, thou hadst been, &c.

Egli sarebbe stato, he had been, &c.

P. *Noi saremmo stati*, we had been, &c.

Voi sareste stati, ye had been, &c.

Eglino sarebbero stati, they had been, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io fossi stato*, I had been, or I could, would, or should have been.

Tu fossi stato, thou hadst been, &c.

Egli fosse stato, he had been, &c.

P. *Noi fossimo stati*, we had been, &c.

Voi foste stati, ye had been, &c.

Eglino fossero stati, they had been, &c.

S. *Io**Tu**Egli*P. *Noi**Voi**Eglino*

Present

Preterp

Stat

Present.

Preterper

Ob

By the
that the
themselves
mistaken;
are both g
say, I have
the Particip
avere; ho

Fu

Future.

- S. *Io sarò stato*, I shall have been.
Tu sarai stato, thou shalt have been.
Egli sarà stato, he shall have been.
P. *Noi saremo stati*, we shall have been.
Voi sarete stati, ye shall have been.
Eglino saranno stati, they shall have been.

Infinitive.

Present. *Essere*, to be.

Preterperfect. *Essere stato*, to have been.

Supine, or Participle Passive.

Stato, stata, stati, state, been.

Participles.

Present. *Essendo*, being.

Coll' essere,
Con essere,
In essere,
Nell' essere,

} In being.

Preterperfect. *Essendo stato*, having been.

Observations upon the Auxiliary Verbs.

By the foregoing Conjugations, you may see, that the Verbs *avere* and *essere* are composed by themselves, in which the *English* are sometimes mistaken; because their Participles *had*, and *been*, are both governed by the Verb to have; so they say, I have had, and I have been; but in *Italian*; the Participle *avuto*, had, is governed by the Verb *avere*; *ho avuto*, I have had; and the Participle

H

stato,

stato, been, by the Verb *essere*; *sono stato*, I have been; through all the Tenses.

Note, also, that *stato* is declinable; so we say *stato*, for the masculine Singular, *stata* for the Feminine, *stati* for the masculine Plural, and *state* for the Feminine.

Although I have spoken at large of the Termination of Tenses in the Section of the Conjugations; yet I thought, that to put all those Terminations together in a Table, would be more clear, and sooner learned; by which it will appear, that from the infinitive Mood of the three Conjugations, one may form all the Tenses of all the Moods, by taking off the three last Letters: Let other Grammarians say what they will, their Way of forming the Terminations of Tenses, is perplexed and intricate; and I dare say, that a Beginner would sooner, and with more Facility, learn their Verbs by getting them by heart, than by studying their Rules.

At the Beginning of the Lines of this Table are the Infinitives, over-against them are the Terminations of each Tense, which are to be joined to the Infinitive, striking off first the three last Letters; ex. *amare*, strike off *are*, it remains *am*, add *o* to it, you'll make *amo*, and so through all the Tenses.

Note, that this Table serves only for the regular Verbs; because for the Irregular, we shall give a Table apart.

Il-

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

am
cred
dorm

are
ere
ire

Indicative Mood Present.

am	are	o	i	a	iamo	ate	ano
cred	ere	o	i	e	iamo	ete	ono
dorm	ire	o	i	e	iamo	ite	ono

Preterimperfect.

am	are	avo	avi	ava	avàmo	avàte	àvano
cred	ere	evo	evi	eva	evàmo	evàte	èvano
dorm	ire	ivo	ivi	iva	ivàmo	ivàte	ìvano

Preterperfect Definite.

am	are	ai	asti	ò	ammo	aste	arono
cred	ere	ei	esti	è	emmo	este	erono
dorm	ire	ii	isti	ì	immo	iste	irono

Future.

am	are	erò	erai	erà	eremo	erete	eranno
cred	ere	erò	erai	erà	eremo	erete	eranno
dorm	ire	irò	irai	irà	iremo	irete	iranno

Imperative Mood.

am	are		a	i	iamo	ate	ino
cred	ere		i	a	iamo	ete	ano
dorm	ire		i	a	iamo	ite	ano

Conjunctive Mood Present.

am	are	i	i	i	iamo	iate	ino
cred	ere	a	a	a	iamo	iate	ano
dorm	ire	a	a	a	iamo	iate	ano

First Preterimperfect.

am	are	erei	eresti	erebbe	eremmo	ereste	erebbero
cred	ere	erei	eresti	erebbe	eremmo	ereste	erebbero
dorm	ire	irei	iresti	irebbe	iremmo	ireste	irebbero

Second Preterimperfect.

am	are	assi	assi	asse	assimo	aste	assero
cred	ere	essi	essi	esse	essimo	este	essero
dorm	ire	issi	issi	isse	issimo	iste	issero

Participle.

am	are	ato
cred	ere	uto
dorm	ire	ito

Gerund.

am	are	ando
cred	ere	endo
dorm	ire	endo

Variations of the Auxiliary Verb, avere, to have; which are used only in Poetry.

Haggio, } instead of *ho*, I have.
Habbo, }

Have, } instead of *ha*, he or she has.
Hae, }

Havite, for *havete*, ye have.

Havei, for *havevi*, thou hadst.

Hei, for *hebbi*, I had.

Hebbon, for *bebbero*, they had.

Haraggio, for *havrò*, I shall have.

Haja, for *habbia*, that he or she have.

Haggiate, for *habbiate*, that ye have.

Haveffi, for *haveste*, that he had, or should have.

Haveffin, for *haveffero*, that they had, or should have.

Haria, for *averia*, or *haverebbe*, he or she should have.

Hariano, for *havriano*, or *haverebbero*, they should have.

Of the Verb essere, to be.

So, for *sono*, I am.

Ene, }
Ee, } for *è*, he or she is.
Este, }
Eve, }

Semo, for *fiamo*, we are.

Enno, for *sono*, they are.

Fue, for *fu*, he or she was.

Fossin, for *fossero*, that they were.

Fora, for *sarei*, or *sarebbe*, I or he should be.

Saria, for *sarei*, or *sarebbe*, I or he should be.

Sariano, for *sarebbero*, they should be.

Sendo,

Sendo,
Suto,

Alt
 ing o
 Conju
 to giv
 I be
 gation
 lar, wh
 particu

The

The

S. *Io a*
Tu a
Egli
 P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

S. *Io a*
Tu a
Egli
 P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Sendo, for *essendo*, being.

Suto, for *stato*, been.

Although, what we have said about the forming of Verbs, might suffice, for to know all the Conjugations; however, I have thought it useful to give here some Examples.

I begin by the regular Verbs, of each Conjugation; we shall speak afterwards of the Irregular, where I shall give the Remarks, of each one in particular, that I thought the most proper.

The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.

The first Conjugation in are; as amare, to love.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io amo*, I love.

Tu ami, thou lovest.

Egli ama, he loveth.

P. *Noi amiamo*, we love.

Voi amate, ye love.

Eglino amano, they love.

Preterimperfect.

S. *Io amavo*, I loved, or did love.

Tu amavi, thou lovedst, &c.

Egli amava, he loved, &c.

P. *Noi amavamo*, we loved, &c.

Voi amavate, ye loved, &c.

Eglino amavano, they loved, &c.

Preterperfect Definite.

- S. *Io amai*, I loved, or did love.
Tu amasti, thou lovedst, &c.
Egli amò, he loved, &c.
- P. *Noi amammo*, we loved, &c.
Voi amaste, ye loved, &c.
Eglino amarono, they loved, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io ho amato*, I have loved.
Tu hai amato, thou hast loved.
Egli ha amato, he has loved.
- P. *Noi abbiamo amato*, we have loved.
Voi avete amato, ye have loved.
Eglino hanno amato, they have loved.

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avevo amato*, I had loved.
Tu avevi amato, thou hadst loved.
Egli aveva amato, he had loved.
- P. *Noi avevamo amato*, we had loved.
Voi avevate amato, ye had loved.
Eglino avevano amato, they had loved.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io ebbi amato*, I had loved.
Tu avesti amato, thou hadst loved.
Egli ebbe amato, he had loved.
- P. *Noi avemmo amato*, we had loved.
Voi aveste amato, ye had loved.
Eglino ebbero amato, they had loved.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io amerò*, I shall, or will love.
Tu amerai, thou shalt, or wilt love.
Egli amerà, he shall, or will love.
P. *Noi ameremo*, we shall, or will love.
Voi amerete, ye shall, or will love.
Eglino ameranno, they shall, or will love.

Imperative.

- S. *Ama*, love thou.
Ami, let him love.
P. *Amiamo*, let us love.
Amate, love ye.
Amino, let them love.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io ami*, that I love, or may love.
Che tu ami, that thou lovest, or may'st love.
Che egli ami, that he loveth, or may love.
P. *Che noi amiamo*, that we love, or may love.
Che voi amiate, that ye love, or may love.
Che eglino amino, that they love, or may love.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io amerei*, I should, would, or could love.
Tu amaresti, thou should'st, &c. love.
Egli amerebbe, he should, &c. love.
P. *Noi ameremmo*, we should, &c. love.
Voi amereste, ye should, &c. love.
Eglino amerebbero, they should, &c. love.

Second Imperfect.

S. *Io amassi*, I loved, or I should, would, or could love.

Tu amassi, thou lovedst, &c.

Egli amasse, he loved, &c.

P. *Noi amassimo*, we loved, &c.

Voi amaste, ye loved, &c.

Eglino amassero, they loved, &c.

Preterperfect.

S. *Io abbia amato*, I have loved.

Tu abbia amato, thou hast loved.

Egli abbia amato, he hath loved.

P. *Noi abbiamo amato*, we have loved.

Voi abbiate amato, ye have loved.

Eglino abbiano amato, they have loved.

First Pluperfect.

S. *Io avrei amato*, I had loved, or I should, would, or could have loved.

Tu avresti amato, thou hadst loved, &c.

Egli avrebbe amato, he had loved, &c.

P. *Noi averemmo amato*, we had loved, &c.

Voi avreste amato, ye had loved, &c.

Eglino avrebbero amato, they had loved, &c.

Second Pluperfect.

S. *Io avessi amato*, I had loved, or I should, would, or could have loved.

Tu avessi amato, thou hadst loved, &c.

Egli avesse amato, he had loved, &c.

P. *Noi avessimo amato*, we had loved, &c.

Voi aveste amato, ye had loved, &c.

Eglino avessero amato, they had loved, &c.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io averò amato*, I shall have loved.
Tu averai amato, thou shalt have loved.
Egli averà amato, he shall have loved.
P. *Noi averemo amato*, we shall have loved.
Voi averete amato, ye shall have loved.
Eglino averanno amato, they shall have loved.

Infinitive Present. *Amare*, to love.

Preterperfect. *Avere amato*, to have loved.

Participle. *Amato*, loved.

Gerund. *Amando*, loving.

Coll' amare,
Con amare,
In amare,
Nell' amare,
Avendo amato, } in loving.
 having loved.

The Second Conjugation in ere; as credere, to believe.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io credo*, I believe.
Tu credi, thou believest.
Egli crede, he believeth.
P. *Noi crediamo*, we believe.
Voi credete, ye believe.
Eglino credono, they believe.

Preterimperfect.

- S. *Io credevo*, I believed, or I did believe.
Tu credevi, thou believedst, &c.
Egli credeva, he believed, &c.
P. *Noi credevamo*, we believed, &c.
Voi credevate, ye believed, &c.
Eglino credevano, they believed, &c.

Pre-

Preterperfect Definite.

- S. *Io credei, or credetti, I believed, or did believe.*
Tu credesti, thou believedst, &c.
Egli credè, he believed, &c.
- P. *Noi credemmo, we believed, &c.*
Voi credeste, ye believed, &c.
Eglino credarono, or credettero, they believed, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io ho creduto, I have believed.*
Tu hai creduto, thou hast believed.
Egli ha creduto, he hath believed.
- P. *Noi abbiamo creduto, we have believed.*
Voi avete creduto, ye have believed.
Eglino hanno creduto, they have believed.

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avevo creduto, I had believed,*
Tu avevi creduto, thou hadst believed.
Egli aveva creduto, he had believed.
- P. *Noi avevamo creduto, we had believed.*
Voi avevate creduto, ye had believed.
Eglino avevano creduto, they had believed.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io ebbi creduto, I had believed.*
Tu avesti creduto, thou hadst believed.
Egli ebbe creduto, he had believed.
- P. *Noi avemmo creduto, we had believed.*
Voi aveste creduto, ye had believed.
Eglino ebbero creduto, they had believed.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io crederò*, I shall, or will believe.
Tu crederai, thou shalt, or wilt believe.
Egli crederà, he shall, or will believe.
- P. *Noi crederemo*, we shall, or will believe.
Voi crederete, ye shall, or will believe.
Eglino crederanno, they shall, or will believe.

Imperative.

- S. *Credi*, believe thou.
Creda, let him believe.
- P. *Crediamo*, let us believe.
Credete, believe ye.
Credano, let them believe.

Conjunctive.

- S. *Che io creda*, that I believe, or may believe.
Che tu creda, that thou believest, &c.
Che egli creda, that he believeth, &c.
- P. *Che noi crediamo*, that we believe, &c.
Che voi crediate, that ye believe, &c.
Che eglino credano, that they believe, &c.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io crederei*, I should, would, or could believe.
Tu credereſti, thou ſhould'ſt believe, &c.
Egli crederebbe, or *credereſſe*, he ſhould believe, &c.
- P. *Noi crederemmo*, we ſhould believe, &c.
Voi credereste, ye ſhould believe, &c.
Eglino crederebbero, or *credereſſero*, they ſhould believe, &c.

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io credessi*, I believed, or should, would, or could believe.
Tu credessi, thou believedst, &c.
Egli credesse, he believed, &c.
P. *Noi credessimo*, we believed, &c.
Voi credeste, ye believed, &c.
Eglino credessero, they believed, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io abbia creduto*, I have believed.
Tu abbia creduto, thou hast believed.
Egli abbia creduto, he hath believed.
P. *Noi abbiamo creduto*, we have believed.
Voi abbiate creduto, ye have believed.
Eglino abbiano creduto, they have believed.

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avrei creduto*, I had believed, or should, would, or could have believed.
Tu avresti creduto, thou hadst believed, &c.
Egli avrebbe creduto, he had believed, &c.
P. *Noi avremmo creduto*, we had believed, &c.
Voi avreste creduto, ye had believed, &c.
Eglino avrebbero creduto, they had believed, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avrei creduto*, I had believed, or I should have believed.
Tu avessi creduto, thou hadst believed, &c.
Egli avesse creduto, he had believed, &c.
P. *Noi avessimo creduto*, we had believed, &c.
Voi aveste creduto, ye had believed, &c.
Eglino avessero creduto, they had believed, &c.

Future.

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Eglino

Infinitive
Preterperfect
Gerundive
Participle

The

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Eglino

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Eglino

Future.

- S. *Io averò creduto*, I shall have believed.
Tu averai creduto, thou shalt have believed.
Egli averà creduto, he shall have believed.
P. *Noi averemo creduto*, we shall have believed.
Voi averete creduto, ye shall have believed.
Eglino averanno creduto, they shall have believed.

Infinitive Present. *Credere*, to believe.

Preterperfect. *Avere creduto*, to have believed.

Gerund. *Credendo*, believing.

Participle. *Creduto*, believed.

The third Conjugation in ire; as dormire, to sleep.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io dormo*, I sleep.
Tu dormi, thou sleepest.
Egli dorme, he sleepeth.
P. *Noi dormiamo*, we sleep.
Voi dormite, ye sleep.
Eglino dormono, they sleep.

Preterimperfect.

- S. *Io dormivo*, I slept, or did sleep.
Tu dormivi, thou sleepest, &c.
Egli dormiva, he slept, &c.
P. *Noi dormivamo*, we slept, &c.
Voi dormivate, ye slept, &c.
Eglino dormivano, they slept, &c.

Pre-

Preterperfect Definite.

- S. *Io dormii*, I slept, or I did sleep.
Tu dormisti, thou sleepest, &c.
Egli dormì, he slept, &c.
- P. *Noi dormimmo*, we slept, &c.
Voi dormiste, ye slept, &c.
Eglino dormirono, they slept, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io ho dormito*, I have slept.
Tu hai dormito, thou hast slept.
Egli ha dormito, he hath slept.
- P. *Noi abbiamo dormito*, we have slept.
Voi avete dormito, ye have slept.
Eglino hanno dormito, they have slept.

First Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io avevo dormito*, I had slept.
Tu avevi dormito, thou hadst slept.
Egli aveva dormito, he had slept.
- P. *Noi avevamo dormito*, we had slept.
Voi avevate dormito, ye had slept.
Eglino avevano dormito, they had slept.

Second Preterpluperfect.

- S. *Io ebbi dormito*, I had slept.
Tu avesti dormito, thou hadst slept.
Egli ebbe dormito, he had slept.
- P. *Noi avemmo dormito*, we had slept.
Voi avevate dormito, ye had slept.
Eglino ebbero dormito, they had slept.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io dormirò*, I shall, or will sleep.
Tu dormirai, thou shalt, or wilt sleep.
Egli dormirà, he shall, or will sleep.
P. *Noi dormiremo*, we shall, or will sleep.
Voi dormirete, ye shall, or will sleep.
Eglino dormiranno, they shall, or will sleep.

Imperative.

- S. *Dormi*, sleep thou.
Dorma, let him sleep.
P. *Dormiamo*, let us sleep.
Dormite, sleep ye.
Dormano, let them sleep.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io dorma*, that I sleep, or I may sleep.
Che tu dorma, that thou sleepest, &c.
Che egli dorma, that he sleepeth, &c.
P. *Che noi dormiamo*, that we sleep, &c.
Che voi dormiate, that ye sleep, &c.
Che eglino dormano, that they sleep.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io dormirei*, I should, would, or could sleep.
Tu dormiresti, thou should'st, &c. sleep.
Egli dormirebbe, he should, &c. sleep.
P. *Noi dormiremmo*, we should, &c. sleep.
Voi dormireste, ye should, &c. sleep.
Eglino dormirebbero, they should, &c. sleep.

Second Imperfect.

S. *Io dormissi*, I slept, or I should, would, or could sleep.

Tu dormissi, thou sleepest, &c.

Egli dormisse, he slept, &c.

P. *Noi dormissimo*, we slept, &c.

Voi dormiste, ye slept, &c.

Eglino dormissero, they slept, &c.

Preterperfect.

S. *Io abbia dormito*, I have slept.

Tu abbia dormito, thou hast slept.

Egli abbia dormito, he hath slept.

P. *Noi abbiamo dormito*, we have slept.

Voi abbiate dormito, ye have slept.

Eglino abbiano dormito, they have slept.

First Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io avrei dormito*, I had slept, or I should, would, or could have slept.

Tu avresti dormito, thou hadst slept, &c.

Egli avrebbe dormito, he had slept, &c.

P. *Noi avremmo dormito*, we had slept, &c.

Voi avreste dormito, ye had slept, &c.

Eglino avrebbero dormito, they had slept, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

S. *Io avessi dormito*, I had slept, or I should, would, or could have slept.

Tu avessi dormito, thou hadst slept, &c.

Egli avesse dormito, he had slept, &c.

P. *Noi avessimo dormito*, we had slept, &c.

Voi aveste dormito, ye had slept, &c.

Eglino avessero dormito, they had slept, &c.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io averò dormito*, I shall have slept.
Tu averai dormito, thou shalt have slept.
Egli averà dormito, he shall have slept.
P. *Noi averemo dormito*, we shall have slept.
Voi averete dormito, ye shall have slept.
Eglino averanno dormito, they shall have slept.

Infinitive Present. *Dormire*, to sleep.

Preterpluperfect. *Avere dormito*, to have slept.

Gerund. *Dormendo*, sleeping.

Participle, *Dormito*, slept.

Of the Conjugation of Passive Verbs.

The Conjugation of Passive Verbs is very easy, and consists (both in *Italian* and *English*) only in the joining the Participle Passive of any Verb to be conjugated, to the Auxiliary Verb *essere*, to be, through all its Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons. But you must observe, that in *Italian*, the Participle varies according to the Difference of Gender and Number. Ex.

Essere amato, to be loved.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io sono amato*, I am loved.
Tu sei amato, thou art loved.
Egli è amato, he is loved.
P. *Noi siamo amati*, we are loved.
Voi siete amati, ye are loved.
Eglino sono amati, they are loved.

I

Imperfect.

Imperfect. *Io ero amato, &c.*

Perfect Definite. *Io fui amato, &c.* } I was loved.

Preterperfect. *Io sono stato amato, &c.* I have been loved.

First Pluper. *Io ero stato amato, &c.* } I had been

Second Pluper. *Io fui stato amato, &c.* } loved.

Future. *Io sarò amato, &c.* I shall be loved.

After the same Manner are conjugated the Imperative, Conjunctive, and Infinitive Moods of the first Conjugation.

Note, that Verbs which end in *care*, or *gare*, take an *b* after *c* and *g*, in those Tenses where *c* and *g* come before *e* or *i*; that is to say, in the Present of the Indicative Mood, in the Future, in the Imperative, and Conjunctive Moods, and in the first Imperfect of the Conjunctive Mood, of which I shall give here two Examples.

Peccare, to sin.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io pecco*, I sin.

Tu pecchi, thou sinnest.

Egli pecca, he sinneth.

P. *Noi pecciamo*, we sin.

Voi peccate, ye sin.

Eglino peccano, they sin.

Future.

S. *Io peccherò*, I shall sin.

Tu peccherai, thou shalt sin.

Egli peccherà, he shall sin.

P. *Noi peccheremo*, we shall sin.

Voi peccherete, ye shall sin.

Eglino peccheranno, they shall sin.

S. *Pe*
Pe
P. *Pe*
Pe
Pe

S. *Che*
Che
Che
P. *Che*
Che
Che

S. *Io pe*
Tu p
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi p
Eglino

S. *Io pag*
Tu pag
Egli p
P. *Noi p*
Voi p
Eglino

Im

Imperative.

- S. *Pecca*, fin thou.
Pecchi, let him fin.
P. *Pecchiamo*, let us fin.
Peccate, fin ye.
Pecchino, let them fin.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io pecchi*, that I fin.
Che tu pecchi, that thou finnest.
Che egli pecchi, that he finneth.
P. *Che noi pecchiamo*, that we fin.
Che voi pecchiate, that ye fin.
Che eglino pecchino, that they fin.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io peccherei*, I should fin.
Tu peccheresti, thou shouldest fin.
Egli peccherebbe, he should fin.
P. *Noi peccheremmo*, we should fin.
Voi pecchereste, ye should fin.
Eglino peccherebbero, they should fin.

Pagare, to pay.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io pago*, I pay.
Tu paghi, thou payest.
Egli paga, he payeth.
P. *Noi paghiamo*, we pay.
Voi pagate, ye pay.
Eglino pagano, they pay.

Future.

- S. *Io pagherò*, I shall pay.
Tu pagherai, thou shalt pay.
Egli pagherà, he shall pay.
- P. *Noi pagheremo*, we shall pay.
Voi pagherete, or *avrete*, ye shall pay.
Eglino pagheranno, they shall pay.

Imperative.

- S. *Paga*, pay thou.
Paghi, let him pay.
- P. *Paghiamo*, let us pay.
Pagate, pay ye.
Paghino, let them pay.

Conjunctive Present

- S. *Che io paghi*, that I pay.
Che tu paghi, that thou payest.
Che egli paghi, that he payeth.
- P. *Che noi paghiamo*, that we pay.
Che voi paghiate, that ye pay.
Che eglino paghino, that they pay.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io pagherei*, I should pay.
Tu pagheresti, thou shouldest pay.
Egli pagherebbe, he should pay.
- P. *Noi pagheremmo*, we should pay.
Voi paghereste, ye should pay.
Eglino pagherebbero, they should pay.

The Conjugation of reflected and reciprocal Verbs.

A reflected Verb, as I have hinted before, is generally nothing but an Active Verb, whose Action returns upon the Agent that produces it; as, *Io mi levo*, I rise; &c. Now this Reflexion of the Action is marked with these personal Pronouns *mi, ti, si*, in the Singular; and *ci, vi, si*, in the Plural; but so, that its compound Tenses are formed with the Auxiliary *essere*.

'Tis true, that some Verbs are always reflected, and these are known by the Infinitive Mood, where the Pronoun *si* goes always after them; as, *pentirsi*, to repent; *dolersi*, to complain.

The following Example will be sufficient to learn how to conjugate any reflected Verb.

Levarsi, to rise.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io mi levo*, I rise.
Tu ti levi, thou risest.
Egli si leva, he riseth.
P. *Noi ci leviamo*, we rise.
Voi vi levate, ye rise.
Eglino si levano, they rise.

Imperfect.

- S. *Io mi levavo*, I did rise.
Tu ti levavi, thou didst rise.
Egli si levava, he did rise.
P. *Noi ci levavamo*, we did rise.
Voi vi levavate, ye did rise.
Eglino si levavano, they did rise.

Perfect Definite.

- S. *Io mi levai*, I rose, or did rise.
Tu ti levasti, thou rosest, &c.
Egli si levò, he rose, &c.
P. *Noi ci levammo*, we rose, &c.
Voi vi levaste, ye rose, &c.
Eglino si levarono, they rose, &c.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io mi sono levato*, I am risen.
Tu ti sei levato, thou art risen.
Egli s'è levato, he is risen.
P. *Noi ci siamo levati*, we are risen.
Voi vi siete levati, ye are risen.
Eglino si sono levati, they are risen.

First Pluperfect.

- S. *Io m'ero levato*, I was risen.
Tu t'eri levato, thou wast risen.
Egli s'era levato, he was risen.
P. *Noi c'eramo levati*, we were risen.
Voi v'erate levati, ye were risen.
Eglino s'erano levati, they were risen.

Second Pluperfect.

- S. *Io mi fui levato*, I was risen.
Tu ti fosti levato, thou wert risen.
Egli si fu levato, he was risen.
P. *Noi ci fummo levati*, we were risen.
Voi vi foste levati, ye were risen.
Eglino si furono levati, they were risen.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io mi leverò*, I shall, or will rise.
Tu ti leverai, thou shalt, or wilt rise.
Egli si leverà, he shall, or will rise.
P. *Noi ci leveremo*, we shall, or will rise.
Voi vi leverete, ye shall, or will rise.
Eglino si leveranno, they shall, or will rise.

Imperative.

- S. *Levati*, rise thou.
Levifi, let him rise.
P. *Leviamoci*, let us rise.
Levatevi, rise ye.
Levinfi, let them rise.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Ch' io mi levi*, that I rise.
Che tu ti levi, that thou risest.
Ch' egli si levi, that he riseth.
P. *Che noi ci leviamo*, that we rise.
Che voi vi leviate, that ye rise.
Ch' eglino si levino, that they rise.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io mi leverei*, I should rise.
Tu ti leveresti, thou shouldest rise.
Egli si leverebbe, he should rise.
P. *Noi ci leveremmo*, we should rise.
Voi vi levereste, ye should rise.
Eglino si leverebbero, they should rise.

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io mi levassi*, I should rise.
Tu ti levassi, thou shouldest rise.
Egli si levasse, he should rise.
- P. *Noi ci levassimo*, we should rise.
Voi vi levaste, ye should rise.
Eglino si levassero, they should rise.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io mi sia levato*, I be risen.
Tu ti sia levato, thou be risen.
Egli si sia levato, he be risen.
- P. *Noi ci siamo levati*, we be risen.
Voi vi siate levati, ye be risen.
Eglino si siano levati, they be risen.

First Pluperfect.

- S. *Io mi sarei levato*, I were risen.
Tu ti saresti levato, thou wert risen.
Egli si sarebbe levato, he were risen.
- P. *Noi ci saremmo levati*, we were risen.
Voi vi sareste levati, ye were risen.
Eglino si sarebbero levati, they were risen.

Second Pluperfect.

- S. *Io mi fossi levato*, I were risen.
Tu ti fossi levato, thou wert risen.
Egli si fosse levato, he were risen.
- P. *Noi ci fossimo levati*, we were risen.
Voi vi foste levati, ye were risen.
Eglino si fossero levati, they were risen.

Future.

S. *Io mi*
Tu ti
Egli
P. *Noi c*
Voi v
Eglino

Infinitive
Preterperfect
Gerund.
Participle

Note,
Participle
Gender
for the m
Feminine
ral; and

Irregular
does not
rent Term
Moods,

Note,
Present,
Future an

Note,
Present of
the Present

The Pre
ed in the
tion: For

Future.

- S. *Io mi farò levato*, I shall be risen.
Tu ti farai levato, thou shalt be risen.
Egli si farà levato, he shall be risen.
P. *Noi ci faremo levati*, we shall be risen.
Voi vi sarete levati, ye shall be risen.
Eglino si saranno levati, they shall be risen.

Infinitive Present. *Levarsi*, to rise.

Preterperfect. *Essersi levato*, to be risen.

Gerund. *Levandosi*, rising.

Participle. *Levatosi*, risen.

Note, that in these Verbs, as in the Passive, the Participle varies according to the Difference of Gender and Number : So we say, *mi sono levato*, for the masculine Singular; *mi sono levata*, for the Feminine; *ci siamo levati*, for the masculine Plural; and *ci siamo levate*, for the Feminine.

Of Verbs Irregular.

Irregular Verbs, are those whose Conjugation does not follow the general Rule, either by different Terminations, or by want of some of their Moods, Tenses, or Persons.

Note, that the Verbs are irregular, some in the Present, some in the Definites and some in the Future and Participle.

Note, also, that when a Verb is irregular in the Present of the Indicative Mood, it is also irregular in the Present of the Imperative and Conjunctive.

The Present of the Conjunctive is easily formed in the Verbs of the second and third Conjugation: For, 'tis a general Rule, that all the first Persons

Persons singular of the Indicative Mood in the Verbs, both regular and irregular, do always terminate in *o* ; by changing this *o* into *a*, you'll form the Present of the Conjunctive ; as, *vedere*, *vedo*, *veda* ; *tenere*, *tengo*, *tenga* ; *dormire*, *dormo*, *dorma* ; *uscire*, *esco*, *esca*.

The first and second Persons Plural of the Present are never irregular.

Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation.

This Conjugation has only four irregular Verbs, viz. *andare*, to go ; *dare*, to give ; *fare*, to do ; *stare*, to be, or stand.

Note, that when the Verbs are irregular in the Present of the Indicative Mood, they are also irregular in the Present of the Imperative and Conjunctive.

1. *Andare*, to go.

This Verb is only irregular in the Present.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io vo*, or *vado*, I go.

Tu vai, thou goest.

Egli va, he goeth.

P. *Noi andiamo*, we go.

Voi andate, ye go.

Eglino vanno, they go.

Imperfect.

S. *Io andavo*, I did go, or I was going.

Tu andavi, thou didst go, &c.

Egli andava, he did go, &c.

P. *Noi andavamo*, we did go, &c.

Voi andavate, ye did go, &c.

Eglino andavano, they did go, &c.

Present

S. *Io a*

Tu a

Egli a

P. *Noi a*

Voi a

Egli a

S. *Io fo*

Tu fo

Egli fo

P. *Noi fo*

Voi fo

Egli fo

S. *Io ero*

Tu ero

Egli ero

P. *Noi ero*

Voi ero

Eglino ero

S. *Io fui*

Tu fui

Egli fui

P. *Noi fui*

Voi fui

Eglino fui

Perfect Definite.

- S. *Io andai*, I went.
Tu andasti, thou wentest.
Egli andò, he went.
- P. *Noi andammo*, we went.
Voi andaste, ye went.
Eglino andarono, they went.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Io sono andato*, I am gone.
Tu sei andato, thou art gone.
Egli è andato, he is gone.
- P. *Noi siamo andati*, we are gone.
Voi sete andati, ye are gone.
Eglino sono andati, they are gone.

First Pluperfect.

- S. *Io ero andato*, I was gone.
Tu eri andato, thou wast gone.
Egli era andato, he was gone.
- P. *Noi eramo andati*, we were gone.
Voi erate andati, ye were gone.
Eglino erano andati, they were gone.

Second Pluperfect.

- S. *Io fui andato*, I was gone.
Tu fosti andato, thou wast gone.
Egli fu andato, he was gone.
- P. *Noi fummo andati*, we were gone.
Voi foste andati, ye were gone.
Eglino furono andati they were gone.

Future.

Future.

- S. *Io anderò*, I shall, or will go.
Tu anderì, thou shalt, or wilt go.
Egli anderà, he shall, or will go.
P. *Noi anderemo*, we shall, or will go.
Voi anderete, ye shall or will go.
Eglino anderanno, they shall, or will go.

Imperative.

- S. *Va*, go thou.
Vada, let him go.
P. *Andiamo*, let us go.
Andate, go ye.
Vadano, let them go.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io vada*, that I go.
Che tu vada, that thou goest.
Che egli vada, that he goeth.
P. *Che noi andiamo*, that we go.
Che voi andiate, that ye go.
Che eglino vadano, that they go.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io anderei*, I should, would, or could go.
Tu andresti, thou should'st, &c. go.
Egli anderebbe, he should, &c. go.
P. *Noi anderemmo*, we should, &c. go.
Voi andreste, ye should, &c. go.
Eglino anderebbero, they should, &c. go.

Second

S. *Che io*
Che tu
Che egli
P. *Che noi*
Che voi
Che eglino

S. *Che io*
Che tu
Che egli
P. *Che noi*
Che voi
Che eglino

S. *Io farei*
gon
Tu farei
Egli farei
P. *Noi farei*
Voi farei
Eglino farei

S. *Che io farei*
Che tu farei
Che egli farei
P. *Che noi farei*
Che voi farei
Che eglino farei

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Che io andassi*, that I should, would, or could go.
Che tu andassi, that thou shouldest, &c. go.
Che egli andasse, that he should, &c. go.
P. *Che noi andassimo*, that we should, &c. go.
Che voi andaste, that ye should, &c. go.
Che eglino andassero, that they should, &c. go.

Preterperfect.

- S. *Che io sia andato*, that I be gone.
Che tu sia andato, that thou be gone.
Che egli sia andato, that he be gone.
P. *Che noi siamo andati*, that we be gone.
Che voi siate andati, that ye be gone.
Che eglino siano andati, that they be gone.

First Pluperfect.

- S. *Io sarei andato*, I should, would, or could be gone.
Tu saresti andato, thou shouldest, &c. be gone,
Egli sarebbe andato, he should, &c. be gone,
P. *Noi saremmo andati*, we should, &c. be gone,
Voi sareste andati, ye should, &c. be gone.
Eglino sarebbero andati, they should, &c. be gone,

Second Pluperfect.

- S. *Che io fossi andato*, that I were gone.
Che tu fossi andato, that thou were gone.
Che egli fosse andato, that he were gone.
P. *Che noi fossimo andati*, that we were gone.
Che voi foste andati, that ye were gone.
Che eglino fossero andati, that they were gone.
Future.

Future.

- S. *Io farò andato*, I shall be gone.
Tu sarai andato, thou shalt be gone.
Egli sarà andato, he shall be gone.
- P. *Noi saremo andati*, we shall be gone.
Voi sarete andati, ye shall be gone.
Eglino saranno andati, they shall be gone.

Infinitive Present.

Andare, to go.

Preterperfect.

Essere andato, to be gone.

Participle.

Andato, gone.

Gerund.

Andando, going.

Essendo andato, being gone.

Conjugation of the Verb Dare, to give.

Indicative Present.

This Verb is irregular in the Present and Definite Tenses.

- S. *Io do*, I give.
Tu dai, thou givest.
Egli dà, he giveth.
- P. *Noi diamo*, we give.
Voi date, ye give.
Eglino danno, they give.

Imperfect.

- S. *Io davo*, I did give.
Tu davi, thou didst give.
Egli dava, he did give.

P. *Noi*

P. *Noi d*
Voi d
Egli

S. *Io die*
Tu de
Egli a

P. *Noi d*
Voi d
Egli

Io ho a

Io hav

Io ebb

S. *Io dar*
Tu dar
Egli d

P. *Noi da*
Voi da
Eglino

S. *Dà, g*
Dia, l
Diamo
Date,
Diano,

- P. *Noi davamo*, we did give.
Voi davate, ye did give.
Eglino davano, they did give.

Perfect Definite.

- S. *Io diedi* or *detti*, I gave.
Tu desti, thou gavest.
Egli diede, *dié* or *dette*, he gave.
P. *Noi demmo*, we gave.
Voi deste, ye gave.
Eglino diedero or *dettero*, they gave.

Preterperfect.

Io ho dato, I have given.

First Pluperfect.

Io havevo dato, I had given.

Second Pluperfect.

Io ebbi dato, I had given.

Future.

- S. *Io darò*, I shall or will give.
Tu darai, thou shalt or wilt give.
Egli darà, he shall or will give.
P. *Noi daremo*, we shall or will give.
Voi darete, ye shall or will give.
Eglino daranno, they shall or will give.

Imperative.

- S. *Dà*, give thou.
Dia, let him give.
P. *Diamo*, let us give.
Date, give ye.
Diano, let them give.

Conjunctive

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io dia*, that I give or may give.
Che tu dia, that thou givest, &c.
Che egli dia, that he giveth, &c.
P. *Che noi diamo*, that we give, &c.
Che voi diate, that ye give, &c.
Che eglino diano, that they give, &c.

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io dare*, I should, would, or could give,
Tu daresti, thou shouldest, &c. give,
Egli darebbe, he should, &c. give,
P. *Noi daremmo*, we should, &c. give,
Voi darestes, ye should, &c. give,
Eglino darebbero, they should, &c. give.

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Che io dessi*, that I should, would, or could give.
Che tu dessi, that thou shouldst, &c. give,
Che egli desse, that he should, &c. give,
P. *Che noi dessimo*, that we should, &c. give,
Che voi desste, that ye should, &c. give,
Che eglino dessero, that they should, &c. give,

Preterperfect. *Io abbia dato*, I have given.

First Pluperfect. *Io averei dato*, I should or would have given.

Second Pluperfect. *Io avessi dato*, I had given, &c.

Future. *Quando io averò dato*, when I have given.

Infinitive Present. *Dare*, to give.

Preterperfect. *Avere dato*, to have given.

Participle. *Dato*, given.

Gerund

Gerund
AvendoThis
tive TeS. *Io fo*
Tu fa
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi fa
*Eglino*S. *Io fac*
Tu fac
Egli fa
P. *Noi fa*
Voi fa
*Eglino*S. *Jo feci*
Tu face
Egli fec
P. *Noi fac*
Voi face
Eglino f
Preterperfect
First Plupe
Second Plu
Future. *Io*

Gerund. *Dando*, given.

Avendo dato, having given.

Conjugation of the Verb Fare, to do.

This Verb is irregular in the present, and definitive Tenses, and in the Participle.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io fo*, I do, or I make.

Tu fai, thou doest.

Egli fa, he doeth.

P. *Noi facciamo*, we do.

Voi fate, ye do.

Eglino fanno, they do.

Imperfect.

S. *Io facevo*, I was doing.

Tu facevi, thou wast doing.

Egli faceva, he was doing

P. *Noi facevamo*, we were doing.

Voi facevate, ye were doing.

Eglino facevano, they were doing.

Perfect Definite.

S. *Io feci*, I did.

Tu facesti, thou didst.

Egli fece, he did.

P. *Noi facemmo*, we did.

Voi faceste, ye did.

Eglino fecero, they did.

Preterperfect. S. *Io ho fatto*, I have done, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io avevo fatto*, I had done, &c.

Second Pluperfect. *Io ebbi fatto*, I had done, &c.

Future. *Io farò*, I shall, or will do, &c.

K

Imperative.

Imperative.

- S. *Fa*, do thou.
Faccia, let him do.
P. *Facciamo*, let us do.
Fate, do ye.
Facciano, let them do.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io faccia*, that I may do.
Che tu faccia, that thou may'st do.
Che egli faccia, that he may do.
P. *Che noi facciamo*, that we may do.
Che voi facciate, that ye may do.
Che eglino facciano, that they may do.

First Imperfect. *Io farei*, &c. I should, would, or could do, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io faceffi*, &c. I should, or might do, &c.

Preterperfect. *Che io abbia fatto*, &c. that I have done, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io averei fatto*, &c. I should have done, &c.

Second Pluperfect. *Io avessi fatto*, &c. I had done, &c.

Future. *Io averò fatto*, &c. I shall have done, &c.

Infinitive Present. *Fare*, to do, or to make.

Preterperfect. *Avere fatto*, to have done.

Participle. *Fatto*, done, or made.

Gerund. *Facendo*, doing, or making.

Avendo fatto, having done, or made.

Conjugation

Conju

S. *Io sto*Tu *sti*Egli *sti*P. *Noi*Voi *sti*Eglino *sti*

Imperfect

S. *Io stetti*Tu *stetti*Egli *stetti*P. *Noi stetti*Voi *stetti*Eglino *stetti*

Preterperfect

hav

First Plupe

I ha

Second Plu

was

Future. *Io*S. *Stia*, live*Stia*, letP. *Stiamo*, l*State*, live*Stiano*, let

Conjugation of the Verb Stare, to live, or to be.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io sto*, I live, or I am, &c.
Tu stai, thou livest, &c.
Egli stai, he liveth, &c.
P. *Noi stiamo*, we live, &c.
Voi state, ye live, &c.
Eglino stanno, they live, &c.

Imperfect. *Io stavo*, &c. I lived, or did live, &c.

Perfect Definite.

- S. *Io stetti*, I lived, or I was.
Tu festi, thou livedst, &c.
Egli stette, he lived, &c.
P. *Noi stemmo*, we lived, &c.
Voi steste, ye lived, &c.
Eglino stettero, they lived, &c.

Preterperfect. *Io sono stato*, &c. I have lived, or I have been, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io ero stato*, &c. I had lived, or I had been, &c.

Second Pluperfect. *Io fui stato* &c. I lived, or I was, &c.

Future. *Io starò*, &c. I shall live, or I shall be, &c.

Imperative.

- S. *Sta*, live thou, or be thou.
Stia, let him live, or let him be.
P. *Stiamo*, let us live, or let us be.
State, live ye, or be ye.
Stiano, let them live, or let them be.

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che io stia*, that I live, or that I be.

Che tu stia, that thou livest, &c.

Che egli stia, that he liveth, &c.

P. *Che noi stiamo*, that we live, &c.

Che voi siate, that ye live, &c.

Che eglino stiano, that they live, &c.

First Imperfect. *Io starei*, &c. I should live, or I should be, &c.

Second Imperfect.

S. *Io stessi*, I lived, or I was.

Tu stessi, thou livedst, &c.

Egli stesse, &c. he lived, &c.

P. *Noi stessimo*, we lived, &c.

Voi steste, ye lived, &c.

Eglino stessero, they lived, &c.

Preterpluperfect. *Che io sia stato*, &c. that I have lived, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io sarei stato*, &c. I should have lived, or I should have been, &c.

Second Pluperfect. *Io fossi stato*, &c. I had lived, or I had been, &c.

Future. *Io sarò stato*, &c. I shall have lived, or I shall have been, &c.

Infinitive. *Stare*, to live, or to be.

Participle Present. *Stato*, lived, or been.

Preterperfect. *Essere stato*, to have lived, or to have been.

Gerund. *Stando*, living, or being.

Essendo stato, having lived, or having been.

Observation

Obser

In t
present

dai, fan

danno,

in the o

The

therefor

derò, fer

derò.

Stare

conjunctive,

The t

end in a

stia, vad

first Con

Althou

fare, to u

counterfe

among th

they are

since they

the Verb

which is i

which Sy

Facere M

Conjugati

or *fa*, a

The Pa

said; for i

first Conju

atto.

Antientl

Verb; say

Observations upon the four irregular Verbs in are.

In these four Verbs, the second Person of the present of the Indicative Mood terminates in *ai*, *dai*, *fai*, *vai*, *stai*; and the third Plural in *anno*, *danno*, *fanno*, *vanno*, *stanno*; and not in *ano*, as in the other Verbs of the first Conjugation.

The future doth not terminate in *erò*, but in *arò*; therefore you must say *darò*, *farò*, *starò*; and not *derò*, *ferò*, *sterò*; except *andare*, that makes *anderò*.

Stare and *Dare* make *deffi*, and *stessi*, in the Con-junctive, and not *dassi*, and *stassi*.

The third Persons singular of these four Verbs end in *a*, in the Present of the Con-junctive, *dia*, *sia*, *vada*, *faccia*; whereas the other Verbs of the first Conjugation do end in *i*.

Although the Verb *Fare*, and its Compounds *Dif-fare*, to undo; *ri-fare*, to do again; *contra-fare*, to counterfeit; *sopra-fare*, to outdo, &c. are placed among the irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, they are nevertheless of the second Conjugation; since they are nothing else but an Abbreviation of the Verb *Facere*: one may see it by the Syllable *ce*, which is in almost all its Tenses; as *facevo*, *faceffi*; which Syllables are taken out of the *Latin* Verb *Facere*. Moreover, if they were of the first Conjugation, the Imperfect ought to be *faciarva*, or *fava*, and not *faceva*.

The Participle *fatto*, confirms still what I have said; for it is certain that all the Participles of the first Conjugation are terminated in *ato*, and not in *atto*.

Antiently the Verb *Andare* was used as a regular Verb; saying, *io ando*, *tu andi*, &c.

Or vo' che sappi innanzi, che tu andi. Dante. Inf. 4.

But in Process of Time, these Tenses are grown obsolete; and we have taken them of the *Latin* Verb *Vadere*.

We find very seldom in Prose *vado*, instead of *vo*; but 'tis very frequent in Verse.

Note, That after the Verb *Andare*, and other Verbs of Motion, we always put the Particle *a* or *ad* before an Infinitive; ex. *andate a vedere*, go to see; *andiamo a dormire*, let us go to sleep. *Andare*, before some Gerunds, expresses the Action with more Grace, and with more Strength, than the Verb of the Gerund would; ex. *Io vo cercando*, *io vo cogliendo*, I am looking, I am gathering, are more emphatick than *Io cerco*, *io coglio*, I look for, I gather. We use the Verb *stare*, to mark an Action of Rest, by putting the Verb that follows in the Gerund, or in the Infinitive, with the Particles *a* or *ad*; ex. *scrivo, sto scrivendo*, or *sto a scrivere*, I write, or I am writing; *dorme, sta dormendo*, or *sta a dormire*, he sleeps, or he is sleeping.

Of the irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

The greatest part of the Verbs of the Second Conjugation are irregular; therefore I think that it is better to learn them by Practice, than to get them by heart; since I have taken a particular Care to mark them in my Dictionary, and in which Tenses they are irregular: However, I shall produce here some that are more frequent in Conversation.

Note, That the greatest Difficulty of these Verbs consists in the Definite Tense, and in the Participle, since all the other Tenses are regular;

and

and not
that th
their T
themsel
Persons.
third Pl
and seco
they are
to see,
makes v
saw, *vea*
they saw
that *vid*
desi, *vea*
I pleased,
sed, are i
mo, we p
The same
regular V
the Defin
Note al
have the
long; as
tion short

There a
the Infinit

Infinitive.

Cadere, to f
Calere, to c
Dovere, to o
Capere, to h
Dolere, to pa
Giacere, to li
Godere, to re
Avere, to ha
Parere, to see

and notwithstanding they are irregular, insomuch that they have no Affinity one with another in their Terminations, yet they are regular among themselves, since their Irregularity lies in the same Persons, viz. in the first, third Singular, and third Plural; the second Person singular, the first and second plural are always regular; that is to say, they are formed of the infinitive Mood; ex. *vedere*, to see, is irregular in the Definite Tense, and makes *viddi*, I saw, *vedesti*, thou sawest, *vidde*, he saw, *vedemmo*, we saw, *vedeste*, ye saw, *viddero*, they saw. By the foregoing Example you may see, that *viddi*, *vidde*, *viddero*, are irregular, and *vedesti*, *vedemmo*, and *vedeste*, are regular; *piacqui*, I pleased, *piacque*, he pleased, *piacquero*, they pleased, are irregular; *piacesti*, thou pleased'st, *piacemmo*, we pleased, *piaceste*, ye pleased, are regular: The same Rule is to be observed for the other irregular Verbs, that have different Terminations in the Definite Tense.

Note also, That of the irregular Verbs in *ere*, Part have the Penultima, or the last Syllable but one, long; as *cadere*, to fall; Part have their Termination short; as *scrivere*, to write.

There are only Two and twenty Verbs that have the Infinitive in *ere* long, viz. these following.

Infinitive.	Pres.	Defin.	Part.
<i>Cadere</i> , to fall.	cado,	caddi,	caduto.
<i>Calere</i> , to care.	an impersonal Verb.		
<i>Dovere</i> , to owe.	devo,	dovei	dovuto
<i>Capere</i> , to hold.	a Verb obsolete.		
<i>Dolere</i> , to pain.	doglio,	dolſi,	doluto.
<i>Giacere</i> , to lie down.	giaccio,	giacqui,	giaciuto.
<i>Godere</i> , to rejoice	godo,	godei,	goduto.
<i>Avere</i> , to have.	ho,	ebbi,	avuto.
<i>Parere</i> , to seem.	pajò,	parvi,	parſo.

<i>Piacere</i> , to please.	piaccio,	piacqui,	piaciuto.
<i>Persuadere</i> , to persuade.	persuado,	persuasi,	persuasato.
<i>Potere</i> , to be able.	posso,	potei,	potuto.
<i>Rimanere</i> , to remain.	rimango,	rimasi,	rimaso.
<i>Sapere</i> , to know.	so,	seppi,	saputo.
<i>Sedere</i> , to sit.	sedo,	sedei,	seduto.
<i>Solere</i> , to be wont.	foglio,		solito.
<i>Tacere</i> , to be silent.	taccio,	tacqui,	taciuto.
<i>Tenere</i> , to hold.	tengo,	tenni,	tenuto.
<i>Temere</i> , to fear.	temo,	temei,	temuto.
<i>Valere</i> , to signify.	vaglio,	valsi,	valuto.
<i>Vedere</i> , to see.	vedo,	viddi,	veduto.
<i>Volere</i> , to be willing.	voglio,	volli,	voluto.

Of these two and twenty Verbs, three are regular, viz. *temere*, *godere*, *sedere*, and are conjugated like *credere*.

The others, some are irregular in the Present, some in the Definite and Future, and some in the Participle.

Of the Conjugation of Verbs in ere long.

Piacere, to please.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io piaccio*. I please.

Tu piaci, thou pleasest.

Egli piace, he pleaseth.

P. *Noi piacciamo*, we please.

Voi piacete, ye please.

Eglino piacciono, they please.

Imperfect. *Io piacevo*, &c. I pleased, or I did please, &c.

Definite

S. *Io piacqui*, I pleased.

Tu piacesti, thou pleasedst.

Egli piacque, he pleased.

P. No

P. No
Vo
Eg

Preter
First I
Second
Future

S. Pia
Pia
P. Pia
Pia
Pia

S. Che
Che
Che
P. Che
Che
Che

First I
Second
Preterp
First P
Second
Future
Infinit
Preterp
Particip
Gerund
After
lie down

- P. *Noi piacemmo*, we pleased.
Voi piaceste, ye pleased.
Eglino piacquero, they pleased.

Preterperfect. *Io ho piaciuto*, I have pleased.
 First Pluperfect. *Io avevo* } *Piaciuto*, I had plea-
 Second Pluperfect. *Io ebbi* } sed.
 Future. *Io piacerò*, I shall please, &c.

Imperative.

- S. *Piaci*, please thou.
Piaccia, let him please.
 P. *Piacciamo*, let us please.
Piacete, please ye.
Piacciano, let them please.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io paccia*, that I please, &c.
Che tu piaccia, that thou pleasest.
Che egli piaccia, that he pleaseth.
 P. *Che noi piacciamo*, that we please.
Che voi piacciate, that ye please.
Che eglino piacciano, that they please.

First Imperfect. *Io piacerei*, I should please, &c.
 Second Imperfect. *Io piaceffi*, I pleased, &c.
 Preterperfect. *Io abbia piaciuto*, I have pleased, &c.
 First Pluperfect. *Io averei* } *Piaciuto*, I had plea-
 Second Pluperfect. *Io avessi* } sed, &c.
 Future. *Io averò piaciuto*, I shall have pleased, &c.
 Infinitive Present. *Piacere*, to please.
 Preterperfect. *Avere piaciuto*, to have pleased.
 Participle. *Piaciuto*, pleased.
 Gerund. *Piacendo*, pleasing.

After the same manner conjugate *Giacere*, to lie down; *Tacere*, to be silent

Note,

138 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Note, That in these three Verbs, where the Letter *c* comes before the two Vowels, the *c* is to be doubled ; as *giaccio, piaccia, piacciamo, taccio, taccia, tacciamo.*

Cadere, to fall.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io cado, I fall.*

Tu cadi, thou fallest.

Egli cade, he falleth.

P. *Noi cadiamo, we fall.*

Voi cadete, ye fall.

Eglino cadono, they fall.

Imperfect. *Io Cavevo, I fell, or I did fall, &c.*

Definite.

S. *Io caddi, I fell.*

Tu cadesti, thou fellest.

Egli cadde, he fel.

P. *Noi cademmo, we fell.*

Voi cadeste, ye fell.

Eglino caddero, they fell.

Preterperfect. *Io sono caduto, &c. I have fallen, &c.*

First Pluperfect. *Io ero } Caduto, I had fal-*

Second Pluperfect. *Io fui } len, &c.*

Future. *Io caderò, or cadrò, I shall fall, &c.*

Imperative.

S. *Cadi, fall thou.*

Cada, let him fall.

P. *Cadiamo, let us fall.*

Cadete, fall ye.

Cadano, let them fall.

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che io cada, that I fall, &c.*

Che tu cada, that thou fallest, &c.

Che egli cada, that he falleth, &c.

P. *Cbe*

- P. *Che noi cadiamo*, that we fall, &c.
Che voi cadiate, that ye fall, &c.
Che eglino cadano, that they fall, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io caderei*, I should fall, &c.
 Second Imperfect. *Io cadeffi*, I fell, or I should fall.
 Preterperfect. *Io sia caduto*, I have fallen.
 First Imperfect. *Io sarei*
 Second Pluperfect. *Io fossi* } *Caduto*, I had fallen.
 Future. *Io sarò caduto*, I shall have fallen.
 Infinitive Present. *Cadere*, to fall.
 Preterperfect. *Essere caduto*, to have fallen.
 Participle. *Caduto*, fallen.
 Gerund. *Cadendo*, falling.

Volere, to be willing.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io voglio*, I am }
Tu vuoi, thou art } willing.
Egli vuole, he is }
 P. *Noi vogliamo*, we are }
Voi volete, ye are } willing.
Eglino vogliono, they are }

Imperfect. *Io volevo*, &c. I was willing, &c.

Definite.

- S. *Io volli*, I was }
Tu volesti, thou wast } willing.
Egli volle, he was }
 P. *Noi volemmo*, we were }
Voi voleste, ye were } willing.
Eglino vollero, they were }
 Preterperfect. *Io ho voluto*, &c. I have been wil-
 ling, &c.

First

First Pluperfect. *Io avevo* } *Voluto*, I had been
Second Pluperfect. *Io ebbi* } willing.

Future.

S. *Io vorrò*, I shall
 Tu vorrai, thou shalt } be willing.
 Egli vorrà, he shall }
P. *Noi vorremo*, we shall
 Voi vorrete, ye shall } be willing.
 Eglino vorranno, they shall }

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che io voglia*, that I
 Che tu voglia, that thou
 Che egli voglia, that he } be willing.
P. *Che noi vogliamo*, that we
 Che voi vogliate, that ye
 Che eglino vogliano, that they }

First Imperfect. *Io vorrei*, I should be willing, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io voleffi*, I would, or I should be willing, &c.

Preterperfect. *Io abbia voluto*, I have been willing, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io avarei* } *voluto*, I had been

Second Pluperfect. *Io avessi* } willing, &c.

Future. *Io averò voluto*, I shall have been willing, &c.

Infinitive Present. *Volere*, to be willing.

Preterperfect. *Avere voluto*, to have been willing.

Participle. *Voluto*, been willing.

Gerund. *Volendo*, being willing.

S. *Io*
 Tu
 Egli
P. *Noi*
 Voi
 Egli
Imper

S. *Io*
 Tu
 Egli
P. *Noi*
 Voi
 Egli
Preter
First
Second

S. *Io*
 Tu
 Egli
P. *Noi*
 Voi
 Egli

S. *Duc*
 Dole
P. *Dog*
 Dole
 Dole

Dolere, to grieve.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io mi dolgo*, or *doglio*, I grieve.

Tu ti duoli, thou grieveſt.

Egli ſi duole, he grieveth.

P. *Noi ci dogliamo*, we grieve.

Voi vi dolete, ye grieve.

Eglino ſi dolgono, or *doglino*, they grieve.

Imperfect. *Io mi doleva*, I grieved, or did grieve.

Definite.

S. *Io mi dolſi*, I grieved.

Tu ti doleſti, thou grievedſt.

Egli ſi dolſe, he grieved.

P. *Noi ci dolemmo*, we grieved.

Voi vi doleſte, ye grieved.

Eglino ſi dolſero, they grieved.

Preterperfect. *Io mi ſono doluto*, I have grieved.

First Pluperfect. *Io mi ero* } *Doluto*, I had

Second Pluperfect. *Io mi fui* } grieved.

Future.

S. *Io mi dorrò*, I ſhall or will

Tu ti dorrai, thou ſhalt, &c.

Egli ſi dorrà, he ſhall, &c.

P. *Noi ci dorremo*, we ſhall, &c.

Voi vi dorrete, ye ſhall, &c.

Eglino ſi dorranno, they ſhall, &c.

} grieve.

Imperative.

S. *Duolti*, or *Duoliti*, grieve thou.

Dolgaſi, let him grieve.

P. *Dogliamoci*, let us grieve.

Doletevi, grieve ye.

Dolganſi, let them grieve.

Conjunctive

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io mi dolga*, that I grieve.
Che tu ti dolga, that thou grieveſt.
Che egli ſi dolga, that he grieveth.
- P. *Che noi ci dogliamo*, that we }
Che voi vi dogliate, that ye } grieve.
Che eglino ſi doglano, that they }

First Imperfect. *Io mi dorrei*, I ſhould grieve, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io mi doleſſi*, I grieved, &c.

Preterperfect. *Io mi ſià doluto*, I have grieved, &c.

First Pluperfect. *Io mi ſarei* } *Doluto*, I had

Second Pluperfect. *Io mi foſſi* } grieved.

Future. *Io mi ſarò doluto*, I ſhall have grieved.

Infinitive Present.

Dolerſi, to grieve.

Preterperfect. *Eſſerſi doluto*, to have grieved.

Participle. *Doluto*, grieved.

Gerund. *Dolendofi*, grieving.

Note, That the Verbs whoſe Infinitive end in *lere*, always take a *g* before the *l*, and after the *l* an *i*, in thoſe Tenſes where the Letters *o* and *a* follow the *l*; as, *voglio*, *vogliono*, *voglia*; *foglio*, *fogliono*, *foggia*: *Dolere* makes *dolgo* and *doglio*. And in the future and firſt Imperfect, they change the *le* into *r*; as, *volere*, *vorrà*, *vorrei*; *dolere*, *dorrà*, *dorrei*.

Solere, to be wont.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io ſoglio*, I am wont.
Tu ſuoli, thou art wont.
Egli ſuole, he is wont.

P. *Noi*

P. *Noi sogliamo*, we are wont.

Voi solete, ye are wont.

Eglino sogliono, they are wont.

Imperfect. *Io solevo*, I was wont, &c.

This Verb has no definite Tense, nor future.

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che io soglia*, that I be

Che tu soglia, thou be

Che egli soglia, he be

P. *Che noi sogliamo*, we be

Che voi sogliate, ye be

Che eglino sogliano, they be

} wont.

Second Imperfect. *Io soleffi*, I was wont, &c.

Infinitive Present. *Solere*, to be wont.

Preterperfect. *Essere solito*, to be wont.

Participle. *Solito*, wont.

Gerund. *Solendo*, or *essendo solito*, being wont.

Tenere, to hold.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io tengo*, I hold.

Tu tieni, thou holdest.

Egli tiene, he holdeth.

P. *Noi teniamo*, we hold.

Voi tenete, ye hold.

Eglino tengono, they hold.

Imperfect. *Io tenevo*, I held.

Definite.

S. *Io tenni*, I held.

Tu tenesti, thou heldest.

Egli tenne, he held.

P. *Noi*

- P. *Noi tenemmo*, we held.
Voi teneste, ye held.
Eglino tennero, they held.

Future.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|---------|
| S. <i>Io terrò</i> , I shall | } hold. |
| <i>Tu terra</i> , thou shalt | |
| <i>Egli terra</i> , he shall | |
| P. <i>Noi terremo</i> , we shall | |
| <i>Voi terrete</i> , ye shall | |
| <i>Eglino terranno</i> , they shall | |

Imperative.

- S. *Tieni*, hold thou.
Tenga, let him hold.
P. *Teniamo*, let us hold.
Tenete, hold ye.
Tengano, let them hold.

Conjunctive Present.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|---------|
| S. <i>Che io tenga</i> , that I | } hold. |
| <i>Che tu tenga</i> , that thou | |
| <i>Che egli tenga</i> , that he | |
| P. <i>Che noi teniamo</i> , that we | |
| <i>Che voi teniate</i> , that ye | |
| <i>Che egli tengano</i> , that they | |

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io terrei*, I should
Tu terresti, thou shouldest, &c.
Egli terrebbe, he should, &c.
P. *Noi terremmo*, we should, &c.
Voi terreste, ye should, &c.
Eglino terrebbero, they should.

Second

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli
Infinitive
Preterite
Participle
Gerund

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli
Imperfect

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io teneffi*, I held.
Tu teneffi, thou heldest.
Egli teneffe, he
P. *Noi teneffimo*, we
Voi teneffe, ye
Eglino teneffero, they } held.

Infinitive Present. *Tenere*, to hold.

Preterperfect. *Avere tenuto*, to have held.

Participle. *Tenuto*, held.

Gerund. *Tenendo*, holding.

Sapere, to know.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io so*, I know.
Tu sai, thou knowest
Egli sa, he knoweth.
P. *Noi sappiamo*, we know.
Voi sapete, ye know.
Eglino fanno, they know.

Imperfect. *Io sapevo*, I did know, &c.

Definite.

- S. *Io seppi*, I knew.
Tu sapesti, thou knewest.
Egli seppe, he knew.
P. *Noi sapemmo*, we knew.
Voi sapeste, ye knew.
Eglino seppero, they knew.

Future.

- S. *Io saprò*, I shall,
Tu saprai, thou shalt
Egli saprà, he shall
P. *Noi sapremo*, we shall
Voi saprete, ye shall
Eglino sapranno, they shall } know.

L

Imperative.

Imperative.

- S. *Sappi*, Know thou.
Sappia, let him know.
P. *Sappiamo*, let us know.
Sappiate, know ye.
Sappiano, let them know.

Conjunctive Present.

- S. *Che io sappia*, that I know.
Che tu sappia, that thou knowest.
Che egli sappia, that he knoweth.
P. *Che noi sappiamo*, that he }
Che voi sappiate, that we } know.
Che eglino sappiano, that they }

First Imperfect.

- S. *Io saprei*, I should }
Tu sapresti, thou shouldest }
Egli saprebbe, he should } know.
P. *Noi sapremmo*, we should }
Voi sapreste, ye should }
Eglino saprebbero, they should }

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io sapeffi*, I knew.
Tu sapeffi, thou knewest
Egli sapeffe, he }
P. *Noi sapeffimo*, we } knew.
Voi sapeffte, ye }
Eglino sapeffero, they }

Infinitive Present. *Sapere*, to know.

Preterperfect. *Avere saputo*, to have known.

Participle. *Saputo*, known.

Gerund. *Sapendo*, knowing.

Potere

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli

P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Imperative

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli

P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Future.

S. *Che*
Che
Che

P. *Che*
Che
Che

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli

Potere, to be able.

Indicative Present.

- | | | |
|--|---|---------------|
| S. <i>Io posso, I am</i> | } | <i>could.</i> |
| <i>Tu puoi, thou art</i> | | |
| <i>Egli può, he is</i> | | |
| P. <i>Noi possiamo, or potiamo, we are</i> | | |
| <i>Voi potete, ye are</i> | | |
| <i>Eglino possono they are</i> | | |

Imperfect. Io potevo, I was able, &c.

Definite.

- | | | |
|---|---|---------------|
| S. <i>Io potei, or potetti, I could.</i> | } | <i>could.</i> |
| <i>Tu potesti, thou couldst.</i> | | |
| <i>Egli potè, or potette, he</i> | | |
| P. <i>Noi potemmo, we</i> | | |
| <i>Voi poteste, ye</i> | | |
| <i>Eglino potettero, or potettonò, they</i> | | |

Future. Io potrò, or poterò, I shall be able, &c.

Conjunctive Present.

- | | | |
|---------------------------------------|---|-------------|
| S. <i>Che io possa, that I can.</i> | } | <i>can;</i> |
| <i>Che tu possa, that thou canst.</i> | | |
| <i>Che egli possa, that he</i> | | |
| P. <i>Che noi possiamo, that we</i> | | |
| <i>Che voi possiate, that ye</i> | | |
| <i>Che eglino possano, that they</i> | | |

First Imperfect.

- | | | |
|--|-----|---------------|
| S. <i>Io poterei, or potrei, I could.</i> | | |
| <i>Tu potresti, or potresti, thou couldst.</i> | | |
| <i>Egli potrebbe, or potrebbe, he could.</i> | | |
| | L 2 | P. <i>Noi</i> |

- P. *Noi potremmo, or potremmo, we*
Voi potreste, or potreste, ye
Eglino potrebbero, or potrebbero, they } could.

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io poteffi, I could.*
Tu poteffi, thou couldst.
Egli potesse, he
P. *Noi poteffimo, we*
Voi poteste, ye
Eglino poteffero, they } could.

Infinitive Present. *Potere, to be able.*

Preterperfect. *Avere potuto, to have been able.*

Participle, *Potuto, been able.*

Gerund. *Potendo, being able.*

Rimanere, to remain.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io rimango, I remain.*
Tu rimani, thou remainest.
Egli rimane, he remaineth.
P. *Noi rimaniamo, we*
Voi rimanete, ye
Eglino rimangono, they } remain.

Imperfect. *Io rimanevo, I remained, or did remain, &c.*

Definite.

- S. *Io rimasi, I remained.*
Tu rimanesti, thou remainedst.
Egli rimase, he
P. *Noi rimanemmo, we*
Voi rimaneste, ye
Eglino rimasero, they } remained.

Future.

Future.

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------|
| S. <i>Io rimarrò</i> , I shall | } remain. |
| <i>Tu rimarrai</i> , thou shalt. | |
| <i>Egli rimarrà</i> , he shall | |
| P. <i>Noi rimarremo</i> , we shall | |
| <i>Voi rimarrete</i> , ye shall | |
| <i>Eglino rimarranno</i> , they shall | |

Imperative.

- S. *Rimani*, remain thou.
Rimanga, let him remain.
P. *Rimaniamo*, let us remain.
Rimanete, remain ye.
Rimangano, let them remain.

Conjunctive Present.

- | | |
|---|-----------|
| S. <i>Che io rimanga</i> , that I | } remain. |
| <i>Che tu rimanga</i> , that thou | |
| <i>Che egli rimanga</i> , that he | |
| P. <i>Che noi rimaniamo</i> , that we | |
| <i>Che voi rimaniate</i> , that ye | |
| <i>Che eglino rimangano</i> , that they | |

First Imperfect.

- | | |
|---|------------------|
| S. <i>Io rimarrei</i> , I should remain. | } should remain. |
| <i>Tu rimarresti</i> , thou shouldest remain. | |
| <i>Egli rimarrebbe</i> , he | |
| P. <i>Noi rimarremmo</i> , we | |
| <i>Voi rimarreste</i> , ye | |
| <i>Eglino rimarrebbero</i> , they | |

Second Imperfect.

- S. *Io rimanessi*, I remained.
Tu rimanessi, thou remainedst.
Egli rimanesse, he
P. *Noi rimanessimo*, we
Voi rimaneste, ye
Eglino rimanessero, they } remained.

Infinitive Present. *Rimanere*, to remain.
 Preterperfect. *Essere rimasto*, to have remained.
 Participle. *Rimasto*, or *rimasto*, remained.
 Gerund. *Rimanendo*, remaining.

Parere, to seem.

Indicative Present.

- S. *Io paro*, I seem.
Tu pari, thou seemest.
Egli pare, he seemeth.
P. *Noi pariamo*, we
Voi parete, ye
Eglino parono, they } seem.

Imperfect. *Io parevo*, I seemed, or I did seem, &c.

Definite.

- S. *Io parvi*, I seemed.
Tu paresti, thou seemedst.
Egli parve, he
P. *Noi paremmo*, we
Voi pareste, ye
Eglino parvero, they } seemed.

Future.

Future.

- | | | |
|------------------------------------|---|-------|
| S. <i>Io parrò</i> , I will | } | seem. |
| <i>Tu parrai</i> , thou wilt | | |
| <i>Egli parrà</i> , he will | | |
| P. <i>Noi parremo</i> , we will | | |
| <i>Voi parrete</i> , ye will | | |
| <i>Eglino parranno</i> , they will | | |

Conjunctive Present.

- | | | |
|--|---|-----------|
| S. <i>Che io paja</i> , that I may. | } | may seem. |
| <i>Che tu paja</i> , that thou may'st. | | |
| <i>Che egli paja</i> , that he | | |
| P. <i>Che noi pajamo</i> , that we | | |
| <i>Che voi pajate</i> , that ye | | |
| <i>Che eglino pajano</i> , that they | | |

First Imperfect.

- | | | |
|---|---|-------|
| S. <i>Io parrei</i> , I should seem. | } | seem. |
| <i>Tu parresti</i> , thou shouldest seem. | | |
| <i>Egli parrebbe</i> , he should | | |
| P. <i>Noi parremmo</i> , we should | | |
| <i>Voi parreste</i> , ye should | | |
| <i>Eglino parrebbero</i> , they should | | |

Second Imperfect.

- | | | |
|------------------------------------|---|---------|
| S. <i>Io paressi</i> , I seemed. | } | seemed. |
| <i>Tu paressi</i> , thou seemedst. | | |
| <i>Egli parebbe</i> , he | | |
| P. <i>Noi paressimo</i> , we | | |
| <i>Voi pareste</i> , ye | | |
| <i>Eglino paressero</i> , they | | |

152 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Infinitive Present. *Parere*, to seem
 Preterperfect. *Esser parso*, to have seemed.
 Participle. *Parso*, seemed.
 Gerund. *Parendo*, seeming.

Dovere, to owe, or to be obliged.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io devo*, or *debbo*, I owe.

Tu devi, thou owest.

Egli deve, he oweth.

P. *Noi dobbiamo*, we

Voi dovete, ye

Eglino devono, or *debbono*, they } owe.

Imperfect. *Io dovevo*, I owed, or I did owe.

Definite. *Io dovei*, or *dovetti*, I owed, &c.

Future. *Io doverò*, or *dovrò*, I shall owe.

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che io debba*, that I owe.

Che tu debba, that thou owest.

Che egli debba, that he oweth.

P. *Che noi dobbiamo*, that we

Che voi dobbiate, that ye } owe

Che eglino debbano, that they }

First Imperfect. *Io doverei*, or *dovrei*, I should owe, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io doveffi*, I owed, &c.

Infinitive Present. *Dovere*, to owe.

Preterperfect. *Avere dovuto*, to have owed.

Participle. *Dovuto*, owed.

Gerund. *Dovendo*, owing.

Note, Verbs having the Infinitive in *nere*; where *o*, or *a*, would regularly follow the *n*, take *g* immediately

diatel
mang
no, &
follow
but ar

Of
Tense
Futur
The
ciple i
ing are

Conoscere
Crescere
Nascere
Nuocere
Rompere

Alth
Definit
ever, f
phabeti
finitives
them.

1. In cer
2. In der
3. In ger
4. In glier
5. In ber
6. In ler
7. In mer
8. In nere
9. In nde

diately after it ; as, *rimanere*, makes *rimango*, *rimangono*, *rimanga*, *rimangano* ; instead of *rimano*, &c. *Porre*, to put, *comporre*, to compose, follow the same Rule, since they are nothing else but an Abbreviation of *Ponere*, and *Componere*.

Of the irregular Verbs in ere, short.

Of these some few are irregular in the Present Tense, the most part in the Perfect, some in the Future, and almost all in the Participle.

The Perfect always ends in *si*, or *ssi*, the Participle in *so*, or *to* ; but the Perfect Tenses following are excepted.

	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Def.</i>	<i>Part.</i>
<i>Conoscere</i> , to know,	conosco,	conobbi,	conosciuto.
<i>Crescere</i> , to grow,	creasco,	crebbi,	cresciuto.
<i>Nascere</i> , to be born,	nasco,	nacqui,	nato.
<i>Nuocere</i> , to hurt,	nuoco,	nocqui,	nocciuto.
<i>Rompere</i> , to break,	rompo,	ruppi,	rotto.

Although this Rule is sufficient to know all the Definite Tenses of the Verbs in *ere*, short ; who- ever, for greater Facility, I shall give here an Al- phabetical Table of the Terminations of their In- finitives, and of the Irregular Tenses form'd from them.

Terminations of the Verbs in ere, short.

	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Def.</i>	<i>Part.</i>
1. In <i>cere</i> ; as, <i>vincere</i> ,	vinco,	vinfi,	vinto.
2. In <i>dere</i> ; as, <i>ardere</i> ,	ardo,	arfi,	arso.
3. In <i>gere</i> ; as, <i>piangere</i> ,	piango,	pianfi,	pianto.
4. In <i>gliere</i> ; as, <i>Cogliere</i> , <i>Colgo</i> , and <i>coglio</i> , <i>colfi</i> , <i>colto</i> .			
5. In <i>here</i> ; as, <i>trahere</i> , or <i>trarre</i> ,	trao,	trassfi,	tratto.
6. In <i>lere</i> , as, <i>svellere</i> ,	svello	svelffi,	svolto.
7. In <i>mere</i> ; as, <i>imprimere</i> ,	imprimo,	impressfi,	impresso.
8. In <i>nere</i> ; as, <i>ponere</i> ,	pongo,	posfi,	posto.
9. In <i>ndere</i> ; as, <i>prendere</i> ,	prerdo,	presfi,	preso.
			10. In

- | | | | |
|------------------------------------|---------|----------|----------|
| 10. In <i>pere</i> ; as, rompere, | rompo, | ruppi, | rotto. |
| 11. In <i>rere</i> ; as, correre, | corro, | corsi, | corso. |
| 12. In <i>tere</i> ; as, mettere, | metto, | misi, | messo. |
| 13. In <i>vere</i> ; as, scrivere, | scrivo, | scrissi, | scritto. |

Change all these Terminations in *si*, you will find the Preter definite of all these Verbs ; ex. to find the Definite Tense of *vincere, torcere, ardere, prendere, piangere, rispondere*, change the Terminations *cere, dere, gere, ndere*, in *si*, you will find *vinfi, torfi, arsi, presi, pianfi, risposi*.

But to remove all Difficulties about the Termination of the Definite Tense, you must observe, that some Verbs double the *ff* in the Definite, some not ; these following are of the first Sort, and all the others are of the second.

<i>Inf.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Des.</i>	<i>Part.</i>
<i>Addurre</i> , to alledge,	adduco,	addussi,	addotto.
<i>Affiggere</i> , to affix,	affiggo,	affissi,	affisso.
<i>Ascrivere</i> , to ascribe,	ascrivo,	ascrissi,	ascritto.
<i>Attrahere</i> , to attract,	attraho,	attrassi,	attratto.
<i>Commovere</i> , to move,	commovo,	commossi,	commosso.
<i>Condurre</i> , to conduct,	conduco,	condussi,	condotto.
<i>Costruere</i> , to build,	costruo,	costrussi,	costrutto.
<i>Contrahere</i> , to contract,	contraho,	contrassi,	contratto.
<i>Correggere</i> , to correct,	correggo,	corressi,	corretto.
<i>Cuocere</i> , to bake,	cuoco,	coffi,	cotto.
<i>Direggere</i> , to direct,	direggo,	direffi,	diretto.
<i>Distrarre</i> , to take off,	distrao,	distrassi,	distratto.
<i>Distruggere</i> , to destroy,	distruggo,	distrussi,	distrutto.
<i>Eleggere</i> , to chuse,	eleggo,	eleffi,	eletto.
<i>Eriggere</i> , to erect,	eriggo,	eressi,	eretto.
<i>Esprimere</i> , to express,	esprimo,	espressi,	espresso.
<i>Figgere</i> , to thrust in,	figgo,	fissi,	fitto.
<i>Introdurre</i> , to introduce,	introduco,	introdussi,	introdotta.
<i>Imprimere</i> , to print,	imprimo,	impressi,	impresso.
<i>Indurre</i> , to induce,	induco,	indussi,	indotto.
<i>Leggere</i> , to read,	leggo,	lessi,	letto.
<i>Muovere</i> , to move,	movo,	moffi,	mosso.
<i>Negliggere</i> , to neglect,	negliggo,	neglessi,	negletto.
<i>Opprimere</i> , to oppress,	opprimo,	oppressi,	oppresso.
<i>Percuotere</i> , to strike,	percuto,	percoffi,	percosso.

Produrre,

*Produ
Prom
Proteg
Regger
Ridur
Riflett
Riluce
Rimov
Riscuo
Scriven
Scuoter
Sedurre
Sopprim
Strugg
Succede
Tradur
Trafigg
Trarre,
Vivere,*

To
must
the irr
Defini
irregu
The
gular,
Irregu
third
and ea
Person
deceive
of the
gular
changin
ardesti,
makes
The
finitive,
credere,

<i>Produrre</i> , to produce,	produco,	produssi,	prodotto.
<i>Promovere</i> , to promote,	promovo,	promossi,	promosso.
<i>Proteggere</i> , to protect,	proteggo,	proteffi,	protetto.
<i>Reggere</i> , to govern,	reggo,	ressi,	retto.
<i>Ridurre</i> , to reduce,	riduco,	ridussi,	ridotto.
<i>Rislettere</i> , to reflect,	rispetto,	riflessi,	riflesso.
<i>Rilucere</i> , to shine,	riluco,	rilussi.	
<i>Rimovere</i> , to remove,	rimovo,	rimossi,	rimosso.
<i>Riscuotere</i> , to redeem,	riscuoto,	riscossi,	riscosso.
<i>Scrivere</i> , to write,	scrivo,	scrissi,	scritto.
<i>Scuotere</i> , to shake,	scuoto,	scoffi,	scoffo.
<i>Sedurre</i> , to seduce,	seduco,	sedussi,	sedotto.
<i>Sopprimere</i> , to suppress,	sopprimo,	soppressi,	soppresso.
<i>Struggere</i> , to destroy,	struggo,	strussi,	strutto.
<i>Succedere</i> , to succeed,	succedo,	successi,	successo.
<i>Tradurre</i> , to translate,	traduco,	tradussi,	tradotto.
<i>Trafiggere</i> , to transfix,	trafiggo,	traffissi,	trafitto.
<i>Trarre</i> , to draw,	trao, or traggo,	traffi,	tratto.
<i>Vivere</i> , to live,	vivo,	vissi,	vissuto.

To conjugate these Verbs with Facility, you must remember what I said in the Beginning of the irregular Verbs in *ere*, where I noted, that the Definite Tense has three Persons regular, and three irregular.

The three Persons regular, are the second Singular, the first and second Plural; and the three Irregular, are the first and third Singular, and third Plural. And though this Rule be general and easy, yet Beginners sometimes mistake one Person for another; but the true Way not to be deceived is, to remember, that the second Person of the Definite Tense of all the Verbs both regular and irregular, is formed of the Infinitive, changing *re*, in *sti*; as, *vincere*, *vincesti*, *ardere*, *ardesti*, *piangere*, *piangesti*; except only *essere*, that makes *fosti*.

The first Person plural is also formed of the Infinitive, changing *re*, in *mmo*; as, *amare*, *amammo*, *credere*, *credemmo*, *leggere*, *leggemmo*, &c.

The

The second Person plural is formed of the second Singular, changing the *i* into *e*; as, *amasti, amaste, credesti, credeste, leggesti, leggeste.*

The first Person singular of the Irregular Verbs is always terminated in *i*; as, *lessi, vinsi, pianxi*: changing the *i* into *e*, you will make the third Person singular, *lesse, vinse, pianse*; and adding *ro* to this last, makes the third Plural, *lessero, videro, piansero.*

E X A M P L E.

Lessi, presi, lesse, prese, lessero, presero.
Scrissi, vinsi, scrisse, vinse, scrissero, videro.

Remember to read these Observations, they are very useful in conjugating the Irregular Verbs.

Note, That the Verbs ending in *ggere, bere,* and *vere*, double the *s* in the Definite; and some in the Participle, double the *s*, and some double the *t*; as, *trahere, trassi, tratto; scrivere, scrissi, scritto; muovere, mossi, mosso; leggere, lessi, letto.*

These Rules would be sufficient to learn to conjugate the Irregular Verbs in *ere*; however, I thought fit, for greater Facility, to explain the different Terminations more at large, by conjugating a Verb of each.

Of the Verbs in cere.

Cuocere, to bake.

Indicative Present.

S. Io cuoco, I bake.
Tu cuoci, thou bakest.
Egli cuoce, he baketh.

P. Noi

P. *Noi cuociamo*, we bake.
Voi cuocete, ye bake.
Eglino cuocono, they bake.

Imperfect. *Io cuocevo*, I baked, &c.

Definite.

S. *Io cossi*, I baked.
Tu cuocesti, thou bakedst.
Egli cossè, he

P. *Noi cuocemmo*, we
Voi cuoceste, ye
Eglino cossèro, they } baked.

Future. *Io cuocerò*, &c. I shall bake, &c.

Imperative.

S. *Cuoci*, bake thou.
Cuoca, let him bake.
P. *Cuociamo*, let us bake.
Cuocete, bake ye.
Cuocano, let them bake.

Conjunctive Present.

Conjunctive Present. *Che io cuoca*, that I bake, &c.

First Imperfect. *Io cuocereì*, &c. I should bake, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Io cuocessi*, &c. I baked, &c.

Infinitive. *Cuocere*, to bake.

Participle. *Cotto*, baked.

Gerund. *Cuocendo*, baking.

Conjugate in the same manner,

Conducere, } to lead, *conduco*, *condussi*, *condotto*.
or *Condurre* }

Rilucere, to shine, *riluco*, *rilussi*, without Participle.

Torcere, to twist, *torco*, *torfi*, *torto*.

Vincere, to win, *vinco*, *vinfi*, *vinto*.

Of

Of the Verbs in *dere*.

The Verbs in *dere*, in the Definite make *fi*, or *ssi*, and in the Participle *fo*, or *to*.

<i>Ardere</i> , to burn;	<i>ardo</i> ,	<i>arfi</i> ,	<i>arfo</i> .
<i>Chiudere</i> , to shut;	<i>chiudo</i> ,	<i>chiufi</i> ,	<i>chiufo</i> .
<i>Chiedere</i> , to ask;	<i>chiedo</i> ,	<i>chiefi</i> ,	<i>chiefo</i> .
<i>Perdere</i> , to lose;	<i>perdo</i> ,	<i>persi</i> or <i>perdei</i> ,	<i>perfo</i> .
		or <i>perduto</i> .	
<i>Ridere</i> , to laugh;	<i>rido</i> ,	<i>rifi</i>	<i>rifo</i> ,
<i>Rodere</i> , to gnaw;	<i>rodo</i> ,	<i>rofi</i> ,	<i>rofo</i> .
<i>Succedere</i> , to succeed;	<i>succedo</i> ,	<i>succeffi</i> ,	<i>succeffo</i> .
<i>Concedere</i> , to grant;	<i>concedo</i> ,	<i>conceffi</i> ,	<i>conceffo</i> .

Of the Verbs in *gere*.

The Verbs in *gere*, in the Perfect make *fi*, and in the Participle *to*.

<i>Cingere</i> , to gird;	<i>cingo</i> ,	<i>cinfi</i> ,	<i>cinto</i> .
<i>Estinguere</i> , to extinguish;	<i>estinguo</i> ,	<i>estinsi</i> ,	<i>estinto</i> .
<i>Spingere</i> , to thrust;	<i>spingo</i> ,	<i>spinsi</i> ,	<i>spinto</i> .
<i>Ungere</i> , to anoint;	<i>ungo</i> ,	<i>unfi</i> ,	<i>unto</i> .
<i>Porgere</i> , to reach;	<i>porgo</i> ,	<i>porfi</i> ,	<i>porto</i> .

But the Verbs in *argere*, and *ergere*, in the Participle, make *fo*.

<i>Spargere</i> , to spread;	<i>spargo</i> ,	<i>sparfi</i> ,	<i>sparfo</i> .
<i>Immergere</i> , to plunge;	<i>immergo</i> ,	<i>immerfi</i> ,	<i>immerfo</i> .
<i>Sommergere</i> , to drown;	<i>sommergo</i> ,	<i>sommerfi</i> ,	<i>sommerfo</i> .

Except *Ergere*, to erect; *Ergo*, *erfi*, *erto*.

Note, That the Verbs that have a Vowel before *gere*, ought to be spelled with two *gg*, and double the *s* in the Definite,

Friggere,

Friggere
Leggere

Not
regular
also a
Future
corre,
the De

Cogliere
Corre,
Sciogliere
Sciorre
Togliere
Torre

Scegliere
Infinitive
shall co
Examp
Termin

S. *Io co*
Tu c
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Imperfe

Friggere, to fry; *friggo*, *frissi*, *fritto*.
Leggere, to read; *leggo*, *lessi*, *letto*.

Of the Verbs in gliere.

Note, That the Verbs in *gliere*, besides the Irregularity of the Definite, and Participle, make also a Contraction 'in the Infinitive Mood, the Future, and the first Imperfect; as, *cogliere*, or *corre*, to gather; Future, *corrò*; Imp. *correi*, in the Definite they make *si*, and in the Participle *to*.

Cogliere, or } to gather; *colgo* and *coglio*, *colsi*,
Corre, } *colto*.

Sciogliere, or } to lose; *sciolgo* and *scioglio*, *sciolsi*,
Sciorre } *sciolto*.

Togliere, or } to take; *tolgo* and *toglio*, *tolsi*, *tolto*.
Torre }

Scegliere, to chuse, makes no Contraction in the Infinitive Mood, but is irregular, like the rest. I shall conjugate *Cogliere*, that it may serve for an Example for all the others, that have the same Termination.

Indicative Present.

S. *Io colgo*, or *coglio*, I gather.

Tu cogli, thou gatherest.

Egli coglie, he gathereth.

P. *Noi cogliamo*, we

Voi cogliete, ye

Eglino colgono, or *cogliono*, they } gather.

Imperfect. *Io coglievo*, &c. I gathered, &c.

Definite.

Definite.

- S. *Io colsi*, I gathered.
Tu cogliesti, thou gatheredst
Egli colse, he
P. *Noi cogliemmo*, we } gathered.
Voi coglieste, ye
Eglino colsero, they }

Future.

- S. *Io corrò*, I shall gather.
Tu corrai, thou shalt
Egli correrà, he
P. *Noi correremo*, we } shall gather.
Voi correrete, ye
Eglino correranno, they }

Imperat.

- S. *Cogli*, gather thou.
Colga, or *coglia*, let him gather.
P. *Cogliamo*, let us gather.
Cogliete, gather ye.
Colgano, or *cogliano*, let them gather.

Conjunct.

- S. *Io colga*, or *coglia*, I gather.
Tu colga, thou gatherest.
Egli colga, he gathereth.
P. *Noi cogliamo*, we } gather.
Voi cogliate, ye
Eglino colgano, or *cogliano*, they }

S. *Io*
Tu
Egli
P. *Noi*
Voi
Egli

Second
Infinit
Partici
Gerund

Trak
Compo
Termin
in the
that m
out b.

Indicat
tra
Imperf
Definit

tra
Future.
Impera
ga
Conjun
tra
First I
ren

First Imperfect.

S. *Io correi*, I should gather.

Tu correstì, thou shouldest gather.

Egli correbbe, he

P. *Noi corremmo*, we

Voi correste, ye

Eglino correbbero, they

} should gather.

Second Imperfect. *Io coglessi*, &c. I gathered, &c.

Infinitive. *Cogliere*, or *corre*, to gather.

Participle. *Colto*, gathered.

Gerund. *Cogliendo*, gathering.

Of the Verbs in here.

Trahere, and by Contraction *Trarre*, with its Compounds, being the only Verbs that have their Termination in *here*, in the Definite make *ssi*, and in the Participle *tto*: But you must take notice, that modern Authors write *trarre*, or *traere* without *h*.

Indicative Present. *Trao* or *traggo*, *trai*, *trae*, *traiamo*, *traete*, *traono*, or *traggono*, I draw, &c.

Imperfect. *Traevo*, *traevi*, &c. I did draw, &c.

Definite. *Trassi*, *traesti*, *trasse*, *traemmo*, *traeste*, *trassero*, I drew, &c.

Future. *Trarrò*, *trarrai*, &c. I shall draw, &c.

Imperative. *Trai*, *tragga*, *traimo*, *traete*, *traggano*, draw thou, &c.

Conjunctive Present. *Che tragga*, *tragga*, *tragga*, *traiamo*, *traiate*, *traggano*, that I draw, &c.

First Imperfect. *Trarrei*, *trarresti*, *trarrebbe*, *trarremmo*, *trarreste*, *trarrebbero*, I should draw.

162 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Second Imperfect. *Traessi, traessi, traesse, &c.*
that I did draw.

Participle. *Tratto*, drawn.

Of the Verbs in lere.

Svellere, to pluck, with its Compounds, are the only Verbs in *lere*, that make *fi*, in the Definite, and *to* in the Participle.

Present. *Svello*; Definite. *Svelsi*; Particip. *Svelto*.

Of the Verbs in mere.

Premere, to press; and *Sumere*, to take, and their Compounds, are the only irregular Verbs of this Termination.

Premo, pressi, or premei, premuto.

Its Compounds in *imere*, make in the Definite *ssi*, and in the Participle *ssio*; as,

Opprimere, to oppress; *opprimo, oppressi, oppresso.*

Imprimere, to print; *imprimo, impressi, impresso.*

Sumere is not in use; its Compounds make *sumi, sunt.*

Assumere, to assume; *assumo, assunsi, assunto,*

Consumere, to waste; *consumo, consunsi, consunto.*

Of the Verbs in nere.

Ponere, to lay, is the only Verb that changes the *nere* into *si*, for the Definite, and in *sto*, for the Participle, and makes a Contraction in the Infinitive Mood.

Note, That the Verbs whose Termination is in *nere*, take a *g*, where the Letters *o* or *a* would follow the *n*; that is to say, in all the Present

Tenses;

Ter
and
Pre

Imp
Defi

Futu
Imp

Conj

First

Secon

Infini
Partic
Gerun

Cha
nité T
the Pa

Rispon
Nascon
Conson
Fondere
Tondere

The
in *eso*.

Attender
Prender
Rendere

Tenses ; and change the *ne* into *r* in the Future and First Imperfect.

Present. *Pongo, poni, pone, poniamo, ponete, pongono, I lay, &c.*

Imperfect. *Ponevo, &c. I did lay, &c.*

Definite. *Posi, ponesti, pose, ponemmo, poneste, posero, I laid, &c.*

Future. *Porrò, porrai, porrà, &c. I shall lay, &c.*

Imperat. *Poni, ponga, poniamo, ponete, pongano, lay thou, &c.*

Conjunctive Present. *Che ponga, a, a, poniamo, poniate, pongano, that I lay, &c.*

First Imperfect. *Porrei, porresti, porrebbe, &c. I should lay.*

Second Imperfect. *Poneffi, poneffi, poneffe, &c. I laid.*

Infinitive. *Ponere, or porre, to lay.*

Participle. *Posito, laid.*

Gerund. *Ponendo, laying.*

Of the Verbs in ndere.

Change *ndere* into *si*, you'll form the Definite Tense, and into *sto, uso, and oso*, you'll form the Participle.

Rispondere, to answer ; *rispondo, risposi, risposto.*

Nascondere, to hide ; *nascondo, nascosi, nascosto.*

Confondere, to confound ; *confondo, confusi, confuso.*

Fondere, to melt ; *fondo, fusi, fuso.*

Tondere, to shear ; *tondo, tosi, toso.*

The Verbs in *endere*, make the Participle in *eso*.

Attendere, to attend ; *attendo, attesi, atteso.*

Prendere, to take ; *prendo, presi, preso.*

Rendere, to render ; *rendo, resi, reso.*

M 2

Fendere;

Fendere, to cleave, and *Pendere*, to hang, are regular in the Definite; *fendei* and *fendetti*, *pendei* and *pendetti*, in the Participle *fenduto* and *fesso*, *penduto*.

The Compounds of these two Verbs are irregular, and make *esi* in the Definite, and *eso* in the Participle; as,

Disfendere, to defend; *disfendo*, *difesi*, *difeso*.

Appendere, to hang up, or on; *appendo*, *appesi*, *appeso*.

Of the Verbs in Pere.

Romper, to break, with its Compounds, are the only Verbs of this Termination; and make in the Present. *Rompo*, *rompi*, *rompe*, *rompiamo*, *rompete*, *rompono*, I break, &c.

Imperfect. *Rompevo*, *rompevi*, &c. I did break, &c.

Definite. *Ruppi*, *rompesti*, *ruppe*, *rompemmo*, *rompeste*, *ruppero*, I broke, &c.

Future. *Romperò*, *romperai*, &c. I shall break, &c.

Imperative. *Rompi*, *rompa*, *rompiamo*, *rompete*, *rompano*, break thou, &c.

Conjunctive Present. *Rompa*, *a*, *a*, *rompiamo*, *rompiate*, *rompano*, that I break, &c.

First Imperfect. *Romperei*, *romperesti*, &c. I should break, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Rompessi*, *rompesti*, *rompeste*, &c. I broke, &c.

Infinitive. *Romper*, to break.

Participle. *Rotto*, broken.

Gerund. *Rompendo*, breaking.

Of the Verbs in Rere.

Only *correre*, and its Compounds, are terminated in *rere*, and make *si* in the Definite, and *so* in the Participle.

Correre,

Correre, to run; *corro, corsi, corso.*
Accorrere, to run to; *accorro, accorsi, accorso.*
Concorrere, to concur; *concorro, concorsi, concorso.*

Of the Verbs in tere.

The Verbs in *tere*, make *ssi* in the Definite, and *ssò* in the Participle.

Riflettere, to reflect; *rifletto, riflesi, riflesso.*
Riscuotere, to receive; *riscuoto, riscossi, riscosso.*
Scuotere, to shake; *scuoto, scossi, scosso.*
Percuotere, to strike; *percuoto, percosi, percosso.*

Mettere, to put, makes in the Definite, *mi*, *metesti, mise, mettemmo, meteste, misero*; Participle, *messo*. *Promettere*, to promise, *prometto, promisi, promesso*; we find sometimes *messero, promessero*; but oftener in Verse than in Prose.

Of the Verbs in vere.

The Definite Tense of the Verbs in *vere*, is formed by changing *vere* into *ssi* or *si*: The Participles have different Terminations.

Affolvere, to absolve; *assolvo, assolsi* or *assolvei, assoluto.*

Risolvere, to resolve; *risolvo, risolsi* or *risolvei, risoluto.*

Muovere, to move; *muovo, mossi, mosso.*

Rimovere, to remove; *rimovo, rimossi, rimosso.*

Scrivere, to write; *scrivo, scrissi, scritto.*

Vivere, to live; *vivo, vissi, vissuto.*

Note, That the Conjunctive Present of all the Verbs in *ere* and *ire* is formed of the first Person of the Indicative, changing the *o* into *a*; as *vedere, vedo, veda*; *scrivere, scrivo, scriva*; *rendere, rendo, renda*;

renda; dormire, dormo, dorma; sentire, sento, senta; finire, finisco, finisca; except the Verbs, essere, sono, sia; sapere, so, sappia; avere, ho, abbia; dovere, devo, debba.

Of the irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

There are eight Verbs of the Third Conjugation more irregular than the others, viz.

<i>Aprire</i> , to open.	}	<i>Salire</i> , to go up.
<i>Coprire</i> , to cover.		<i>Udire</i> , to hear.
<i>Dire</i> , to say.		<i>Venire</i> , to come.
<i>Morire</i> , to die.		<i>Uscire</i> , to go out.

Aprire is irregular in the Definite, where, besides *aprii*, it makes also *aperfi*; and in the Participle.

Indicative Present. *Aprò, apri, apre, apriamo, aprite, aprono, I open, &c.*

Imperfect. *Aprivo, aprivi, &c. I did open, &c.*

Definite. *Aprii and aperfi, apristi, apri and aperse, aprimmo, apriste, aprirò and aperferò. I opened, &c.*

Future. *Aprirò, aprirai, &c. I shall open, &c.*

Imperative. *Apri, apra, apriamo, aprite, aprano, open thou, &c.*

Conjunctive Present. *Apra, a, a, apriamo, apriate, aprano, that I open, &c.*

First Imperfect. *Aprirei, apriresti, &c. I should open, &c.*

Second Imperfect. *Aprissi, aprissi, aprisse, &c. I opened, &c.*

Infinitive. *Aprire*, to open.

Participle. *Aperto*, opened.

Gerund. *Apriendo*, opening.

Coprire, to cover, is irregular as *aprire*, and makes *coprii* and *copersi*, and in the Participle *coperto*.

Indicative Present. *Copro, copri, copre, copriamo, coprite, coprono*, I cover, &c.

Imperfect. *Coprivo, coprivi, &c.* I did cover, &c.

Definite. *Coprii* and *copersi, copristi, copri* and *copersi, coprimmo, copriste, coprirono* and *copersero*, I opened, &c.

Future. *Coprirò, coprirai, &c.* I shall open, &c.

Imperative. *Copri, copra, copriamo, coprite, coprano*, cover thou, &c.

Conjunctive Present. *Che copra, a, a, copriamo, copriate, coprano*, that I cover, &c.

First Imperfect. *Coprirei, copriresti, &c.* I should cover, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Copristi, copristi, copriste, &c.* I covered, &c.

Infinitive. *Coprire*, to cover.

Participle. *Coperto*, covered.

Gerund. *Coprendo*, covering.

Dire, to say,

Is irregular in the Present, the Definite, and in the Participle.

Indicative Present. *Dico, dici, dice, diciamo, dite, dicono*, I say, &c.

Imperfect. *Dicevo, dicevi, &c.* I did say, &c.

Definite. *Disi, dicesti, disse, dicemmo, diceste, dissero*, I said, &c.

Future. *Dirò, dirai, &c.* I shall say, &c.

Imperative. *Dici, dica, diciamo, dite, dicano*, say thou, &c.

Conjunctive Present. *Dica, a, a, diciamo, diciate, dicano*, that I say, &c.

168 *A New Italian Grammar.*

First Imperfect. *Direi, diresti, &c.* I should say.

Second Imperfect. *Dicessi, dicessi, dicessi, &c.* I said, &c.

Infinitive. *Dire*, to say.

Participle. *Detto*, said.

Gerund. *Dicendo*, saying.

Morire, to die.

Morire is no otherwise irregular in the Present, than as it has two Terminations.

Indicative Present. *Moro* or *muojo*, *mori*, *more*, *moriamo* or *mojamo*, *morite*, *morono* or *muojano*, &c. I die, &c.

Imperfect. *Morivo*, *morivi*, &c. I did die, &c.

Definite. *Morii*, *moristi*, *mori*, *morimmo*, *morisse*, *morirono*. I died, &c. *Sono morto* I am dead.

Ero ? *Morto*, I was dead.

Future. *Morirò* or *morro*, *morirai* or *morrai*, &c. I shall die, &c.

Imperative. *Mori*, *mora* or *moja*, *moriamo* or *muojamo*, *morite*, *morano* or *muojano*, die thou, &c.

Conjunctive Present. *Io mora* or *moja*, *a*, *a*, *moriamo* or *muojamo*, *moriate*, *morano* or *muojano*, that I die, &c.

First Imperfect. *Morirei* or *morrei*, *moriresti* or *morresti*, &c. I should die, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Morissi*, *morissi*, *morisse*, &c. I did die, &c.

Infinitive. *Morire*, to die.

Participle. *Morto*, dead.

Gerund. *Morendo*, dying.

Salire,

Salire, to go up.

Salire is irregular as *morire*, that is to say, it has two Terminations in the Present.

Indicative Present. *Salgo* and *saglio*, *sali*, *sale*, *sagliamo*, *salite*, *salgono* and *sagliano*, I go up, &c.

Imperfect. *Salivo*, *salivi*, &c. I did go up, &c.

Definite. *Salii*, *salisti*, *sali*, *salimmo*, *saliste*, *salirono*, I went up, &c.

Future. *Salirò*, *salirai*, &c. I shall go up, &c.

Imperative. *Sali*, *salga* or *saglia*, *sagliamo*, *salite*, *salgano* or *sagliano*, go up, &c.

Conjunctive. *Salga*, or *Saglia*, *a*, *a*, *sagliamo*, *sagliate*, *salgano* or *sagliano*, that I go up, &c.

First Imperfect. *Salirei*, *saliresti*, I should go up.

Second Imperfect. *Salissi*, *salissi*, *salisse*, &c. I went up, &c.

Infinitive. *Salire*, to go up.

Participle. *Salito*, gone up.

Gerund. *Salendo*, going up.

Udire, to hear.

Udire, is irregular only in the Present, changing the *u* into *o*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and third plural.

Indicative Present. *odo*, *odi*, *ode*, *udiamo*, *udite*, *odono*, I hear, &c.

Imperfect. *Udivo*, *udivi*, &c. I did hear, &c.

Definite. *Udii*, *udisti*, *udi*, *udimmo*, *udiste*, *udirono*, I heard, &c.

Future. *Udirò*, *udirai*, &c. I shall hear, &c.

Imperative. *Odi*, *oda*, *udiamo*, *udite*, *odano*, hear thou, &c.

Conjunc-

170 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Conjunctive Present. *Oda, a, a, udiamo, udiate, odano, that I hear, &c.*

First Imperfect. *Udirei, udiresti, &c. I should hear, &c.*

Second Imperfect. *Udissi, udissi, udisse, &c. I heard, &c.*

Infinitive. *Udire, to hear.*

Participle. *Udito, heard.*

Gerund. *Udendo, hearing.*

Venire, to come.

Indicative Present. *Vengo, vieni, viene, veniamo, venite, vengono, I come, &c.*

Imperfect. *Venivo, venivi, &c. I did come.*

Definite. *Venni, venisti, venne, venimmo, veniste, vennero, I came, &c.*

Sono venuto, I am come.

Ero } Venuto, I was come.
Fui }

Future. *Verrò, verrai, verrà, verremo, verrete, verranno. I shall come, &c.*

Imperative. *Vieni, venga, veniamo, venite, vengano, come thou, &c.*

Conjunctive Present. *Venga, a, a, veniamo, veniate, vengano, that I come, &c.*

First Imperfect. *Io verrei, tu verresti, I should come, &c.*

Second Imperfect. *Io venissi, venissi, venisse, &c. I came, &c.*

Infinitive. *Venire, to come.*

Participle. *Venuto, come.*

Gerund. *Venendo, coming.*

Uscire,

The
another
sent, w
ing ire
gate thi
the rest.
But
irregular

Uscire, to go out.

Uscire is only irregular in the Present, changing the *u* into *e*, in the first, second and third Persons Singular, and third Plural.

Indicative Present. *Espo, esci, esce, usciamo, uscite, escono*, I go out, &c.

Imperfect. *Uscivo, uscivi*, &c. I did go out, &c.

Definite. *Vscii, uscisti, uscì, uscimmo, usciste, uscirono*, I went out, &c.

Sono uscito, &c. I am gone out, &c.

Ero } uscito, I was gone out.
Fui }

Future. *Uscirò, uscirai*, &c. I shall go out, &c.

Imperative. *Esci, esca, usciamo, usciate, escano*, go out, &c.

Conjunctive. *Esca, a, a, usciamo, usciate, escano*, I go out, &c.

First Imperfect. *Uscirei, usciresti*, &c. I should go out, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Uscissi, uscissi, uscisse*, &c. I did go out, &c.

Infinitive. *Uscire*, to go out.

Participle. *Uscito*, gone out.

Gerund. *Uscendo*, going out.

The third Conjugation of the Verbs in *ire*, has another Kind of Verbs irregular, only in the Present, which are formed from the Infinitive, changing *ire* in *isco*; as, *ardire, ardisco*. I shall conjugate this Verb, that it may serve for a Rule to all the rest.

But in order to give a general Rule about the irregular Verbs in *isco*, note that the following Verbs

Verbs are the only ones that do not end in *isco*, but are conjugated like the regular Verb *dormire*. All the other Verbs in *ire*, that are not in this Collection, have their Termination in *isco*.

<i>Aprire</i> , to open ;	<i>apro</i> ,	<i>aprii</i> ,	<i>aperto</i> .
<i>Bollire</i> , to boil ;	<i>bollo</i> ,	<i>bollii</i> ,	<i>bollito</i> .
<i>Consentire</i> , to consent ;	<i>consento</i> ,	<i>consentii</i> ,	<i>consentito</i> .
<i>Coprire</i> , to cover ;	<i>copro</i> ,	<i>coprii</i> ,	<i>coperto</i> .
<i>Convertire</i> , to convert ;	<i>converto</i> ,	<i>convertii</i> ,	<i>convertito</i> .
<i>Cucire</i> , to sew ;	<i>cucio</i> ,	<i>cucii</i> ,	<i>cucito</i> .
<i>Dormire</i> , to sleep ;	<i>dormo</i> ,	<i>dormii</i> ,	<i>dormito</i> ,
<i>Fuggire</i> , to run away ;	<i>fuggo</i> ,	<i>fuggii</i> ,	<i>fuggito</i> .
<i>Mentire</i> , to lye ;	<i>mento</i> ,	<i>mentii</i> ,	<i>mentito</i> .
<i>Morire</i> , to die ;	<i>moro</i> ,	<i>morii</i> ,	<i>morto</i> .
<i>Partire</i> , to depart ;	<i>parto</i> ,	<i>partii</i> ,	<i>partito</i> .
<i>Pentirsi</i> , to repent ;	<i>mi pento</i> ,	<i>mi pentii</i> ,	<i>pentito</i> .
<i>Salire</i> , to go up ;	<i>salgo</i> ,	<i>salii</i> ,	<i>salito</i> .
<i>Seguire</i> , to follow ;	<i>seguo</i> ,	<i>seguii</i> ,	<i>seguito</i> .
<i>Servire</i> , to serve ;	<i>servo</i> ,	<i>servii</i> ,	<i>servito</i> .
<i>Soffrire</i> , to suffer ;	<i>soffro</i> ,	<i>soffrii</i> ,	<i>sofferto</i> .
<i>Sortire</i> , to go out ;	<i>sorto</i> ,	<i>sortii</i> ,	<i>sortito</i> .
<i>Vestire</i> , to dress ;	<i>vesto</i> ,	<i>vestii</i> ,	<i>vestito</i> .

Note, That some of the Verbs in *isco*, are irregular not only in the Present, but also in the Definite Tense, and in the Participle, viz. these following.

Apparire, to appear, *apparisco*, *apparfi*, *apparso*.
Comparire, to appear before ; *Comparisco*, *comparfi*, *comparso*.

Offerire, to offer ; *offerisco*, *offerii* and *offerfi*, *offerito*.

Istruire, to instruct ; *instruisco*, *instrussi*, *istrutto*.

Proferire, to proffer ; *proferisco*, *proferii*, *proferto*.

Soffrire, to suffer ; *soffro* or *soffrisco*, *soffrii*, *sofferto*.

Sepellire, to bury ; *sepellisco*, *sepellii*, *sepellito* or *sepolto*.

Some

Som
in the
in *isco*

Aprire,
Coprire

S. Fav

Fav

Fove

P. Fav

Fav

Fav

Imperf

Definit

fav

Future.

S. Fav

Fav

P. Fav

Fav

Fav

3. Che f

Che f

Che f

Some are irregular in the Definite Tense, and in the Participle, and have not the Termination in *isco* ; as,

Aprire, to open ; *apro*, *aprii* or *apersi*, *aperto*.

Coprire, to cover ; *copro*, *coprii* or *copersi*, *coperto*.

Conjugation of the Verbs in isco.

Favorire, to favour.

Indicative Present.

S. *Favorisco*, I favour.

Favorisci, thou favourest.

Favorisce, he favoureth.

P. *Favoriamo*, we

Favorite, ye

Favoriscono, they

} favour.

Imperfect. *Favorivo*, *favorivi*, &c. I did favour, &c.

Definite. *Favorii*, *favoristi*, *favorì*, &c. I have favoured, &c.

Future. *Favorirò*, *favorirai*, &c. I shall favour, &c.

Imperative.

S. *Favorisci*, favour thou.

Favorisca, let him favour.

P. *Favoriamo*, let us favour.

Favorite, favour ye.

Favoriscano, let them favour.

Conjunctive Present.

S. *Che favorisca*, that I favour.

Che favorisca, that thou favourest.

Che favorisca, that he favoureth.

P. *Che*

P. *Che favoriamo*, that we
Che favoriate, that ye
Che favoriscano, that they } favour.

First Imperfect. *Favorirci*, *favoriresti*, &c. that I did favour, &c.

Second Imperfect. *Favorissi*, *favorissi*, *favorisse*, that I did favour, &c.

Infinitive. *Favorire*, to favour.

Participle. *Favorito*, favoured.

Gerund. *Favorendo*, favouring.

Note, That several of the Verbs in *isco*, have two Terminations in the Present of the Indicative, both in Verse and Prose ; as, *soffro* and *soffrisco*; *offro* and *offrisco*.

Others have two Terminations only in the third Person singular of the same Tense ; as, *languire* makes *langua* and *languisce* ; *muggire*, *mugge* and *muggisce*.

There are also some Verbs that be of two Conjugations, and have by Consequence a double Termination ; such as,

Colorare and *Colorire*, to colour.

Impazzare and *impazzire*, to grow mad.

Inacerbare and *inacerbire*, to grow sour.

Indurare and *indurire*, to harden.

Innanimare and *innanimire*, to encourage.

Poets use very often the Verbs *Ire* and *Gire*, instead of the Verb *Andare*, to go, which are both Defectives: they are conjugated thus.

Ire, to go.

Imperfect. *Iva*, he went ; *Ivano*, they went.

Imperative. *Ite*, go ye.

Partici-

Participle. *Ito*, gone.

Gire, to go.

Present. *Gite*, ye go.

Imperfect. *Givo*, *givi*, *giva* or *gia*, *givano*, I did go, &c.

Definite. *Gii*, *gisti*, *gì* or *gio*, *gimmo*, *giste*, *girono*, I went, &c.

Imperative. *Gite*, go ye.

Conjunctive.

Second Imperfect. *Gissi*, *gissi*, *gisse*, *gissimo*, *giste*, *gissero*, I did go, &c.

Infinitive. *Gire*, to go.

Participle. *Gito*, gone.

Observations upon the Verb Venire.

The Verb *Venire* may be joined with the Participles passive, to signify a Thing, that could be expressed without this Verb; ex. *egli venne veduta una donna assai bella*, he saw a very handsome Woman; where *venne veduta* is instead of *vidde*, he saw. The same Verb *Venire*, joined with some Participles, takes the place of the Verb *Essere*; ex. *mi vien detto*, I am told; *verrà lodato*, he will be praised.

Of Verbs Neuter.

There are two Sorts of Verbs neuter, the one is active both in Voice and Signification; as, *io dormo*, I sleep; *tu sedì*, thou sittest; *egli parte*, he goes; *noi andiamo*, we go. The other passive in Signification, and is always accompanied by the Particles *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*; as, *mi rallegro*, I am glad;

glad; *mi ricordo*, I remember; *egli si pente*, he is sorry.

The first is called active, because comprehending in it self the Action, and the Impression it produces, it governs no Noun in the Accusative; such as *andare*, *dormire*.

From this Verb one cannot form a passive Verb, as they do of an active Verb; and if sometimes we join the Verb *essere*, to be, to the Participle of the neuter Verb, it takes then the Signification of the *Perfect Tense*; ex. *Io sono amato*, I am loved, is in the Present of the Indicative; and *io sono andato*, I am gone, is in the Perfect.

For the same Reason the Verb Neuter never admits the Definite, or Pluperfect Tense of the Verb *essere*, which is *fui*, or *sono stato*; but we say *io sono andato*, and not *Io fui andato*, or *io sono stato andato*.

The second is called passive, because the Action returns upon the Agent that produces it; as, *io mi levo*, I rise; *io mi rallegro*, I rejoice; *io mi ricordo*, I remember.

It is called also a reciprocal Verb, for the mutual Relation there is between the Nominative of the Verb, and the Case governed by it; as, *Io mi rallegro*, I rejoice, it is I that rejoice, and am rejoiced; *Io mi contristo*, I am troubled; it is I that trouble, and am troubled.

All Verbs may be changed into Neuter Passive, by the help of the conjunctive Pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*; as, *io mi amo*, I love my self; *tu ti consoli*, thou comfortest thy self, &c.

Neuters active are conjugated with the Verb *Avere*; as,

Ho camminato, I have walked.

Ho dovuto, I have owed.

Ho dormito, I have slept.

Ho seduto, I have sate.

Neuters Passive are conjugated with the Verb *essere*, to be ; as,

Sono andato, I went.

Sono arrivato, I arrived.

Sono accorso, I ran unto.

Sono entrato, I entered.

Sono morto, I died.

Sono nato, I was born.

Sono partito, I went away.

Sono passato, I passed.

Sono restato, I stayed.

Sono rimasto, I remained.

Sono ritornato, I returned.

Sono venuto, I came.

Sono uscito, I went out.

Some Verbs are conjugated with either *Avere*, or *essere* ; as,

Fuggire, to fly from, or to shun.

Salire, to go up.

Incontrare, to meet.

Scendere, to come down.

E X A M P L E S.

Ho fuggito i miei nemici, I fled from my Enemies.

Son fuggito da miei nemici, I am shunned by my Enemies.

Ho salito questo monte, I went up this Mountain.

Sono salito a piedi, I went up a-Foot.

Ho incontrato mio fratello, I met my Brother.

Mi sono incontrato in mio fratello, I met my Brother.

Ho sceso il monte, I came down the Hill.

Sono sceso solo, I came down alone.

Mi son fatto male, or *mi ho fatto male*, I have hurt my self.

Of Verbs Impersonal.

Verbs Impersonal are so called, first, because they are often used to express natural Actions that have no Relation to any Man's Person; as, *gela*, it freezes; *fa caldo*, it is hot: And, secondly, because they are conjugated by the third Person singular only.

Verbs Impersonal are of three Sorts; viz. 1st, those that are absolutely and properly such; as, *accade*, it happens; *basta*, it is enough; *bisogna*, one must; *neve*, it snows. 2^{dly}, Those which are active or neuter Verbs, impersonally used by the help of the Particle *si*; as, *si ama*, they love; *si scrive*, they write; *si dice*, they say. And, 3^{dly}, others which have great Affinity with reciprocal Verbs, and are conjugated with the Pronouns Conjunctive *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, or *le*, *ci*, *vi*; as, *mi duole*, it hurts me; *gli or le duole*.

The Verbs absolutely Impersonal are,

Accade } It happens.
Aviene, }

Basta, it is enough,

Bisogna, one must.

Grandina, it hails.

Nevica, it snows.

Pare, it seems.

Piove, it rains.

Lampeggia, it lightens.

Tuon

Tuona, it thunders, &c. which are conjugated by the third Person Singular, through all Moods and Tenses, according to the Conjugation they are of; as,

Nevicare, to snow.

Indicative, Present. *Nevica*, it snows.

Imperfect. *Nevicava*, it did snow.

Definite. *Nevicò*, it hath snowed.

Perfect. *Ha nevicato*, it hath snowed.

First Pluperfect. *Aveva nevicato* } it had snow-

Second Pluperfect. *Ebbe nevicato* } ed.

Future. *Nevicherà*, it will snow.

Imperative. *Che nevichi*, let it snow.

Conjunctive, Present. *Che nevichi*, that it snow.

First Imperfect. *Nevicherebbe*, it would, could, or should snow.

Second Imperfect. *Nevicasse*, it snowed.

Perfect. *Abbia nevicato*, it hath snowed.

First Pluperfect. *Averebbe nevicato* } it had snow-

Second Pluperfect. *Avesse nevicato* } ed.

Future. *Averà nevicato*, it shall have snowed.

Infinitive. *Nevicare*, to snow; *aver nevicato*, to have snowed.

Participle. *Nevicato*, snowed.

Gerund. *Nevicando*, snowing.

The Participle *si*, that composes the second Sort of Impersonal Verbs, is put indifferently either before, or after the Verbs; as, *si ama*, or *amasi*; they love; *si dice*, or *dicesi*; they say. In this manner all active Verbs may become Impersonal. They are conjugated in *Italian* by the third Persons singular and plural; as,

Amare, to love.

Indicative. *Amasi* or *si ama*, *amansi* or *si amano*, they love. *Amavasi* or *si amava*, *amavansi*

or *si amavano*, *amossi* or *si amo'*, *amaronsi* or *si amaronò*, they loved. And so of the rest through all Moods and Tenses.

Bisogna, one must.

Indicative. *Bisogna*, *bisognava*, *bisognò*, *bisognerà*.

Conjunctive. *Che bisogna*, *bisognerebbe*, *bisognasse*.

This Verb is used several Ways in *Italian*.

First, Before the Conjunctive Mood, with the Particle *Che*, which Conjunctive is rendered in *English* by the Infinitive; as, *bisogna che io vada*, I must go; *bisogna che tu legga*, thou must read; *bisogna che egli mangi*, he must eat; *bisognerebbe che io andassi*, I should go.

Secondly, It is used before the Infinitive Mood, either in an indeterminate Signification; as, *bisogna far ciò*, that must be done; or with these Personal Pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, or *le*, *ci*, *vi*; as, *mi bisogna partire*, I must be gone; *ci bisogna aver pazienza*, we must have Patience; *gli bisognò lasciare i suoi amici*, he was forced to leave his Friends.

Thirdly, It is sometimes used at the End of a Sentence, in this manner; *voi fate quel che bisogna*, you do what you should do, or what is fitting.

Fourthly, It is used before Substantives, either absolutely, or with these Pronouns Personal, *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, or *le*, *ci*, *vi*, *loro*; but then the Verb *bisognare* agrees with the Substantive, and it is used in the third Person plural, if the Substantive be of that Number; as, *bisognano danari per fare la guerra*, Money must be had to make War; *mi bisogna del pane*, I must have Bread; *ci bisogna cavalli*, we must have Horses.

How

How to express in Italian, *there is, there was, &c.*

There is, in Italian is expressed two Ways, viz. by *c'è*, when we speak of a Place where we are present; ex. *non c'è fuoco in questa camera*, there is no Fire in this Room; and by *v'è*, when we speak of a Place where we are not present; *ieri andai all' opera, ma il Re non vi fu*, Yesterday I went to the Opera, but the King was not there.

To render it more easy, I put here the Conjugation of the Verb *essere*, with the Adverb *ci* and *vi*.

Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb essere, to be with the Adverbs ci, and vi.

Indicative Present.

Near, with *ci*.

Distant, with *vi*.

There is, <i>c'è</i> , or <i>ci sono</i> .	<i>v'è</i> , or <i>vi sono</i> ?
Is there? <i>c'è</i> ? or <i>ci sono</i> ?	<i>v'è</i> ? or <i>vi sono</i> ?
There is not, <i>non c'è</i> , or <i>non ci sono</i> .	<i>non v'è</i> , or <i>non vi sono</i> .
There is some, <i>cen'è</i> , <i>cene sono</i> ,	<i>ven'è</i> , <i>vene sono</i> .
There is none, <i>non cen'è</i> , <i>non cene sono</i> .	<i>non ven'è</i> , <i>non vene sono</i> .

Imperfect.

There was, <i>c'era</i> , or <i>c'erano</i> ,	<i>v'era</i> , <i>v'erano</i> .
There was not, <i>non c'era</i> , <i>non c'erano</i> ,	<i>non v'era</i> , <i>non v'erano</i> .
There was some, <i>cen'era</i> , <i>cen'erano</i> ,	<i>venea</i> , <i>ven'erano</i> .
There was none, <i>non cen'era</i> , <i>non cen'erano</i> .	<i>non ven'era</i> , <i>non ven'erano</i> .

Definite.

There was, <i>ci fu, ci furono.</i>	<i>vi fu, vi furono,</i>
There was not, <i>non ci fu, non ci furono,</i>	<i>non vi fu, non vi furono.</i>
There was some, <i>cene fu, cene furono.</i>	<i>vene fu, vene furono.</i>
There was none, <i>non cene fu, non cene furono.</i>	<i>non vene fu, non vene furono.</i>

Preterperfect.

There has been, <i>c'è stato, ci sono stati.</i>	<i>v'è stato, vi sono stati.</i>
There has not been, <i>non c'è stato, non ci sono stati,</i>	<i>non v'è stato, non vi sono stati.</i>
There has been some, <i>cen'è stato, cene sono stati.</i>	<i>ven'è stato, vene sono stati.</i>
There has been none, <i>non cen'è stato, non cene sono stati.</i>	<i>non ven'è stato, non vene sono stati.</i>

Pluperfect.

There had been, <i>c'era stato, c'erano stati,</i>	<i>v'era stato, v'erano stati.</i>
There had not been, <i>non c'era stato, non c'erano stati,</i>	<i>non v'era stato, non v'erano stati.</i>
There had been some, <i>cen'era stato, cen'erano stati.</i>	<i>ven'era stato, ven'erano stati.</i>

Future.

There will be, <i>ci sarà, ci saranno.</i>	<i>vi sarà, vi saranno.</i>
There will not be, <i>non ci sarà, non ci saranno.</i>	<i>non vi sarà, non vi saranno.</i>
There will be some, <i>cene sarà, cene saranno.</i>	<i>vene sarà, vene saranno.</i>
There will be none, <i>non cene sarà, non cene saranno.</i>	<i>non vene sarà, non vene saranno.</i>

And so in all the other Tenses.

CHAP

A
of a
AP
The
ter (on
ends in
Partici
Partici
essendo,
as, ave
being
The
Conjug
fare, th
The
make t
ricevuto
differen
Anto ;
Arfo ;
Afo ;
Ato ;
Elto ;
Ento ;
Erfo ;
Efo ;
Efo ;
Esto ;
Into ;

CHAP. V.

Of Participles.

A Participle is a Part of Speech, so called, because it partakes something of the Nature of a Noun, and something of that of a Verb.

A Participle is twofold, viz. *Active* and *Passive*.

The *Participle Active*, is either Present, or Preter (or Past.) The Present is simple, and always ends in *ante*, or in *ente*; as, *amante*, *leggente*. The Participle Preter or Past, is compounded of the Participle Present of the Auxiliaries, viz. *avendo*, *essendo*, and the Participle Passive of every Verb; as, *avendo amato*, having loved; *essendo arrivato*, being arrived.

The Participle Passive ends in *ato* in the first Conjugation; as, *amato*, *portato*, *cantato*; except *fare*, that makes *fatto*.

The regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation, make their Participles in *uto*; as, *creduto*, *temuto*, *ricevuto*, *goduto*. But the Verbs irregular have different Terminations, viz. in

<i>Anto</i> ;	<i>piango</i> ,	<i>pianfi</i> ,	<i>pianto</i> ,	<i>piangere</i> .
<i>Arso</i> ;	<i>spargo</i> ,	<i>sparsi</i> ,	<i>sparso</i> ,	<i>spargere</i> .
<i>Aso</i> ;	<i>rimango</i> ,	<i>rimasi</i> ,	<i>rimaso</i> ,	<i>rimanere</i> .
<i>Ato</i> ;	<i>nasco</i> ,	<i>nacqui</i> ,	<i>nato</i> ,	<i>nascere</i> .
<i>Elto</i> ;	<i>sceglia</i> ,	<i>scelsi</i> ,	<i>scelto</i> ,	<i>scegliere</i> .
<i>Ento</i> ,	<i>spugno</i> ,	<i>spensi</i> ,	<i>spento</i> ,	<i>spegnere</i> .
<i>Erso</i> ;	<i>dispergo</i> ,	<i>dispersi</i> ,	<i>disperso</i> ,	<i>dispergere</i> .
<i>Eso</i> ;	<i>difendo</i> ,	<i>difesi</i> ,	<i>difeso</i> ,	<i>difendere</i> .
<i>Esso</i> ;	<i>metto</i> ,	<i>misi</i> ,	<i>messo</i> ,	<i>mettere</i> .
<i>Esto</i> ;	<i>chiedo</i> ,	<i>chiesi</i> ,	<i>chiesto</i> ,	<i>chiedere</i> .
<i>Into</i> ;	<i>cingo</i> ,	<i>cinfi</i> ,	<i>cinto</i> ,	<i>cingere</i> .

<i>Ifo</i> ;	<i>divido,</i>	<i>divisi,</i>	<i>diviso,</i>	<i>dividere.</i>
<i>Itto</i> ;	<i>affliggo,</i>	<i>afflissi,</i>	<i>afflitto,</i>	<i>affliggere.</i>
<i>Iuto</i> ;	<i>accresco,</i>	<i>accrebbi,</i>	<i>accresciuto,</i>	<i>accreocere.</i>
<i>Olto</i> ;	<i>colgo,</i>	<i>colsi,</i>	<i>colto,</i>	<i>cogliere.</i>
<i>Orso</i> ;	<i>corro,</i>	<i>corsi,</i>	<i>corso,</i>	<i>correre.</i>
<i>Orto</i> ;	<i>accorgo,</i>	<i>accorsi,</i>	<i>accorto,</i>	<i>accorgere.</i>
<i>Oso</i> ;	<i>nascondo,</i>	<i>nascosi,</i>	<i>nascoso or nascosto,</i>	<i>nascondere.</i>
<i>Osto</i> ;	<i>pongo,</i>	<i>posi,</i>	<i>posto,</i>	<i>ponere or porre.</i>
<i>Otto</i> ;	<i>cuoco,</i>	<i>coffi,</i>	<i>cotto,</i>	<i>cuocere.</i>
<i>Unto</i> ;	<i>giungo,</i>	<i>giunsi,</i>	<i>giunto,</i>	<i>giugnere.</i>
<i>Uso</i> ;	<i>chiudo,</i>	<i>chiusi,</i>	<i>chiuso,</i>	<i>chiudere.</i>
<i>Utto</i> ;	<i>struggo,</i>	<i>strussi,</i>	<i>strutto,</i>	<i>struggere.</i>

Note, That all these different Terminations are for the Verbs in *ere* short; because all the Participles of the Verbs in *ere* long do terminate in *uto*; as, *saputo, bevuto*: Except these, *persuasato, rimasato, solito, parso*, from *persuadere, rimanere, solere, parere*.

In order to form the Participles of the Verbs in *ere* short, you must observe what follows.

1. The Verbs in *do*, and in *ro*, make *si* in the Definite, and *so* in the Participle.

Ardo, arsi, arso, ardere, to burn.

Chiudo, chiusi, chiuso, chiudere, to shut.

Decido, decisi, deciso, decidere, to decide.

Corro, corsi, corso, correre, to run.

Scorro, scorsi, scorso, scorrere, to run over.

2. Those in *co*, *go*, *glio*, and *vo*, make *si* and *so*; as,

Vinco, vinsi, vinto, vincere, to overcome.

Cingo, cinsi, cinto, cingere and cignere, to gird.

Porgo, porsi, porto, porgere, to reach.

Spegno and *spengo*, *spensi*, *spento*, *spegnere*, to extinguish.

Sorgo, *sorfi*, *sorto*, *sorgere*, to rise.

Volgo, *volfi*, *volto*, *volgere*, to turn.

Colgo, *colfi*, *colto*, *cogliere*, to gather.

Tolgo or } *tolfi*, *tolto*, *togliere*, to take away.
Toglio }

3. When the Termination of these Verbs is pure, that is to say, when there is a Vowel before *do*, *co*, *go*, *glio*, &c. the *s* is doubled in the Definite, and by Consequence the *s* or the *t* in the Participle ; as,

Concedo, *concessi*, *concesso*, *concedere*, to grant.

Cuoco, *coffi*, *cotto*, *cuocere*, to bake.

Dico, *disfi*, *detto*, *dire* for *dicere*, to say.

Muovo, *moffi*, *mosso*, *muovere*, to move.

Scrivo, *scrissi*, *scritto*, *scrivere*, to write.

Vivo, *vissi*, *vissuto* and *vivuto*, *vivere*, to live.

4. Those in *ggo* and *tto*, double also the *s* in the Definite, and the *t* in the Participle, because of the double Consonant of the Indicative ; as,

Leggo, *lessi*, *letto*, *leggere*, to read.

Friggo, *frissi*, *fritto*, *friggere*, to fry.

Traggo, *traffi*, *tratto*, *trarre*, to draw.

Metto, *messi*, *messo*, *mettere*, to put.

Rifletto, *rifleffi*, *riflesso*, *riflettere*, to reflect.

Commetto, *commessi*, *commesso*, *commettere*, to commit.

5. The *n* is often lost in the Definite, and Participle, particularly in Verbs in *ndere* ; as,

Fondo, *fusi*, *fuso*, *fondere*, to melt.

Prendo, *presi*, *preso*, *prendere*, to take.

Scendo, *scesi*, *sceso*, *scendere*, to come down.

Spendo,

Spendo, spesi, speso, spendere, to spend.

Tendo, tesi, teso, tendere, to stretch.

Nascondo, nascosi, nascofo and nascosto, nascondere, to hide.

The Verbs of the third Conjugation in *Ire*, make their Participle in *Ito*; as, *sentire, sentito; finire, finito*: Except, *Apparire, apparso; coprire, coperto; aprire, aperto; comparire, comparso; dire, detto; morire, morto; offerire, offerto; venire, venuto*.

All the Participles of the first Conjugation are formed of the Infinitive, by striking off *re*, and adding *to*; as, *amare, amato*; of the second Conjugation, by striking off *ere*, and adding *uto*; as, *credere, creduto*; and of the third Conjugation, by striking off *re*, and adding *ito*; as, *sentire, sentito*; and as for the Use of them, we shall speak of it in the Syntax.

CH A P. VI.

Of Adverbs.

AN Adverb is a Part of Speech, which is generally put before or after Verbs, and is sometimes joined with Nouns, to express their different Circumstances, or fill up their Signification; ex. *Parlar bene*, to speak well; *scrivere male*, to write ill; *esser spesso ammalato*, to be often sick; *cantare perfettamente*, to sing to Perfection.

Some Adverbs are expressed in one Word; as, *bene*, well; *male*, ill; *spesso*, often. Some consist of a Preposition and a Noun; as, *all'improvviso*,

so, unawares; in *disparte*, apart; *alle volte*, sometimes, &c.

There are several Sorts of Adverbs; as, of Time, of Place, of Quantity, or Quality, &c. One cannot give a general Rule about the forming of the Adverbs. Those that mark Quality, are generally form'd of an Adjective Feminine, by adding *mente*; so of *dotta* is formed the Adverb *dottamente*, learnedly; from *sana*, *sanamente*, wholesomely, &c.

They are formed also of the Superlative Feminine; as, *dottissima*, *dottissimamente*, most learnedly.

However, I would not make it a general Rule, because all Adverbs are not formed of the Adjectives; nor are all Adjectives proper to form Adverbs.

If Nouns Adjective end in *le* or *re*, you must take off the last *e*, and put *mente* instead of the *e*; as, *crudele*, cruel, *crudelmente*, cruelly; *mortale*, mortal, *mortalmente*, mortally; *particolare*, particular, *particolarmente*, particularly, &c.

We have in our Language several Adjectives, which, without changing them, serve as Adverbs; as, *forte*, for *fortemente*, strongly; *dolce*, for *dolcemente*, sweetly; *certo* for *certamente*, certainly; *soave* for *soavemente*, agreeably.

Adverbs of Time.

Hor, *hora*, *adesso*, now.

Prima, before.

Ultimamente, lately.

Nuovamente, } newly.
Di fresco, }

Poco fa, } not long since or ago.
Guari, }

Da indi, innanzi, hereafter, henceforth.*All'avvenire*, for the future.*Fra poco*, shortly.*Da qui a due mesi*, in two Months.*Sempre*, always.*Mai*, never.*Per sempre*, always, for ever.*Spesso*, often.*Di rado*, seldom.*Subito*, immediately, or forthwith.*Oggi*, to Day.*Ieri*, Yesterday.*Avantieri*, or } the Day before Yesterday.*Ier l'altro*,*Iersera*, Yesternight, or last Night.*Iermattina*, Yesterday Morning.*Domani*, To Morrow.*Domattina*, To Morrow Morning.*Posdomani*, after to Morrow.*Altre volte*, } formerly, of old.*Gia*,*Ad ogni momento*, every Moment.*Ogni giorno*, every Day.*Giornalmente*, daily.*Frattanto*, in the mean while.*Per tre giorni*, during three Days.*Digià*, already.*Non ancora*, not yet.*Di notte*, in the Night-time.*Di giorno*, in the Day-time.*Tardi*, late.*Di buon ora*, betimes.*Di buon mattino*, early.*Tosto*, soon.*Di nuovo*, again.*Quando*, when.*Teste*,

Testè, just now.

Presto, quickly.

Ancora, yet.

Allora, then.

Poi, then.

Dipoi, since.

Di qua a poco, in a little time.

R E M A R K S.

Note, That the same Adverbs of Interrogation, may serve also to answer, ex.

Quando andrai ? When shall you go ?

Quando potrò, when I can.

Quanto starai ? how long will you stay ?

Quanto vorrai, as long as you will.

Quando is sometimes a conditional Particle that signifies *if* ; as, *quando tu voglia venire, averò cura, che niente ti manchi*, if you will come, I will take care, that you shall want nothing.

Adverbs of Place.

Adverbs of Place are of two Sorts, some serve to ask, and some serve to answer.

There are but two Adverbs of Place, that serve to ask ; *dove*, where ; and *donde*, from whence ; however, the different Particles, or Verbs of Motion or Rest, form six, which are :

Dove sei ? Where are you ?

Dove vai ? Whither are you going.

Donde vieni ? From whence come you ?

Verso dove andrai ? Towards what Place shall you go ?

Donde passerai ? By what Place shall you go ?

Fin dove andrai ? How far shall you go ?

The

The same Adverbs *dove* and *donde*, which serve to ask, may serve also to answer, when they are Relatives to what preceeds.

Dove sei? Where are you? *Dove mi vedi*, where you see me.

Donde passerai? By what Place shall you go?

Per donde passai hieri, by the Place I went Yesterday.

Ove sei? Where are you?

To the Question *ove sei?* We answer with the following Adverbs.

Qui, there.

Qui } there.

Qua } there.

Costi } there, or here.

Costa }

là } there.

lì }

Per tutto, every where.

Su, up.

Giu, down.

Dietro, behind.

Entro } within.

dentro }

Fuori, without.

Sotto, under.

Sopra, upon.

Vicino, near.

Ovunque, every where.

Donde vieni? From whence come you.

To the second Question *donde vieni*, we answer with the following Adverbs, adding *di*, or *da*.

Di qui or *quinci*, from hence.

Di lì or *di là*, from thence.

Di costi, *di costinci*, from hence.

Quindi or *indi*, from thence.

D'altronde, from another Place.

Di lontano, from far.

D'appresso, from hard by.

Quinci su, from above.

Quincentro, from here within.

Dove

Dove vai? Where are you going?

To the Question *dove vai?* we answer with the following Adverbs.

Qua, here.

Là or *colà*, there.

Costà, here.

Lassù, above.

Laggiù, below.

Costa-giù, here below.

Colassù, there above.

Dentro, within.

Fuori, without.

Verso, towards.

Verso dove andrai? Towards what Place
shall you go?

To the Question *verso dove andrai*, we answer with the following Adverbs.

Verso qua, towards this Place.

Verso là, towards that Place.

Verso la casa, towards Home.

Donde passerai? by what Place shall you go?

To the Question *donde passerai*, we answer with the following Adverbs.

Di qua, this way.

Di là, that way.

Note, That we use also the Preposition *per* or *da*, either for to answer, or to ask. *Per dove passerai?* by what Place shall you go? *Per Fiorenza*, by Florence; *da Roma*, by Rome.

Fine

Fin dove anderai ? How far shall you go ?

To the Question *fin dove anderai ?* we answer with these Adverbs.

Fin qua, to this Place.

Fin là, to that Place.

Fin costà, as far as this, or hitherto.

Fin colà, as far as that, or thitherto.

And with several others, that are proper to be joined with *fino*, which often becomes a Preposition ; *fino a casa*, as far as home ; *fino al mare*, as far as the Sea.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Quanto, how much.

Quanti, how many.

Troppo, too much, too many.

Molto, much, or a great deal.

Molti, many.

Più, d'avantaggio, more.

Meno, less.

Un pochettino, but a little.

Nient affatto, not at all.

Tanto, so much.

Altretanto, as much.

Al più, at the most.

Almeno, at least.

Per meno, for less.

Quasi, almost.

Non molto, not much.

Affatto, quite.

Del tutto, entirely.

Adverbs of Number.

Una volta, once.

Due volte, twice.

Tre volte, thrice, or three times.

Tante volte, so many times.

Molte volte, several times.

Quante volte, how many times.

Adverbs of Order.

Primieramente, first, in the first Place.

Secondariamente, secondly, in the second Place.

In terzo luogo, thirdly, in the third Place.

Sopra tutto, above all.

Al postutto, altogether.

In giro, by turns.

In ordine, in order, orderly.

In fine, alla fine, in fine, at last.

Alla fila, in a File, one after another.

Insieme, together.

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Certo, di certo, }

Per certo, certamente, } certainly.

Veramente, di vero, }

In vero, nel vero, in verità, } truly, in truth.

A fè, in faith.

Al sicuro, certainly.

Al fermo, }

Per fermo, } assuredly.

Bene, sì bene, yes indeed.

Sì, }

Mai sì, } yes.

In verità, indeed, in truth.

A dire il vero, to speak the Truth.

Perche no? why not?

Adverbs of Negation or Denial.

Non, no.

Ne, no, not.

Non mai, }

Non giamai, } never.

Per nulla, }

Per niente, } by no means.

Miga, ne miga, non miga, not at all.

In conto alcuno, in no wise.

Adverbs of Doubt.

Forse, }

Forse che, } perhaps, may be.

Per aventura, by chance.

Puo essere, that may be.

Adverbs of Interrogation.

Che?

Perche? } why? what?

Perche così? why so?

Perche no? why not?

Come? how?

In che modo? in what manner?

Adverbs of Reason.

Perche,

Perciocche,

A causa che,

Imperocche,

} because.

Adverbs of Choice.

Più tosto, } rather.

Più presto, } sooner.

Meglio, better, sooner.

Sopra tutto, above all.

Anzi, } rather.

Prima, } sooner

Adverbs of Comparison.

Come, as, like.

Così, so, thus.

Più, more.

Meno, less.

Sicome, as.

A guisa, like.

A modo, like.

Vieppiù, much more.

Viemeno, much less.

Tanto, }

Quanto, } as much.

Adverbs

Adverbs of Demonstration.

Ecco, there is, here is, or behold.

Ecco qui, here is.

Ecco li, there is.

Adverbs of Excess.

Affai, a great deal.

Pur affai, very much.

Ecceffivamente, excessively.

Un mondo, a World.

Oltre ogni credenza, beyond all Belief.

Smisuratamente, beyond Measure.

Di gran lunga, by far.

Fuor di misura, beyond Measure.

Adverbs of Exception or Restriction.

Solamente, } only.

Solo,

Purche, provided.

Se non se, except.

Con patto che, upon Condition.

Fuori,

Eccetto, } except.

Salvo,

Adverbs of Confusion.

Confusamente, confusedly.

Alla rovescia, the wrong way.

Adverbs of Aggregation.

Insieme, together.

Unitamente, jointly.

Adverbs of Separation.

Separatamente, separately.

Da parte, apart.

Particolarmente, } particularly, especially.

In particolare,

Ognun da se, by it's self.

Adverbs of Design.

Apposta,

A bello studio, } on purpose, purposely.

A bella posta,

A disegno, designedly.

Deliberatamente, } confiderately, advifedly.

Espreffamente,

Da vero, in good earnest.

Adverbs of Rashness.

Alla ftordita, rashly, heedlefsly.

Temerariamente, rashly.

In fretta, in hafte.

Inconfideratamente, at random, rashly.

Precipitadamente, with Precipitation.

Adverbs of Difficulty.

Appena,

A mala pena, } hardly, fcarce.

A contro voglia,

Mal volontieri, } againft one's Will.

Adverbs of Haste.

Prefto,

Subito, } quickly.

Prontamente,

In fretta, } in hafte.

Frettolofamente,

In un subito, on a fudden.

Adverbs of Moderation.

Poco a poco, by little and little, by degrees.

Passo a passo, Step by Step.

Bel bello, softly, gently.

Adagio, softly.

Adverbs to express different Motions of the Body.

Inginocchione, upon one's Knees.

Tentone,
Brancolone, } groping.

Carpone, upon all Fours.

A pie, on Foot.

A cavallo, on Horseback.

A cavaleione, a straddle.

Boccone, upon one's Belly.

A rovescio, upon one's Back.

In sulla vita, upright.

Adverbs of Quality.

Cortesemente, courteously.

Debitamente, deservedly.

Giustamente, justly.

Infinitamente, infinitely.

Mediocrementemente, indifferently.

Bene, well.

Meglio, better.

Male, ill.

Peggio, worse.

C H A P. VII.

Of Prepositions.

A Preposition is a Part of Speech which is put before Nouns, and sometimes before Verbs, &c. to explain some particular Circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into Separable and inseparable. An inseparable Preposition is never found but in compound Words, and signifies nothing of it self; such as, *di, dis, es*; ex. *dipendere*, to depend; *disfare*, to undo; *esporre*, to expose. A separable Preposition is generally separated from other Words, and signifies something of it self; as, *sopra*, upon; *sotto*, under.

The Inseparable Prepositions are,

Arci; *Arciduca*, an Arch-Duke.

Di; *dipendere*, to depend.

Dis; *disfare*, to undo.

Es; *esporre*, to expose.

Fras; *frastuono*, a great Noise.

Inter; *interporre*, to interpose.

Intro; *intromettere*, to meddle.

Mis; *misfatto*, a Crime.

Pos; *posporre*; to postpone.

Pre; *prevenire*, to prevent.

Pro; *promettere*, to promise.

Ra; *raccogliere*, to gather.

Re; *respirare*, to breathe.

Ri; *riprendere*, to take again.

Ris; *risciacquare*, to rinse again.

Sor; *sorridere*, to smile.

Sos; *sostenere*, to support.

Sot; *sottomettere*, to submit.

These Prepositions have three Effects: Either to increase; as, *Vescovo*, a Bishop; *Arcivescovo*, an Archbishop: Or to diminish; as, *ridere*, I laugh; *sorrido*, I smile: Or to change; as, *porre*, I put; *postporre*, I postpone.

Dis, serves to express the contrary of the Word it is joined to; as, *dispiacere*, to displease.

please; *disfare*, to undo; are the contrary of *piacere* and *fare*.

Note, That almost all Words composed of this Preposition may quit the *di*, and leave only the *s*; as, *spiacere*, instead of *dispiacere*.

On the other Side, almost all the Words that begin with an *s*, may receive the *di*, or at least an *i*; as, *spoglio*, *dispoglio*, I strip; *sgombro*, *disgombro*, and *isgombro*, I empty. *Ra*, *Ri*, mark a Reiteration of the Action; as, *raccogliere*, to gather again; *ripigliare*, to retake; *risciacquare*, to rinse again.

Sometimes the Particle *ra* makes no Difference in the Signification of the primitive Word; as, *rallentare*, *rassicurare*, *racquistare*, have the same Signification of *allentare*, to slacken; *assicurare*, to assure; *acquistare*, to acquire.

Of separable Prepositions, some govern the Genitive, some the Dative, others the Accusative.

Prepositions that govern the Genitive or Dative.

Accanto, *allato*, by, near.

Adosso or *Addosso*, upon.

A fronte or *affronte*, over-against.

All' incontro, before, opposite, over-against.

A piè or *appiè*, at the Foot.

A petto, in Comparison, or over-against.

A rimpetto or *dirimpetto*, opposite, over-against.

Prima, before.

Appresso, by, or near.

Avanti or *avante*, before.

Circa, about.

Contra, against.

Dentro, within.
Dietro, behind.
Davanti, before.
Fino or *sino*, till, or until.
Fuori, without.
Lungi or *lunge*, far.
Dinanzi, } before.
Innanzi, }
Oltre, besides.
Sotto, under.

Prepositions that govern the Accusative or Genitive.

Doppo, after.
Avanti, before.
Con, with.
In mezzo, in the middle.
Da, at or to.
Contra, against.
In, in.
Nell, *nella*, *nello*, in, or in the.
Dentro, within.
Fuori, without.
Dietro, behind.
Sotto, under.
Sopra, upon.
Fra, *tra*, between.
Verso, towards.
Eccetto, except.
Fuori, without.
A lato, by.
Rasente, near.
Per, for.
Presso, } by, or near.
Vicino, }

Senza,

Senza, without.

Secondo, according.

Circa, about.

CH A P. VIII.

Of Conjunctions.

A Conjunction is a Part of Speech which serves to join, and connect the several Parts of a Discourse.

Conjunctions are divided into several Orders, of which some are,

Conjunctions copulative, or to join.

E or *et*, *ed*, and.

Anche, *anco*,

Ancora, *eziandio* } also, still, yet.

R E M A R K S.

Et is the Conjunction all Languages most frequently use. We use indifferently the Conjunction *e* or *et*, before the Words that begin with a Consonant, and *et* or *ed* before those that begin with a Vowel; although *ed* is better said than *et*.

In the Pronunciation, the *t* of the Word *et*, before a Word that begins with a Consonant, is never pronounced.

E sometimes is used instead of *nondimeno*, yet; as, *poco vedite, e parvi veder molto*, you see but little, and yet you think you see a great deal.

Et

Et or *ed* are placed at the Beginning of a Discourse, and they are expressed in *English* by *Both* ; *ex.*

Ed amici, e nemici, tutti mi sono egualmente contrarii, both Friends and Foes are equally against me.

Disjunctive, or to separate.

O, ovvero, o pure, or.

Ancorche, though.

Ne, neither, nor.

Tampoco, neither.

Benche, } although, or though.

Sebbene, }

R E M A R K S.

When a Vowel follows, we write, *od* ; however, one may write, *o*, or *od*.

Adversative, i. e. shewing some Contrariety.

Ma, but.

Pure, yet, in the mean time.

Nondimeno, } however, yet.

Intanto, }

Pure, però, }

Tutta via, } yet, but still.

Tutta volta, }

Nulladimeno, nevertheless.

Conditional.

Se, if.

Se mai, if ever.

Con patto, che, upon Condition that.

Con questo però, upon this Condition.

Quando, } if.

Ogni volta, che }

Purchè,

Purchè,
Tutte le volte che, } provided.
A meno che, unless, except.

Causal, or giving Reason of what is said.

Che, perchè,
Perochè, perciocchè, } because.
Affinche, that, to the end that.

Illatives.

There is no other Difference between the Conjunctions causal and illative, but only that the first always preceeds the Reason of what is said, and the others, on the contrary, are always preceeded by them.

Adunque, dunque, then.

Perciò,
Onde, } therefore.
La onde, }

Per la qual cose, therefore.

Per conseguenza, by Consequence.

Dunque is placed sometimes at the Beginning of a Discourse, and implies a certain disdainful Reproach; Ex.

Dunque sarò io sempre acciecatò dal tuo amore!
 What, shall I be always blinded by your Love.

Final, or giving Reason why we do a Thing.

Acciocchè, } that, to the End that.
Affine }

Che, that.

Per, for, in order to.

Conclusive.

Dunque, therefore, then.

Di maniera che, so that.*Però*, } therefore.*Laonde*, }*Perciò*, therefore*Continuative:**Del resto*, as for the rest.*Hora*, now.*Poiche*, } since.*Posciache*, }*In guisa che*, } so as, in likewise.*In maniere che*, }*Pure*, however, yet.*Ma se*, but if.*Se non*, save, but, if not.

Note, by the way, that Conjunctions are oftentimes confounded with the Adverbs, and that they have several other Names, according to the several Senses they are used in.

C H A P. IX.

Of Interjections.

THE Interjection is a Part of Speech that serves to express the sudden Motions and Transports of the Soul.

There are several Sorts of Interjections; such as,

*Of Joy.**Ha! ha! ha! ha! ha!**Orsù, animo*, come, come on.*O che allegrezza!* oh Joy!*Su, allegramente!* come be chearful.*Of*

Of Grief.

Abi! ab! alas! ah!

Oime! alas!

*Oime lasso! }
Lasso me! } alas poor me.*

Me misero! poor Wretch that I am.

Ob Dio! oh, my God.

Of Pain.

Ai! oh! oh! oh oh!

To encourage.

Animo, su, come, come.

Orsu, via,

Su via, come on.

To warn.

*Badate a voi, }
State in cervello, } have a care.*

Pian piano, softly.

Fermati, olà, hold, hold.

To call.

Olà, ho there, ho hey.

Chi è lì, who is there?

Of Admiration.

O! vedi! lack-a-day! fee!

Cappita! ay, marry.

Of Aversion.

Oibò, fie, fough.

Eb va via, fie upon you.

Of Silence.

St, zitto, hush, ft.

Silenzio, Silence.

Tacete, Peace there.

C H A P. X.

Of the Syntax.

TH E Syntax or Construction is the last Part of Grammar, which treats of the due ordering of the several Parts of Speech, towards the regular Composition of Sentences or Phrases.

ARTICLE I.

Of the Construction of Articles.

Although what I have said already in the foregoing Chapter about Articles, and the Declension of Nouns, may be sufficient ; yet the right using those Particles being one of the greatest Niceties of the *Italian* Tongue, I shall endeavour to make the whole Matter as plain as possible, by the following Observations.

First OBSERVATION.

We use the Articles, *il, la, i, le*, with their oblique Cases, *del, della, al, alla, dal, dalla*, before Nouns, which are taken sometimes in a *Definite*, and sometimes in an *Indefinite* Sense.

E X A M P L E S.

Of a Definite Sense.

L'uomo, che vedete the
Man you see.

La donna che voi amate,
the Woman you love.

I fig-

Of an Indefinite Sense.

L'uomo è un animale ra-
gionevole, Man is a
rational Animal.

La donna è stata creata
per

I figliuoli di mio padre,
my Father's Children.

Parlo del libro, che m'avete mandato, I speak of the Book you have sent me.

Ricordatevi della promessa, che m'avete fatta, remember the Promise you made me.

Ho parlato di voial Principe, ed alla Principessa, I spoke of you to the Prince and Princess.

Ci ha fatto la descrizione delle città d'Italia, he gave us the Description of the Cities of Italy.

Ne parlerò agli miei amici, I will speak of it to my Friends.

Un buon capitano, è amato da suoi soldati, a good Captain is beloved by his Soldiers.

per ajuto dell' uomo,
the Woman was created for a Help to Man.

I figliuoli devono ubbidire à loro Parenti,
Children ought to obey their Parents.

Ho bevuto del vino a pranso, I drank some Wine at Dinner.

Gli uni sono dediti al vizio, gli altri alla virtù, some are given to Vice, some to Virtue.

Il favore de Principi è incerto, the Favour of Princes is uncertain.

Bisogna parlar con rispetto alle dame, one must speak respectfully to the Ladies.

Dalle disgrazie altrui, dobbiamo imparare ad evitarle, from other Men's Misfortunes, we ought to learn how to shun them.

Second OBSERVATION:

The Articles, *di, a, da,* are either Definite, or Indefinite, according to the Signification of the Nouns they are joined to.

E X A M P L E S.

Of a Definite Sense. | Of an Indefinite Sense.

La potenza di Dio è grande, God's Power is great. | *E un comando di Re,* it is a King's Command.

Ho detto a Pietro, che, I told Peter, that. | *Non ne parlerò a nessuno,* I shall speak of it to no Body.

Abbiamo parlato di voi stamattina, we spoke of you this Morning. | *Iddio ci liberi da male,* God deliver us from Evil.

Ho inteso da mia sorella, che, I have heard from my Sister, that. | *Da chi l'avete inteso?* of whom have you heard it?

Third OBSERVATION.

Nouns expressing an ordinal Number, have the Articles, *il, la, i, le* ; as,

Io sono il primo, I am the first ; *tu sei il secondo,* thou art the second ; *ella è la terza,* she is the third.

But when a proper Name goes before the ordinal Number, then the Article is suppressed in Italian ; as,

Giorgio secondo, George the Second ; *Carlo Primo,* Charles the First ; *Luigi decimo quarto,* Louis the Fourteenth.

Fourth OBSERVATION.

Pronouns Possessive Conjunctive have the Articles, *il, la, i, le* ; as, *il mio libro,* my Book ; *la mia casa,* my House ; *i miei libri,* my Books ; *le mie biancherie,* my Linnen. But if the Possessive

possessive follow the Substantive, the Article is suppressed; as, *questa casa è mia*, this is my House.

Note, That these Pronouns, followed by Nouns of Quality or Kindred, have the Articles *di, a, da*, in the Singular; but in the Plural they have *i, le, de, delle, a, alle, da, dalle*; ex. *mio fratello*, my Brother; *di mio fratello*, of my Brother; *da mio fratello*, from my Brother; *i miei fratelli*, my Brothers; *a miei fratelli*, to my Brothers, &c. *mia sorella, di mia sorella*, &c. *le mie sorelle, delle mie sorelle*, &c. *vostra maestà*, your Majesty; *di vostra maestà*, of your Majesty; *a vostra maestà*, to your Majesty; *da vostra maestà*, from your Majesty; *le maestà vostre*, your Majesties; *delle maestà vostre, alle maestà vostre*, &c.

Pronouns possessive absolute, require no Article before them; as, whose House is this? it is mine, it is thine, it is ours; *di chi è questa casa?* *è mia, è tua, è nostra*.

Fifth OBSERVATION.

The Articles *il, la, i, le*, are rendered in English by the Article *a* or *an* in the following and like Expressions; *egli fa il filosofo*, he sets up for a Philosopher; *egli fa il grande*, he sets up for a Lord; *ella fa la dama*, she sets up for a Lady; *ella fa la modesta*, she affects the modest Woman.

Sixth OBSERVATION.

Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Rivers, and Mountains, have generally the Articles *il, la, i, le*; as,

La Francia è un potente regno, France is a powerful Kingdom; *l'Italia è un paese molto*

ameno, Italy is a very pleasant Country; *la Toscana è la sola Provincias d'Italia*, dove si parla bene Italiano, Tuscany is the only Province of Italy, where they speak good Italian; *il Tevere*, the Tiber; *il Tamigi*, the Thames; *le Alpi*, the Alps; *I Pirenei*, the Pyrenees.

But Names of Kingdoms and Provinces lose the Article after the Preposition *in*; ex. *Io vo in Francia*, I go into France; *egli dimora in Inghilterra*, he lives in England.

They are also declined with the Article *di* only; ex. *Io ritorno di Francia*, I return from France; *il regno di Portugallo*, the Kingdom of Portugal; *vino di Fiorenza*, Florence Wine: However, we say also, *Io parlo della Francia, dell'Italia*, I speak of France, of Italy.

Names of Mountains lose their Article after the Word *monte*; ex. *il monte Parnaso*, Mount Parnassus; *il monte Sinai*, Mount Sinai.

Seventh OBSERVATION.

Nouns of Quantity govern a Genitive Case with the Article *di*; ex. *una foglietta di vino*, a Pint of Wine; *un braccio di panno*, a Yard of Cloth; *un' ala di tela*, an Ell of Linnen; *uno stajo di grano*, a Bushel of Corn.

The Adverbs of Quantity, *a great deal*, *much* or *many*, take no Article, but become Adjectives in Italian, and agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number, and Case; ex. *ho bevuto molto vino*, I have drunk a great deal of Wine; *ha mangiato molta carne*, he has eat a great deal of Meat; *voi avete molti libri*, you have a great many Books.

Eighth

Bef
of Mo
as, bo

An
name
Nomin
the Ca
scrivo

Great;
The
a Word
Names
Qualiti

chaste;
We
of Wor
retta, l

It is
press th
Tasso co
great de
to, I lik

We
we mea
Alexand

Befor
ticles, il
cipe, the
Principe
ster; lo

Noun
Names
decimo,

Eighth OBSERVATION.

Before proper Names of Men or Women, and of Months, &c. we put the Articles *di*, *a*, *da*; as, *ho detto a Paolo*, I said to *Paul*.

An Adjective added for an Epithet or Nick-name to a proper Name, is always put in the Nominative Case with the Article *il* or *la*, let the Case of the proper Name be what it will; *io scrivo di Luigi il Grande*, I write of *Louis* the Great; *Carlo il calvo*, *Charles* the bald.

The Article *il* or *la* is used sometimes before a Word that denotes a Quality added to proper Names, to distinguish a Person by one of his Qualities; as, *Lucrezia la casta*, *Lucrece* the chaste; *Elena la bella*, *Helen* the handsome.

We put also the Article before proper Names of Women; as, *la Faustina*, *la Cuzzoni*, *la Lauretta*, *la Fiammetta*.

It is used also before a proper Name, to express the Works of that Person; ex. *ho letto il Tasso con gran piacere*, I have read *Tasso* with a great deal of Pleasure; *il Petrarca mi piace molto*, I like *Petrarch* very much.

We say also, *il Cesare*, *l' Alessandro*, when we mean a Statue or a Picture of *Cæsar* or *Alexander*.

Before Nouns appellative, we also put the Articles, *il*, *la*, *i*, *le*; as, *il duca*, the Duke; *il Principe*, the Prince; *la duchessa*, the Dutches; *la Principessa*, the Princess; *il maestro*, the Master; *lo scolajo*, the Scholar.

Nouns of Degree or Honour before proper Names lose the Article; ex. *Papa Innocenzio decimo*, Pope *Innocent* the Tenth; *Monsignor*

Carlo, my Lord Charles ; *Madama Caterina*, my Lady Catherine ; *Maestro Alberto*, Master Albert. But if those Nouns be put alone, without the Names of the Persons, then we must say, *il Papo*, *il Maestro*.

Note, That *Monsignore*, and *Madama*, are always followed by the Articles, when they are put before another Name of Quality ; as, *Monsignore il Duca*, my Lord Duke ; *Madama la Duchessa*, my Lady Dutchess ; *di Monsignor il Duca*, of my Lord Duke ; *di Madama la Duchessa*, of my Lady Dutchess.

Sometimes the Article *il* goes before a Verb of the Infinitive Mood ; as, *il pentirsi da sezzo nulla giova*, it avails nothing to repent too late.

NINTH OBSERVATION.

To express an uncertain Quantity, or Part of a thing, we use the Articles *del*, *della* ; as, *datemi del pane*, give me some Bread ; *dateci del vino*, *della carne*, give us some Wine, some Meat ; *m' ha dato de' libri*, he has given me some Books. But if *poco*, little, be used, the Article *di* must follow ; *datemi un poco di vino*, give me a little Wine : Except if after *poco* some Wine be specified ; as, *un poco del bianco*, *un poco del rosso*, a little of white, a little of the red. We say *un fiasco di vino*, a Flask of Wine ; *un scatola di tabacco*, a Box of Snuff ; that is to say, full of Wine, full of Snuff ; but if we will express for what Use the Thing is, we say *da* ; as, *un fiasco da vino*, a Wine Flask ; *una scatola da tabacco*, a Snuff-Box.

Note, That we never express the Articles *del*, *della*, before an Infinitive coming after another Verb ; as, *ho pane per vivere*, I have Bread to live

live ;
has W

Th
lique
la, da
Substa
the K
the Sc
Pescer
della r
la van
Wh
we pla
Substa
nior ;

We
stantive
before
left out
ta, la g
cy, Lib
i favor
Favour
you ; k
carne, l
How
Thing,
Quantit
conosciu
Man mo
a bastan
to gover

live; *egli ha talento a bastanza da condursi*, he has Wit enough to govern himself.

Tenth OBSERVATION.

The Articles *il, la, lo, i, le, gli*, and their oblique Cases, *del, della, dello, al, alla, allo, dal, dalla, dallo, di, a, da, &c.* are always put before the Substantives to which they belong; as, *il Re*, the King; *la Regina*, the Queen; *lo Scholaro*, the Scholar; *la volontà di Dio*, the Will of God; *l'esercito del Re*, the King's Army; *le miserie della vita umana*, the Miseries of human Life; *la vanità degli uomini*, the Vanity of Men.

When an Adjective goes before a Substantive, we place before it the Articles belonging to the Substantive; as, *il Gran Signore*, the Grand Seigneur; *la Gran Brittagna*, Great Britain.

Eleventh OBSERVATION.

We repeat the Article in *Italian* before Substantives, when several of them come together before or after a Verb; whereas it is generally left out in *English*; as, *la clemenza, la liberalità, la generosità, il valore, il coraggio*, Clemency, Liberality, Generosity, Valour, Courage; *i favori, e le grazie che ho ricercato di voi*, the Favours and Kindnesses I have received from you; *ho comprato del pane, del vino, e della carne*, I have bought Bread, Wine, and Meat.

However, when we speak indefinitely of a Thing, without specifying the Quality or the Quantity of it, we use no Article; as, *io non ho conosciuto mai uomo piu generoso*, I never knew a Man more generous than you; *egli ha prudenza a bastanza da condursi*, he has Prudence enough to govern himself; *voi mi dovete cento scudi, dante*

temi vino in pagamento, you owe me a hundred Crowns, give me Wine for it.

Twelfth OBSERVATION.

We put in *Italian* the Article before several Nouns that have none in *English*; as, *la virtù*, Virtue; *il vizio*, Vice; *la clemenza*, Clemency; *la Temperanza*, Temperance; *l'orgoglio*, Pride; *la Francia*, France; *l'Inghilterra*, England.

Thirteenth OBSERVATION.

There are several Expressions in *Italian*, wherein the Article is suppressed; as, *aver fame*, to be hungry; *aver caldo*, to be hot; *parlare Italiano*, *Francese*, *Latino*, to speak *Italian*, *French*, *Latin*; *dar malleveria*, to give Security, or to put in Bail; *far Testimonianza*, to bear witness.

Fourteenth OBSERVATION.

Names of Towns have no Article in the Nominative nor Accusative, in the other Cases, we use *di*, *a*, *da*; as, *Roma*, *di Roma*, *a Roma*, *da Roma*, Rome, of, to, from Rome, &c. Pronouns Personal, *io*, *tu*, &c. have the same Article; as, *io*, *I*; *di*, *me*, *a me*, *da me*, of me, to me, from me.

ARTICLE II.

Of the Construction of Nouns Substantive.

When two Substantives come together, and one of them depends on the other, the second must be in the Genitive Case; *la gloria di Dio*, the

the G
Palace
la pal
Tw
Numb
by a C
plural
carita
Charit
Regin
Regno
are the
Wh
joined
or Per
Noun
Britta
valoro
King
wick,

The
jectives
ples, v
Positio

Of
tive, o
before
The
are,
First
Egli

the Glory of God ; *il Palazzo del Re*, the King's Palace ; *i capelli del capo*, the Hair of the Head ; *la palma della mano*, the Palm of the Hand.

Two or more Substantives of the singular Number, signifying different Things, being joined by a Conjunction, are equivalent to a Noun of the plural Number ; as, *la fede, la speranza, e la carita sono le virtù Teologali*, Faith, Hope and Charity, are the Theological Virtues ; *il Re, la Regina, e'l Principe sono le prime Persone del Regno*, the King, the Queen, and the Prince, are the first Persons of the Kingdom.

When two or more Substantives singular are joined together, and signify but one single Thing or Person, they require no more than a Verb or Noun singular ; *Giorgio Secondo, Re della Gran Brittagna, ed elettore di Brunswick, è un Principe valoroso, e magnanimo*, George the Second, King of Great Britain, and Elector of Brunswick, is a valiant and generous Prince.

Of Adjectives.

There are four Things to be consider'd in Adjectives, whether Nouns, Pronouns, or Participles, with Relation to Substantives, *viz.* their Position, Gender, Number, and Case.

The Position of Adjectives.

Of Adjectives, some go before the Substantive, others after it ; and others again, either before or after, indifferently.

The Adjectives that go before the Substantive, are,

First, The Adjectives of ordinal Numbers ; ex. *Egli è il primo monarca del mondo*, he is the first

first Monarch of the World; *voi sete la seconda persona che ho veduto hoggi,* you are the second Person I have seen to Day.

Exceptions.

The adjective Ordinal is put after the Substantive; *first*, when joined to a proper Name; as, *Carlo Primo*, Charles the First; *Giorgio Secondo*, George the Second: And, *secondly*, when we quote a Book, a Chapter, &c. as, *libro primo*, the first Book; *capitolo secondo*, the second Chapter.

Note, That when we use the Article, we may indifferently say *al libro primo*, or *primo libro*, in the first Book; and that speaking of Books, Chapters, &c. without quoting them, the Adjective goes before the Substantive, according to the Rule; as, *ho letto il primo libro della vostra Istoria*, I have read the first Book of your History.

Secondly, All conjunctive possessive Pronouns are put before the Substantive; ex. *il mio cappello*, my Hat; *il tuo mantello*, thy Cloak; *il suo libro*, his Book.

Thirdly, The following Adjectives do generally go before the Substantives, *viz.*

Buono, good.

Cattivo, bad.

Grande, great.

Piccolo, little.

Bello, handsome, fine.

Brutto, ugly.

Galante, genteel.

Povero, poor.

Migliore, better.

Ricco, rich.

EXAM-

EXAMPLES.

Un buon uomo, a good Man; *una buona donna*, a good Woman; *cattivo tempo*, bad Weather; *un gran Personaggio*, a great Person; *un piccolo ragazzo*, a little Child; *un bel viso*, a handsome Face; *un brutto colore*, an ugly Colour; *un galant' uomo*, a genteel Man; *un povero mestiere*, a poor Trade; *il migliore amico del mondo*, the best Friend in the World; *il piu ricco mercante di Londra*, the richest Merchant in London. However, this Rule is subject to many Exceptions.

First, The forementioned Adjectives may be put after the Substantives, when one, two, or more Epithets are joined with them; as, *un uomo buono, e generoso*, a good and generous Man; *un Principe grande, e magnifico*, a great and magnificent Prince; *una donna bella, e ricca*, a handsome and rich Woman.

Secondly, When the same Adjectives relate also to a following Substantive, they are put after the first Substantive; as, *un giovine bello come un Angelo*, a Boy as handsome as an Angel.

The Adjectives that come after the Substantives, are,

Those that express a Colour; ex.

Un fazzoletto bianco, a white Handkerchief; *un cappello nero*, a black Hat; *vin rosso*, red Wine.

Secondly, All Participles of the Preterite, or past Tense; as, *un uomo conosciuto*, a known Man; *parole finte*, feigned Words; *una strada battuta*, a beaten Road.

Thirdly, Adjectives formed from Names of Nations; ex. *gentiluomo Italiano*, an Italian Gentleman,

tleman; *una dama Inglese*, an English Lady; *un reggimento Italiano*, an Italian Regiment; *l'armata Inglese*, the English Fleet; *la gravità spagnuola*, Spanish Gravity.

Fourthly, Adjectives expressing a Quality of the Air, Weather and Elements, *ex.*

Un tempo freddo, a cold Season; *un luogo umido*, a damp Place; *un' aria pura*, a pure Air, *dell' acqua tiepida*, lukewarm Water.

Fifthly, Most Adjectives that may be used as Substantives; such as, *gobbo*, hunch-backed; *zoppo*, lame; *cieco*, blind; *guercio*, squinting, &c. *ex. un gobbo*, or *un uomo gobbo*, a crooked Man; *una gobba*, or *una donna gobba*, a crooked Woman.

Sixthly, Adjectives ending in *ele*, or *ile*; *ex.*

Un uomo crudele, a cruel Man; *una donna fedele*, a faithful Woman; *atti puerili*, childish Actions.

Seventhly, The following Adjectives, and some others, are also generally put after the Substantive.

<i>Lungo</i> , long.	<i>Virtuoso</i> , virtuous.
<i>Corto</i> , short.	<i>Vizioso</i> , vicious.
<i>Neutro</i> , neuter.	<i>Pigro</i> , lazy.
<i>Generale</i> , general.	<i>Pauroso</i> , fearful.
<i>Particolare</i> , particular.	<i>Considerabile</i> , considerable.
<i>Singolare</i> , singular.	
<i>Intiero</i> , entire.	<i>Importuno</i> , troublesome.
<i>Languido</i> , languishing.	

But this Rule is liable to Exceptions.

First R. U L E of Adjectives.

The Adjective ought to agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number, and Case; as, *un gran giardiniere*,

giardino, a large Garden ; *una bella casa*, a fine House ; *uomini valorosi*, valiant Men ; *cose umane*, human Things.

Second R U L E.

The Masculine Gender is accounted more noble than the Feminine ; and therefore when two Substantives of different Genders, are the Nominative of the Verb *Essere*, or a passive Verb, the Adjective that follows ought to be of the Masculine Gender, and of the Plural Number ; ex.

Gli onori, e ricchezze sono ambiti da tutti, Honours and Riches are sought by every Body ; *il marito e la moglie sono tenuti d' amarsi scambievolmente*, Husband and Wife are obliged to love one another mutually ; *il merito, e la fortuna vanno raramente uniti*, Merit and Fortune seldom meet.

Of the Comparison.

Although I have spoken at large of the Comparison in the Analogy, yet it will not be amiss to make the following Observations.

First, Adverbs of Quantity ; *più*, more ; *meno*, less, which serve to compare Substantives, are to be followed by a Genitive Case ; but the Article varies, according to the Substantives that are compared.

We use the Article *del, della, de', delle*, if the Word *than* is followed by the Article *the*, or a Pronoun possessive, either absolute or conjunctive ; ex. nothing is brighter than the Sun, *niente è più chiaro del sole* ; the Sun is brighter than the Moon, *il sole è più luminoso della luna* ; your Book is handsomer than mine, *il vostro libro è più*

piu bello del mio. Sometimes *the* is not expressed in *English*; as, nothing is more amiable than *Virtue*; *non v'è cosa piu amabile della virtù.* In this Case you must observe what I have said in the eleventh Observation, under the Title of the Construction of Articles.

If after *than*, there is not the Article *the*, nor a Pronoun possessive, then we use the Article *di*; as, *Peter* is richer than *Paul*, *Pietro è più ricco di Paolo.*

If the Word *than* has after it a Pronoun possessive, joined with a Noun that signifies Quality or Kindred, in the singular Number, we use the Article *di*; as, happier than your Highness, *piu fortunato di vostra Altezza*; handsomer than your Brother, *piu bello di vostro fratello.* But in the Plural we use *de'* or *delle*; as, happier than your Highness, *piu felice delle altezze vostre*; handsomer than your Brother, *piu bello de' vostri fratelli.*

If the Particle *than* is followed by an Adjective, a Verb, or an Adverb, it is expressed by *che*; as, *piu lungo, che alto*, longer than high; *promette piu che non attiene*, he promises more than he performs; *è meglio tardi che mai*, it is better later than never.

Adverbs of Quantity require the Article *di*; as, *ella ho piu di venti anni*, she is more than twenty Years old; *ho speso poco meno di cento scudi*, I have spent little less than a hundred Crowns.

It is true, that sometimes *che* comes immediately after *piu*, but then it signifies *but*, and not *than*; ex. *non ho piu che cento scudi*, I have but an hundred Crowns; *non ha piu che venti anni*, he is but twenty Years old.

The

The Adverbs *so*, *as much*, *so much*, *as*, are expressed in *Italian* by *che*, *quanto*, or *fi*; as, *voi sete bello quanto lui*, you are as handsome as he; *voi non sete fi dotto, che lui*, you are not so learned as he; *ho tanti cavalli, che voi*, I have as many Horses as you.

ARTICLE III.

Of the Use of Pronouns.

There are, as we said before, seven Sorts of Pronouns, *viz.* the Personal, Possessive, Demonstrative, Relative, Interrogative, Numeral, and Indefinite; upon which we shall make some useful Observations.

Of Personal Pronouns.

First OBSERVATION

Personal Pronouns may be divided into conjunctive and indifferent. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns are the Nominatives of Verbs; such as, *io, tu, egli, ella, noi, voi, &c.* and the oblique Datives and Accusatives; such as, *mi, me, ci, ce, ti, te, vi, ve, lo, la, &c.*

All the rest of Personal Pronouns are indifferent; such as, *di me, a me, da me; di noi, a noi, da noi.*

Second OBSERVATION.

The Personal Pronouns that serve for the Nominative of a Verb, instead of a Substantive, are these; *io, tu, egli, ella, noi, voi, egli, ella, io, amo, tu ami, egli, or ella ama, I love, thou lovest, he or she loveth; noi amiamo,*

mo, voi amate, egliu or elleno amano, we love, ye love, they love.

Note, That in using of Verbs, it is indifferent whether you add these Pronouns or not, since the Termination of Tenses shews the Person and the Number: However, if they are expressed, it is not a Fault. Moreover, we must consult the Ear, since by expressing the Pronouns, we give a greater Emphasis to the Discourse.

Third OBSERVATION.

The Pronoun of the Nominative Case, is put after the Verb, in an Interrogation; as, *conosci tu*, do you know; and in this short Phrase, *si ti dich' io*, yes I tell you.

Fourth OBSERVATION.

Through a Corruption of most Languages of *Europe*, we use the second Person plural instead of the singular, and we say *voi*, when we speak to a single Person; as, *voi sete prudente, e savio*, you are prudent and wise. The same is done with Pronouns possessive; *il vostro, i vostri*, yours, which are used instead of *il tuo, i tuoi*, thy, or thine.

Note, That though we use the plural *voi*, when we speak to a singular Person, nevertheless the Adjective that relates to it, ought to be in the singular Number; ex. *voi sete ben venuto*, you are welcome.

Note also, That the Pronouns *voi* and *vostro*, are used when we speak either to a familiar Friend, or to a Person very much below us: But when we speak in a ceremonial Way, or to a Person

Perse
lar,
and
ex.
will
pello,

Co
the I
gli,
place
dico,
mi,
No
any T
the la
doubl
me;

All
Accer
the C
them
it; da
Not
these
fore;
rotti;
tive a
we ca
non po
not lo
before
non vi
non po

Person above us, we use the third Person singular, *lei*, *vossignoria*, or *ella*, for both Genders; and the Pronoun possessive, *suo*, *suo*, *sua*, *sue*; ex. *vuol ella*, or *lei*, or *vossignoria favorirmi*, will you favour me; *ecco i suoi libri*, *il suo cappello*, there are your Books, your Hat.

Fifth OBSERVATION.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns, that serve for the Dative or Accusative, are, *mi*, *me*, *ti*, *te*, *gli*, *si*, *ci*, *ce*, *vi*, *ve*, *lo*, *la*, &c. which are placed either before or after the Verb; ex. *vi dico*, or *dicovi*, I tell ye; *mi scrissi*, or *scrissiemi*, he wrote to me, &c.

Note, That when these Pronouns are put after any Tense of a Verb, that has an Accent over the last Letter, the Consonant of the Pronoun is doubled; ex. *mi mandò*, or *mandommi*, he sent me; *dirò*, or *dirovvi*, I shall tell ye, &c.

All Verbs of one Syllable have naturally the Accent over the last Letter, and by Consequence, the Consonant of the Pronoun that is joined to them is doubled; ex. *egli fa*, he does, *fallo*, do it; *dà*, he gives; *dammi*, give me.

Note also, That though it is arbitrary to join these Pronouns to the Verbs, or to put them before; as, *amasi*, or *si ama*, *dicesi*, or *si dice*; *darotti*; or *ti darò*; yet in the Imperative, Infinitive and Gerund, they must be put after; for we cannot say *mi ama*, but *amami*, love me; *non posso vi amare*, but *non posso amarvi*, I cannot love ye: Or else you must put the Pronoun before the Verb that governs the Infinitive; ex. *non vi posso amare*, and not before the Infinitive; *non posso vi amare*: And we cannot say *mi dan-*
do,

do, vi dando, but *dandomi, dandovi*, in giving me, in giving ye.

As for the Infinitive, you must observe, that the last Vowel is always taken away when we join the Pronouns to it ; ex. we say *amarmi, temervi, sentirci*, and not *amaremi, temerevi, sentireci*.

We say most commonly *se* one's self, for the Singular, and *si* themselves, for the Plural ; *per celarse*, to hide himself ; *per farsi amare*, to make themselves be loved.

SIXTH OBSERVATION.

The conjunctive Pronoun. *me, mi, te, ti, se, si, gli, le, ce, ci, ve, vi*, though they have the same Signification, yet they are used indifferently.

I. *Me, te, se*, serve for all the Cases ; as, *di me, di te, di se, a me, a te, a se, &c. mi, ti, ci, vi*, serve only for the Dative and Accusative ; by *si* only for the Accusative ; *mi disse*, he told me ; *ci vede*, he sees us ; *ti diede*, he gave thee, &c. *si crede*, he thinks himself. *Me, te, se*, are governed by the Article *di, a, da*, and by all Prepositions ; as, *di me, di te, di se, a me, a te, a se, &c. contro me*, against me ; *verso te*, towards thee ; *per se*, for one's self ; *mi, ci, ti, vi, si*, are governed by a Verb ; as, *mi crede*, he believes me ; *ci vede*, he sees us, &c.

Me, te, se, ce, ve, are joined to the Particles *lo, la, le, gli*, and the Particle relative *ne* ; as, *me lo, me la, me le, me gli, mene* ; *te lo, te la, te le, te gli, te ne* ; but generally we join them together ; as, *ditemelo*, tell it me ; *datemela*, give it me ; *ditecelo*, tell it us ; *vela manderò*, I will send

send it you; *mene ricordo*, I remember it; *sela mise in testa*, he put it upon his Head.

When we make an Opposition between two Persons, we say, *me, te*, without joining them to the Verb; as, *Ferir me in quello stato, e a voi armata non mostrar pur l'arco*, to wound me in that Condition, and, to you that was armed, not to shew even the the Bow.

Gli before *lo, la, le, li, ne*, takes an *e*; as, *glielo, gliela, &c. glielo diro*, I will tell it him; *gliela manderò*, I will send it her, &c.

The Pronoun Conjunctive *loro* goes always after the Verb; as, *io dissi loro*, I told them.

When *loro* is a Pronoun possessive, it requires the Article, *il, la, i, le*, before it; as, *il loro libro*, their Book; *i loro libri*, their Books; *la loro casa*, their House, *le loro case*, their Houses.

Seventh OBSERVATION.

The Pronouns, *egli* and *ella*, accompany the Gerund, when the Verb following depends on them; as, *scrivendo egli s'ingegnò di guadagnare, &c.* by writing he strove to gain, &c. *fi-lando ella a poco a poco s'addormentò*, as she was spinning, she fell asleep. The same is understood of, *eglino*, and *elleno*: But if the Verb following is not governed by them, *lui, lei, loro*, are to be used; as, *cantando lui, io scrivevo*, as she was singing, I wrote; *venendo lei, tutti si fermarono*, as soon as she came, every Body stopt. The same Pronouns are also used with the Participle *come*, when Equality is signified; as, *costoro, erano maliziosi come lui, or come lei, or come loro*; not *egli, ella, eglino, or elleno*, they were as malicious as he, she, they: But if *come* signifies

Q

Simili-

Similitude, and not *Equality*, *elli*, *egla*, *eglino*, *elleno*, are used; as, *che direste voi, si io fossi nella via come egli or ella?* What would you say, if I was in the way as well as he or she?

Eighth OBSERVATION.

Some Personal Pronouns are called *Indifferent*, because they may either be joined to the Verbs, or be separate from them; as, *egli parla di me, di te*, he speaks of me, of thee, &c. *di chi parla?* *di me*, who does he speak of? of me.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

First OBSERVATION.

The Gender of Pronouns possessive in *Italian*, does not follow that of the Person that speaks, or is spoken of, but agrees with the particular Gender of every Noun they are joined to; ex. *mio padre*, my Father; *mia madre*, my mother; *suo fratello*, his or her Brother; *sua sorella*, his or her Sister.

Second OBSERVATION.

Sometimes these plural Pronouns, *i miei*, *itui*, *i suoi*, *i nostri*, *i vostri*, signify one's Friends and Relations, or the People of one's Party; ex. *è andato verso i suoi*, *è non l'hanno conosciuto*, he went to his own, and they knew him not.

Third OBSERVATION.

Sometimes these singular Pronouns, *il mio*, *il tuo*, *il suo*, *il nostro*, *il vostro*, *il loro*, signifies one's own Money or Estate; ex. *ho speso cento scudi del mio*, I spent a hundred Crowns of my own;

non spende niente del suo, he spends none of his own Money.

As for the Regimen of these Pronouns, I spoke of them at large in the fourth Observation of the Chapter of Articles.

Of Pronouns Demonstrative.

Questo and *quello* are proper, either for Persons or Things, and are declined like Adjectives, with the Article, *di, a, da*; as, *quest'uomo*, this Man; *questa donna*, this Woman; *quello scholare*, that Scholar; *quella signora*, that Lady.

Questo, shews the Person or Thing that is near us; *quel* or *quello*, shews a Person or Thing that is remote.

Questi and *quegli* or *quelli*, are often used alone, instead of *quest'uomo*; as, *questi à cavallo*, *quegli à piedi*, the one on Horseback, the other a Foot.

Before *mane* or *mattina*, *sera* or *notte*, we say, *sta*, instead of *questa*; as, *stamane*, or *stamattina*, this Morning; *sta sera*, or *sta notte*, to Night.

Costui, he, or this Man, *costei*, she, or this Woman, require the Article, *di, a, da*; and in the Plural, make *costoro*: They are used only for Persons.

Cotesti, as has been said of *questi* and *quegli*, is sometimes used for *cotesto*; as, *cotesti ancor vive*, he is still living.

Colui, he, or that Man; *colei*, she, or that Woman, are declined like *costui*, and in the Plural, make *coloro*; but they are proper only to Persons.

Cio, this or that, serves for *questo* and *quello*: It is declined with the Article, *di, a, da*; but it is said only of Things; as, *noi parleremo di cio à bell' agio*, we will talk of that at Leisure; *questo qui, questa qui, quello li, quella li*, this here, that there, are declined like *questo* and *quello*.

Questo used without a Substantive, is neuter, and signifies this or that; as, *se fate questo, sarete perduto*, if you do that, you will be undone.

Of Pronouns Relative.

First OBSERVATION.

The relative *che* has two Significations, of the Person, and of the Thing; when it signifies the Person, or any Sort of Being, it cannot be used but in the nominative and accusative Singular and Plural; and in the other Cases, we use, *cui*, with or without the Articles, *di, a, da*; as, *un uomo che canta bene*, a Man that sings well; *la donna che voi amate*, the Woman you love; *un cavallo che galoppa bene*, a Horse that gallops well; *un uomo il cui merito*, or *il di cui merito ben conosciuto*, a Man whose Merit is well known; *à cui rispose*, to whom he answered.

When *che* is relative to a Thing, it is common to all Genders, Numbers and Cases; as, *il libro che vi ho mandato*, the Book I sent you; *i libri che sono stampati*, the Books that are printed.

Second OBSERVATION.

Che, with the Articles, *il, del, al, dal*, before it, is relative neither to a Person nor to a Thing but to what has been said before; as, *se andarsì alla guerra correrebbe rischio d'esser ammazzato*

il che
dier,
which

Qu
Artic
their
il qua
who f

Th
used i
Dov
dove
il luog
come.
Vi,
chiefa
yes, I
perciò
inevita
of it.

Ne,
ho del
it; è u
that's
mi ave
obliged
dare in
City?

il che mi dispiacerebbe molto, if he went for a Soldier, he would run a risque to be killed, for which I should be very sorry.

Third OBSERVATION.

Quale, when it is taken relatively, requires the Articles, *il, del, al, dal, la, della, alla, dalla*, and their Plural, and is used instead of *che*; as, *l'uomo il quale teme Iddio, non teme la morte*, the Man who fears God, is not afraid of Death.

Fourth OBSERVATION.

These relative Particles, *dove, donde, vi, ne*, are used in the following manner.

Dove, and *donde*, relate to a Place; ex. *il paese dove sono nato*, the Country where I was born; *il luogo donde vengo*, the Place from whence I come.

Vi, relates to a Place or Thing; *sete stato alla chiesa? vi sono fiato*, have you been at Church? yes, I have been there; *la morte è inevitabile, e perciò dobbiamo pensarvi, or pensarci*, Death is inevitable, and therefore we ought to think of it.

Ne, relates to a Thing or Place; ex. *quando ho del vino, ne bevo*, when I have Wine, I drink it; *è un bel cavallo, ma ne ho veduto uno più bello*, that's a fine Horse, but I have seen a finer; *voi mi avete servito, e vene ringrazio*, you have obliged me, and I thank you for it; *volete andare in città? ne vengo*, will you go into the City? I come from thence.

Fifth OBSERVATION.

Che is repeated in *Italian*, as well as other Pronouns; ex. *è un uomo che canta, che balla, et che suona di molti stromenti*, it is a Man that sings, dances, and plays upon several Instruments.

Chi sometimes is used distributively; as, *chi dice una cosa, chi un'altra*, some say one Thing, some another Thing.

Of Pronouns Interrogative.

First OBSERVATION.

Of the Interrogative Pronouns, *chi, che*, are always absolute, but *quale* is generally conjunctive.

Second OBSERVATION.

Quale is said both of Persons and Things; *chi*, of Persons; *che*, of Things and Persons. ex. *quale di queste dame vi piace più?* which of these Ladies like you best? *quale di questi fiori volete?* which of these Flowers will you have? *Chi sete voi?* who are you? *chi ha fatto questo?* who has done that? *di che si parla?* what do they say Abroad? *che uomo è quello?* what Man is that?

Of Numeral Pronouns.

Numeral Pronouns are, *ciascuno, ciascheduno, ognuno, nessuno, niuno, veruno, nullo, ogni, tutto, molti, poco, alcuno*.

Ciascuno, or *ciascheduno*, are affirmative Pronouns, that have no Plural; ex. *ciascheduno sa*, every Body knows; *ciascheduna di loro aveva una corona in testa*, they had every one of them a Crown upon their Heads.

Nessuno,

Nessuno, Niuno, or veruno, have no Plural, and signify no Body, or any Body; ex. *nessuno è venuto*, no Body is come; *non ho veduto niuno di loro*, I saw none of them; *vi è nessuno che mi voglia?* is there any Body that wants me?

Ogni is affirmative, and has no Plural; ex. *ogni paese ha la sua usanza*, every Country has its Custom; *in ogni cosa le femmine s'appigliano al peggio*, Women betake themselves to the worst in every thing.

Ogni, with *cosa*, doth signifie every; ex. *il tempo consuma ogni cosa*, Time destroys every thing.

Poco is affirmative, and declinable; ex. *pochi sono quelli, che sieguono la virtù*, few are those that follow Virtue.

Molti is affirmative of the plural Number; ex. *molti sono chiamati, ma pochi eletti*, many are called, but few are chosen; *vi sono molte belle donne in Inghilterra*, there are many fine Women in England.

Alcuno is affirmative and declinable; *ho alcune cose a dirvi*, I have something to tell ye.

We use the Pronoun *alcuno* after a Verb that is preceeded by a Negative; ex. *non vi è alcuna che sia più bella di voi*, there is no body handsomer than you.

Of Pronouns Indefinite.

Pronouns Indefinite are, *l'uno, l'altro, qualche, duno, alcuno, chiunque, qualunque, chicche, qualche, certo, stesso, tale, chi*; ex. *l'uno è l'altro hanno ragione*, both are in the right; *gli uni sono di questa opinione, gli altri, di quella*, some are of that Opinion, others of this; *altro è parlar di morte, al-*

tro è morire, to speak of Death is one thing, and to die another.

We say, *da altro*, to signify One's Aptness in doing something; ex. *tu non sei da altro, che da lavare le scudelle*, you are good for nothing else, but to wash Dishes.

Chiunque has no Plural, and is only said of Persons; ex. *chiunque teme Iddio, ama il suo prossimo*, whosoever fears God, loves his Neighbour.

Qualunque has no Plural, and is said only of Things; as, *faro qualunque cosa mi comandate*, I will do any thing you command me.

Chicche, has no Plural, and is said only of Persons; ex. *chicche tel' abbia detto, no'l nego*, whoever has told you of it, I do not deny it.

Qualche, has no Plural, and is said both of Persons and Things; ex. *qualche tu sie, od ombra od uomo certo*, whoever you are, either a Ghost, or a real Man; *datemi qualche cosa*, give me something; *ho qualche danari*, I have some Money.

Stesso, this Pronoun is often joined with personal Pronouns; ex. *anderò da me stesso*, I will go by my self; *io stesso vel' ho detto*, I told you that my self. It is also joined with Substantives; ex. *il Re stesso*, the King himself.

Tale, is declinable, and is said both of Persons and Things; and makes *tali* in the Plural, both for Masculine and Feminine; ex. *un tale mel' ha detto*, such a one told me that; *tal marito, tal moglie*, like Husband, like Wife; *non posso soffrire una tal cosa*, I cannot endure such a Thing.

Tale is sometimes an Adjective of Similitude, between two or more Things, but in this Sense it is a Pronoun relative; and *quale* answers to it; ex. *e d' esser tal per suo valor si vanta, qual tu per tua*

tua
the i
give

T
Fr
Use
or C

I
seque
becau
the I
again
set th

Su
Da
Po
At
Ta
M
Di
Ta
Si
Fo
Ec
Se

tua viltà la fingi ed orni, and she presumes, that she is really deserving of those Praises, which you give her only through your Submission.

CHAP. IV.

Of Verbs.

THere are three Things to be considered in Verbs.

First, The Use of Moods. *Secondly*, The Use of Tenses. And, *Thirdly*, The Regimen, or Case governed.

Of the Use of Moods.

I have treated before of the Nature, and consequently of the Use of the four Moods; but because of their Particles, some of which govern the Indicative, others the Conjunctive, and others again the Infinitive, it will not be improper to set them down here.

Conjunctions that govern the Indicative.

Subito che, as soon as.

Dopo che, after that.

Poiche, } since, seeing that.

Atteso che, }

Tanto che, } as long as, whilst.

Mentre che, }

Di maniera che, } so that, inasmuch that.

Talmente che, }

Si ben che, } perhaps.

Forse che, }

Eccetto che, } except that, unless, but, save

Se non che, } that.

Perchè-

234 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Perchè,
A causa che, } because.
Secondo che, according as.
Oltre che, besides that.
Tanto che, as long as.
Dopo che, since.

Conjunctions that govern the Conjunctive Mood.

Affinchè,
Acciòchè, } that.
Avanti che,
Prima che, } before that.
A meno che, except, unless.
Benchè,
Ancorchè, } though, or although.
Caso che, in case that.
Con patto che,
A condizion chè, } upon condition that, pro-
Purchè, } vided that.
Senza che, without.
Fino a tanto che, till.
Per tema che, for fear, lest.
Dato che,
Supposto che, } suppose, or grant that.
 And perhaps some few more.

A Verb that is followed by the Particle *che*, governs the Indicative or Conjunctive Mood; and because it suffices to know the Verbs that govern either of these two Moods, I shall only mention those that govern the Conjunctive, as being less in Number than the rest.

Besides the Conjunctions already mentioned, we use the conjunctive Mood,

First, After the following Verbs, *volere, desiderare, pretendere, comandare, pregare, supplicare,*

care, richiedere, comportare, permettere, difendere, proibire, persuadere, dissuadere, esortare, temere, dubitare, supporre, impedire, aspettare, dire, fare.
ex.

Voglio che voi andiate, I will have you go; *desidererei che venisse*, I wish he would come, &c.

Note, That these Verbs *comandare, ordinare, pregare, permettere, difendere, proibire, supplicare, impedire*, require the Infinitive of the following Verb with the Particle *di*, when they govern a Noun or Pronoun; ex. *li ho comandato di dirvi*, I have commanded him to tell you. But when the same are used in an indefinite Sense, and govern neither Noun nor Pronoun, they require a Conjunctive after them; ex. *il Re ordinò, che l'esercito s'attendasse intorno alle mura*, the King gave Orders for the Army to encamp about the Walls.

Secondly, Most Imperfonal Verbs require a Conjunctive after them; *bisogna che voi partiate domani*, you must go away to Morrow.

Thirdly, We generally use the Conjunctive Mood after a Verb that has the Particle *se*, or the Negative *non* before it; *se voi credete, che sia venuto*, if you think that he is come; *non creda che sia ancora arrivato*, I believe he is not come yet.

Note, That when the Particle *se* goes before the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative in *English*, we use the second Imperfect of the Conjunctive, if we speak of the Time to come, it being in this Sense a Particle conditional; as, *s'io fossi ricco, avrei molti amici*, if I was rich, I should have many Friends; *se fosse liberale, sarebbe amato da tutti*, if he was liberal, he would be beloved by every Body: But if we speak of the Time past,

we

we use the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative; ex. *Se Giorgio Primo era temuto da suoi vicini, Giorgio Secondo è temuto e amato*, if George the First was feared by his Neighbours, George the Second is feared and beloved.

Note also, That in *English* we use the Present Tense with the Particle *if*, when we speak of the Time to come; but in *Italian* we use the Future, ex. *verrò domani se averò tempo*, I will come to Morrow, if I have Time.

Fourthly, After *quale*, without asking the Question; ex. *non sapendo qual fosse la stagione propria da seminare*, not knowing the proper Season for Sowing; *non vedo qual sia l'intento suo*; I do not see what his Design is: But if by *quale*, we ask a Question, the Verb must be of the Indicative Mood; *quale di questi fiori volete?* which of these Flowers will you have?

Fifthly, After the Superlative Definite; as, *la più bella donna che conosca*, the finest Woman I know.

Sixthly, After the relative *che*, when the Verb expresses a Condition in a future Sense; as, *voglio una moglie che sia bella e ricca*, I will have a Woman handsome and rich.

Of the Infinitive.

The Infinitive, as we said before, has an Indefinite Signification, and expresses the Action without any Circumstance either of Time or Person. There are of Prepositions which are often joined with the Infinitive, viz. *di, a, da, per*; by means of which we express the Gerunds and Supins of the *Latins*, which are generally rendered into *English* by the Particle *to*; ex.

Vi

Vi prego di mandarmi, I desire you to send me ;
ho qualche cosa à scrivere, I have something to
 write ; *queste non sòn cose da fare*, such Things
 are not to be done ; *vengo per farvi sapere, che*,
 I come to let you know, that.

Of the Use of the Particle Di before the Infinitive.

The Preposition *di* is used before the Infinitive,

First, After a Noun Substantive, in which Case it answers to the Gerund in *di*, in the *Latin* ; ex. *l'Arte di parlare*, the Art of Speaking ; *non ho il tempo di leggere*, I have not the Time to read.

Secondly, After an Adjective that governs a Genitive Case ; such as, *contento, risoluto, &c.* ex. *sono contento di morire*, I am contented to die ; *sono risoluto di partire*, I am resolved to go.

Thirdly, After the Verbs, *sperare, comandare, permettere, desiderare, pregare, promettere, impedire, persuadere, dissuadere, consigliare, avvertire, temere, &c.* ex. *spero di vedervi domani*, I hope to see you to Morrow ; *vi prego di considerare*, I desire you to consider, &c.

Of the Use of the Particle a before the Infinitive.

The Preposition *a* is used before the Infinitive,

First, After the Verbs *avere*, and *essere*, in the following and like Expressions ; ex. *ho una lettera à scrivere*, I have a Letter to write ; *v'è pericolo a caminar la notte*, it is dangerous to walk in the Night.

Secondly, After Adjectives that govern the Dative Case ; such as, *pronto, dedito, accostuma-*
to,

to, atto, &c. ex. sono pronto à partire, I am ready to go; egli è dedito a giuocare, he is given to play, &c.

Thirdly, After some Verbs; such as cominciare, configliare, esortare, prepararsi, disporfi, apparecchiarsi, risolverfi, mettersi, occuparsi, &c. io comincio ad intendere l'Italiano, I begin to understand Italian, &c.

Note, That if the Verb begins by a Vowel, we say, ad; ex. v'esorto ad aver pazienza, I advise you to have Patience.

Note also, That there are several Verbs before which we may use the Particle, di or a, almost indifferently; in which case we ought to chuse that which sounds best to the Ear; such as, configliare, esortare, persuadere, sforzare, mancare, provare, and some others.

Of the Use of the Particle da before the Infinitive.

The Preposition *da* is used before the Infinitive, when the Infinitive Active is put instead of the Passive; *ex. la guerra è da temere, War is to be feared; queste non cose da fare, such Things ought not to be done.*

Of the Use of the Preposition per before the Infinitive.

The Preposition *per*, is used before the Infinitive.

First, To express the End, Design, or Cause of an Action; ex. vengo per farvi sapere, I come to acquaint you; è stato impiccato per aver ammazzato uomo, he was hanged for killing a Man.

There

There are fix Prepositions, viz. *senza, dopo, per, con, col, in*, which are sometimes used before the Infinitive; ex.

Non si puo vivere senza mangiare, one cannot live without eating; *dopo aver preso concedo da suoi amici, partì per Francia*, after having taken Leave of his Friends, he went to *France*; *perduto è il tempo, che in amar non si spende*, the Time that is not spent in loving, is lost; *collo studiare s'impara*, by Study one learns.

Note, That the Infinitive is used for the Imperative, in forbidding something; as, *non mi tacer, qual' è 'l pastor tra noi*, &c. do not conceal from me, who is that Shepherd among us, &c.

Note also, That we use the Infinitive like a Substantive, with the Article, *il, del, al, dal*: ex. *il mangiar soverchio nuoce alla salute*, too much Eating impares our Health; *il parlar di soverchio, è segno di pazzia*, much Talk is a Sign of Folly.

Of the Use of Tenses.

Although what I have said already, about the Use of Tenses in the Chapter of Analogy, may in some Measure be sufficient; yet it will not be amiss to make here the following Observations.

1. The Present of the Indicative Mood is sometimes used instead of the Future; ex. *domani festa*, to Morrow is a Holiday, &c.

2. The Imperfect is used to shew the Continuation of an Action, which was done, either some time ago, or in the Time one speaks of; as, *per questa mene venivo a londra*, for this I was coming to London; *sedeva appresso di me*, he was sitting by me.

Some-

Sometimes it implies Frequency, Manner or Custom; as, *si che la dove aucau gli augelli il nido notaro i pesci*; so that where Birds were used to build their Nests, now Fishes swam; *il famigliare, che mal volontieri l'uccidea*, the Servant, who had no Mind to kill him.

We use the same time, when an Action meets with an Impediment; *avevo disegno d' andare in Francia, ma i miei affari non m'elo permettono*, I had a Design to go to France, but my Business does not permit me.

3. The perfect Definite expresses the precise and determinate Time, when the Action was done; ex. *poiche à morte mi sentii ferito*, after I found my self mortally wounded. It is also called the Historical Tense, because it is much used by the Historians, to relate Things past; as, *avvenne, che il Re di Francia morì, ed in suo luogo fu coronato il figliuolo*, it hapned that the King of France died, and his Son was crowned in his Stead.

4. The Preterperfect expresses an Action perfectly past, without determining any precise Time; as, *io ho inteso cio che di me ragionato avete*, I have overheard all that is said concerning me; *mio Padre è morto in Italia*, my Father died in Italy.

Sometimes it expresses an Action done the same Day that we speak of it; as, *l'ho veduto stamattina*, I saw him this Morning.

5. The first Pluperfect expresses an Action that was perfectly past, before another, which is spoken of, was begun, but without determining any certain and precise Time; as, *l'avevo ben veduto, ma non lo conoscevo*, I had seen him, but I did not know him.

6. The

6. The second Pluperfect expresses an Action perfectly past, before another which is spoken of as was begun, and besides the Time is certain and determined; as, *veduto che l'ebbi subito il conobbi*, I knew him as soon as I saw him; *non si tostico rustico Pastorel l'ebbe guatata, che i primi sguardi non sostenne*, no sooner had a rustick Swain glanced his Eyes upon her, but he surrendered at the first Sight.

Of the Regimen of Verbs.

There are two Things to be considered about the Regimen of Verbs, *viz.* their Nominative, and the Case governed.

Of the Nominative of Verbs.

First R U L E.

A Verb Personal in the Indicative or Con-junctive Mood requires before, or after it, a Nominative, either expressed or understood, that agrees with it in Number and Person; ex. *la giustizia contiene tutte le altre virtù*, Justice comprehends all other Virtues; *io non amo che voi*, I love none but you.

Note, That all Nouns, both singular and plural, are of the third Person, except these Pronouns Personal, *io, tu, noi, voi*, which are of the first and second Person; and those Nouns which are used in the same Sense as the Vocative of *Latins*, especially when joined with the second Persons of the Imperative Mood, are of the second Person: ex. *Io leggo Virgilio*, I read *Virgil*; *noi studiamo la Filosofia*, we study *Philosophy*; *voi sete felice*, you are happy; *ami-*

co avete torto, Friend you are in the wrong ; *Sig-
nori badate a voi*, Gentlemen look to your
selves.

Second R U L E.

The first Person is counted better than the second, and the second better than the third ; therefore, when two or more Persons go before a Verb, the Verb always agrees with the best Person ; as, *lui ed io abbiamo pransato insieme*, he and I have dined together ; *voi ed ella sarete ben venuti*, you and she shall be welcome.

Note by the Bye, that though the first Person be better than the other two (according to Grammatical Notions) yet when we speak or write, we ought never to name our selves first, as the *Greeks* and *Latins* do ; as for Example, we must not say, *io e voi* ; but *voi ed io*, you and I.

Third R U L E.

The Substantive Verb *Essere*, and some Nether Verbs, have often a Nominative before, and another after ; ex. *io sono felice*, I am happy.

Fourth R U L E.

Two or more Substantives of the Singular Number, being joined by a Conjunction, require a Verb in the Plural. See *Chap. II.* about the Construction of Substantives.

Fifth R U L E.

When two or more Nominatives Singular are separated by the disjunctive Particle *o*, the Verb is generally put in the Singular, and very seldom in the Plural ; as, *o l'avarizia, o la prodigalità*
regna

regna ne' ricchi, either Covetousness or Prodigality reigns among the Rich ; *forse che l' amor de' figliuoli, la sua riputazione, o'l timor di Dio lo faranno divenir savio*, perhaps, either the Love of his Children, his Reputation or the Fear of God will make him wise.

Sixth R U L E.

Two or more Nouns singular, being joined by the Particle *ne*, are construed with a Verb, either singular or plural ; as, *ne il pericolo della vita, ne il timor di Dio ebbero forza a smuoverlo della sua risoluzione*, neither the Danger of his Life, nor the Fear of God, could prevail to make him alter his Resolution.

Seventh R U L E.

When there are several Nominatives, the last of which is in the singular Number, and separated from the rest by the Particle *ma*, the Verb ought to be in the singular Number ; ex, *Non solamente i suoi onori, e le sue ricchezze, ma anche la sua riputazione svani*, not only his Honours and Riches, but his Reputation also vanished away.

Eighth R U L E.

After collective Words ; such as, *una quantità, in modo, la maggior parte*, &c. the Verb agrees in Number with the Substantive that comes after the Collective ; ex. *una quantità di gente morì*, great many People died ; *una quantità di soldati entrarono nella città*, a great many Soldiers entered the Town ; *la maggior parte degli uomini sono cattivi*, the Generality of Men are wicked.

Of the Case governed by Verbs.

First RULE.

All active Verbs govern an Accusative Case, (which in Nouns and Participles is the same as the Nominative:) ex. *amare la virtù*, to love Virtue; *castigare i cattivi*, to punish the Wicked.

Second RULE.

Passive Verbs do generally govern the Ablative Case; ex. *essere amato da tutti*, to be beloved by every body.

Third RULE.

Verbs that signify to give, or attribute, govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person; as, *dar la gloria a Dio*, to give the Praise to God.

Fourth RULE.

Most neuter Verbs are absolute, and govern no Case, unless it be by means of some Preposition; ex. *vivere onestamente*, to live honestly; *parlare al Re*, to speak to the King.

Fifth RULE.

Most Verbs of Motion govern the Dative Case of the Thing towards which the Action tends, and the Ablative or Genitive of the Place or Person from which the Motion comes; as, *andare a Parigi*, to go to Paris; *venire dalla campagna*, to come from the Country; *partimmo di Livorno*, we came from Leghorn.

Note, That Verbs that signify to come, to return, to go out, &c. require the Genitive of Noun

which

which are declined with the Article, *di, a, da* ; as, *vengo di Londra*, I come from London : but they have the Ablative of Nouns, which are declined with the Article *il, del, al, del* ; ex. *vengo dalla città*, I come from the City, yet sometimes the Genitive is used ; ex. *la Gianetta uscì della camera*, *Gianetta* went out of the Room. *Bocc.*

CH A P. V.

Of the Construction of Participles.

Participles, as we said before, are either Active or Passive, both which are construed as follows.

Construction of Active Participles.

First R U L E.

The Participle Active has two Terminations, viz. in *ando*, as *amando*, and in *endo*, as *credendo*, *dormendo*.

Second R U L E.

All Participles Active are indeclinable, or are of all Numbers, Genders and Persons, as long as they have the Force and Signification of the Verb, from whence they are derived ; ex, *Il Re essendo assiso sul trono*, the King sitting on his Throne ; *la Regina essendo indisposta*, the Queen being indisposed.

R 3

Third

Third R U L E.

The Nominative is better placed after the Participle Active, than before ; ex. *avendo il Re dato ordine*, the King having ordered.

*Construction of Participles Passive.**First R U L E.*

The Participle Passive, used in a Passive Signification, is declinable, and varies according to the Difference of Genders and Numbers ; ex. *io sono amato*, I am loved ; *ella è stimata*, she is esteemed ; *noi siamo lodati*, we are praised.

Note, That when the Pronoun *voi* is put for the singular *tu*, the Participle that follows it ought to be in the singular ; *voi sete amato* or *amata*, you are loved.

Second R U L E.

The same Participle is also declined in Neuter Verbs ; ex. *egli è venuto, andato, &c.* he is come, gone, &c. *ella è venuta, andata, &c.* she is come, gone, &c.

Third R U L E.

The Participle Passive being used in the Active Signification, with the Auxiliary Verb *avere*, may be declinable or indeclinable ; ex. *Io ho sperato la pace*, and *Io ho sperata la pace*, I hope for Peace ; *ho ricevuto le vostre lettere*, and *ho ricevute le vostre lettere*, I have received your Letters.

Fourth R U L E.

When the Pronoun in the Accusative Case, such as, *che, lo, la, gli, le*, goes before the Participle,

ticiples, then the latter is declined, and agrees with the Pronoun, to which it relates both in Gender and Number; as, *il cappello che ho comprato*, the Hat I, or which I bought; *la lettera ch' ho scritta*, the Letter I wrote; *i libri ch' ho comprati*, the Books I bought; *l' ho veduto*, I have seen him; *l' ho veduta*, I have seen her.

According to this Rule, the Participle is declined in reciprocal and reflected Verbs; as, *egli s'è ammazzato*, he has killed himself; *ella s'è ammazzata*, she has killed her self.

The Participle is indeclinable, when there follows immediately a Verb in the Infinitive; as, *Il Papa ha fatto scomunicare gli eretici*, the Pope has excommunicated the Hereticks; *mia sorella ha creduto partire*, my Sister thought to go.

Sixth R U L E.

The Participles Active, *avendo*, and *essendo*, are sometimes suppressed before Participles Passive; ex. *il quale inteso il disegno*, instead of *avendo inteso*, who having known their Design; *ammalatosi il Re*, instead of *essendosi ammalato*, the King being taken ill.

Note, That although we suppress the Participles *avendo*, *essendo*, we never suppress the Pronouns Conjunctive, which follow them, but they must be placed after the Participles Passive; ex. *avendolo veduto*, we say, *vedutolo*, having seen him; *essendosene accorto*, we say, *accortosene*, he perceiving it.

Seventh R U L E.

Instead of the Participles *avendo*, and *essendo*, we use sometimes the Perfect Definite, and the Future of the Indicative Mood, with the Par-

ticle *che* before ; ex. *finito ch' ebbe di scrivere*, having done writing ; *finita che fu la predica*, the Sermon being done ; *cominciata che sarà la guerra*, as soon as the War is begun ; *pransato che averò*, after I have dined.

CH A P. VI.

Of the Use of Prepositions.

THE Case governed by Prepositions has been abundantly spoken of in the Analogy ; and therefore I shall only make here some Observations upon the Use of some Prepositions.

First OBSERVATION.

The Preposition *verso* relates to a Place, to a Person, and to Time ; generally it governs the Accusative, and sometimes the Genitive ; as, *verso Roma*, towards Rome ; *verso me*, or *di me*, towards me ; *verso la Sera*, towards the Evening.

Inverso relates only to a Person ; *inverso me*, towards me.

Second OBSERVATION.

The Prepositions *in* and *nel*, although they signify the same Thing, yet are not indifferently used ; *In* is used before Verbs of Motion or Rest ; ex. *Io vo in Roma*, I go to Rome ; *io sono in Londra*, I am at London. It is used also before Nouns that have no Article ; ex. *è stato famoso in Pace è in guerra*, he has been famous in Peace and War ; *egli è in pericolo*, he is in Danger : But if proper Names have an Article, or are followed by

by an Article, we use the Prepositions, *nel, nello, nella, nè, nelle, negli*, according to the Gender and Number of the Substantive; as, *nel giardino*, in the Garden; *nella chiesa*, in the Church; *nello studio*, in the Study; *nell' Italia*, in Italy, &c.

When we speak of a Space of Time, we use the Preposition *in*, to express the whole Time one hath been about doing any Thing; as, *ha composto la sua Istoria in tre anni*, he composed his History in three Years. We also use *in*, to signify that the Thing in Question will not be done till after a certain Time; as, *verrà in otto giorni*, he will come in eight Days.





Vocabolario Italiano ed Inglese.

A

VOCABULARY,

ITALIAN and ENGLISH.

Del Mondo in generale.

Of the World in general.

D^{IO}, Iddio,
Giesu Cristo,
Lo Spirito santo,

God.
Jesus Christ.
the Holy Ghost.
the Trinity.

La Trinità,
Il Nostro Creatore,
Il Nostro Redentore,
La Creazione,
Il Consolatore,
Il Santificatore,
La Vergine,

our Maker.
our Redeemer.
the Creation.
the Comforter.
the Sanctifier.
our Lady, the Virgin
Mary.

Le Creature,
Una creatura vivente, ?
o un Animale, S

the Creatures.
a living Creature, or an
Animal.

La Natura,
Un Corpo,
Uno Spirito,
Il Cielo,

Nature.
a Body.
a Spirit, or Ghost.
Heaven.

<i>Il Pardiſo,</i>	Paradiſe.
<i>La Gloria,</i>	Glory.
<i>Un Angelo,</i>	an Angel.
<i>Un Arcangelo,</i>	an Archangel
<i>Un Cherubino,</i>	a Cherub.
<i>Un Serafino,</i>	a Seraph.
<i>I Santi,</i>	the Saints.
<i>I Beati,</i>	the Bleſſed.
<i>Un Martire,</i>	a Martyr.
<i>Un Profeta,</i>	a Prophet.
<i>Un Evangeliſta,</i>	an Evangeliſt.
<i>Un Apoſtolo,</i>	an Apoſtle.
<i>L' Inferno,</i>	Hell.
<i>Il Purgatorio,</i>	Purgatory.
<i>Il Diavolo,</i>	the Devil.
<i>I Dannati,</i>	the Damned.

Degli Elementi.

Of the Elements.

<i>Il fuoco,</i>	the Fire.
<i>L' Aria,</i>	the Air.
<i>La Terra,</i>	the Earth.
<i>L' Acqua,</i>	the Water.
<i>Il Mare,</i>	the Sea.
<i>Il Cielo, il Firmamento,</i>	the Sky.

Gli Aſtri.

The Stars.

<i>Una Stella,</i>	a Star.
<i>Il Sole,</i>	the Sun.
<i>La Luna,</i>	the Moon.
<i>Un Pianeta,</i>	a Planet.
<i>Una Cometa,</i>	a Comet.
<i>I Raggi del Sole,</i>	the Beams of the Sun.
<i>La Luce,</i>	the Light.
<i>Le Tenebre,</i>	Darkneſs.
<i>Il caldo, il calore,</i>	the Heat.

<i>Il Freddo,</i>		the Cold.
<i>Un Vapore,</i>		a Vapour.
<i>Una Esalazione,</i>		an Exhalation.
<i>Il Vento,</i>		the Wind.
<i>L' Oriente, il Levante,</i>		the East.
<i>Il Ponente, l' Occidente,</i>		the West.
<i>Il Mezzo di,</i>		the South.
<i>Il Settentrione, o la</i>	}	the North.
<i>Tramontana,</i>		
<i>Bel Tempo,</i>		fair Weather.
<i>Una Nubbe, o</i>	}	a Cloud.
<i>una Nuvola,</i>		
<i>La Pioggia,</i>		the Rain.
<i>La Grandine,</i>		the Hail.
<i>La Neve,</i>		the Snow.
<i>Il Gelo,</i>		the Frost.
<i>Il Digelo,</i>		the Thaw.
<i>La Ruggiada,</i>		the Dew.
<i>Il Gelavermi,</i>		the glazed Frost.
<i>La Nebbia,</i>		the Fog or Mist.
<i>Una Tempesta,</i>		a Tempest.
<i>Il Baleno, il Lampo,</i>		a Flash of Lightning.
<i>Il Tuono,</i>		the Thunder.
<i>Il Fulmine,</i>		the Thunderbolt.
<i>Il Terremuoto,</i>		the Earthquake.
<i>Il Dilluvio,</i>		the Deluge.

*Il Tempo.**Time.*

<i>Il Giorno,</i>	the Day.
<i>Il far del Giorno,</i>	Break of Day.
<i>L' Aurora,</i>	the Dawn.
<i>La Notte,</i>	the Night.
<i>Il mezzo Giorno,</i>	Noon.
<i>La mezza Notte,</i>	Midnight.
<i>La Mattina,</i>	the Morning.
<i>La Sera,</i>	the Evening.

<i>Il Tramontar del sole,</i>	Sun-set.
<i>Un giorno di festa,</i>	a Holiday.
<i>Un giorno di lavoro,</i>	a Workday.
<i>Oggi,</i>	to Day.
<i>Hieri,</i>	Yesterday.
<i>Avant' bieri, or</i>	} the Day before Yester-
<i>Hier l' altro,</i>	
<i>Domani or dimani,</i>	to Morrow.
<i>Posdomani,</i>	after to Morrow.
<i>Un' Ora,</i>	an Hour.
<i>Una Mezz' ora,</i>	half an Hour.
<i>Un quarto d' ora,</i>	a Quarter of an Hour.
<i>Un Minuto,</i>	a Minute.
<i>Un Momento,</i>	a Moment.
<i>Un Istante,</i>	an Instant.
<i>Una Settimana,</i>	a Week.
<i>Un Mese,</i>	a Month.
<i>Un Anno,</i>	a Year.
<i>Un quarto d' anno,</i>	a Quarter of a Year.
<i>Un Secolo,</i>	an Age.
<i>L' Eternita,</i>	Eternity.
<i>Il Principio,</i>	the Beginning.
<i>Il Mezzo,</i>	the Middle.
<i>La Fine,</i>	the End.

I Giorni della Settimana. The Days of the Week.

<i>Lunedì,</i>	Monday.
<i>Martedì,</i>	Tuesday.
<i>Mercordì,</i>	Wednesday.
<i>Giovedì,</i>	Thursday.
<i>Venerdì,</i>	Friday.
<i>Sabato,</i>	Saturday.
<i>Domenica,</i>	Sunday.

I Mesi dell' Anno. The Months of the Year.

<i>Gennaro,</i>	January.
	<i>Febraro,</i>

<i>Febbraro,</i>	February.
<i>Marzo,</i>	March.
<i>Aprile,</i>	April.
<i>Maggio,</i>	May.
<i>Giugno,</i>	June.
<i>Luglio,</i>	July.
<i>Agosto,</i>	August.
<i>Settembre,</i>	September.
<i>Ottobre,</i>	October.
<i>Novembre,</i>	November.
<i>Decembre,</i>	December.

Le quattro Stagioni dell' Anno, *The Four Seasons of the Year.*

La Primavera, the Spring.
La State, the Summer.
L' Autunno, the Autumn, or Fall of
 the Leaf.
Il Verno, the Winter.

Le Feste dell' Anno. *The Holy Days of the Year.*

Il capo d' Anno, New-Year's Day.
Gl' Innocenti, Innocents-Day.
L' Epifania, Twelfth-Day, or Epi-
 phany.
La Cerajuola, Candlemas-Day.
Il Carnevale, Carnival, or Shrove-
 Tide.

*Il Mercordi delle ce- }
 neri, } Ash-Wednesday.*

Le quattro tempora, the Ember Week.
La settimana santa, the Holy Week.

*La Domenica delle }
 Palme, } Palm-Sunday.*

Il Venerdì santo, Good-Friday.

<i>Pasqua,</i>	Easter.
<i>Il Giorno di Pasqua,</i>	Easter-Day.
<i>La Domenica in Albis,</i>	Low Sunday.
<i>La festa del Corpus } Domini }</i>	Corpus Christi-Day.
<i>San Giovanni,</i>	Midsummer-Day.
<i>La festa di tutt' i Santi,</i>	All-Saints Day.
<i>Il Giorno de' Morti,</i>	All-Souls.
<i>L' Avvento,</i>	the Advent.
<i>Natale,</i>	Christmas.
<i>La Vigilia,</i>	the Eve.
<i>Un Giorno di digiuno,</i>	a Fast-Day.
<i>Un Giorno grasso,</i>	a Flesh-Day.
<i>Un Giorno magro,</i>	a Fish-Day.
<i>La Messe,</i>	the Harvest.
<i>Le Vendemie,</i>	the Vintage.

Il Genere Umano.

Mankind.

<i>Un Uomo,</i>	a Man.
<i>Una donna,</i>	a Woman.
<i>Un vecchio,</i>	an old Man.
<i>Una vecchia,</i>	an old Woman.
<i>Un Giovane,</i>	a young Man.
<i>Una Giovane,</i>	a young Woman.
<i>Un Fanciullo, }</i>	a Child.
<i>Una Fanciulla, }</i>	
<i>Un Ragazzo, }</i>	a youth.
<i>Una Ragazza, }</i>	
<i>Una Vergine, e }</i>	a Virgin or Maid.
<i>una Zitella, }</i>	
<i>Uno Scapolo,</i>	a Batchelor.
<i>Un Gigante,</i>	a Giant.
<i>Un Nano,</i>	a Dwarf.
<i>L' Età dell' Uomo,</i>	the Age of Man.
<i>L' Infanzia,</i>	Childhood.
<i>La Gioventù,</i>	Youth.

La

La Virilità,
La Vecchiaja,

Manhood.
old Age.

Le Parti del Corpo Hu-
mano.

The Parts of a human
Body.

Il Corpo,
Un Membro,
La Testa, il Capo,
I Capelli.
Il Viso,
Il or la Fronte,
Le Fattezze,
Gli Occhi,
Le Ciglia,
Le Palpebre,
La Pupilla dell' occhio,
Il Naso,
Le Narici,
Le Guance,
Le Labbra,
Il Labbro di sopra,
Il Labbro di sotto,
La Bocca,
Un Dente,
I Denti,
Le Gengive,
Le Mascelle,
Il Palato,
La Gola,
Gli Orecchi,
le Orecchie,
Le Tempia,
Il Mento,
La Barba,
Il Collo,
Il Seno,

the Body.
a Member or Limb.
the Head.
the Hair of the Head.
the Face.
the Forehead.
the Features.
the Eyes.
the Eye-brows.
the Eye-lids.
the Eye-ball.
the Nose.
the Nostrils.
the Cheeks.
the Lips.
the Upper Lip.
the Under Lip.
the Mouth.
a Tooth.
the Teeth.
the Gums.
the Jaws.
the Palate.
the Throat.
the Ears.
the Temples.
the Chin.
the Beard.
the Neck.
the Bosom.

human

nb.

Head.

<i>Il Petto,</i>	the Breast.
<i>Le Mammelle,</i>	the Bubbies.
<i>Le Spalle,</i>	the Shoulders.
<i>Il Braccio,</i>	the Arm.
<i>Le Braccia,</i>	the Arms.
<i>Il Braccio destro,</i>	the right Arm.
<i>Il Braccio manco,</i>	the left Arm.
<i>Il Gomito,</i>	the Elbow.
<i>La Mano,</i>	the Hand.
<i>La Man dritta,</i>	the right Hand.
<i>La man Manca,</i>	the left Hand.
<i>Il Rovescio della Mano,</i>	the back of the Hand.
<i>La Palma della Mano,</i>	the Palm of the Hand,
<i>Il Dito.</i>	the Finger.
<i>Le Dita,</i>	the Fingers.
<i>Il Police,</i>	the Thumb.
<i>Una Giuntura,</i>	a Joint.
<i>Un Nodo,</i>	a Knuckle.
<i>L' Ungbia,</i>	the Nail.
<i>Il Pugno,</i>	the Fist.
<i>Il Ventre,</i>	the Belly.
<i>L' Umbilico,</i>	the Navel.
<i>Il Dosso o Dorso.</i>	the Back.
<i>La Schiena,</i>	the Back-bone.
<i>Le Reni,</i>	the Reins.
<i>Il fianco,</i>	the Side.
<i>Una Costola,</i>	a Rib.
<i>La Cintura,</i>	the Waste.
<i>De Natiche,</i>	the Buttocks.
<i>La Coscia,</i>	the Thigh.
<i>Il Ginocchio,</i>	the Knee.
<i>Le Ginocchia,</i>	the Knees.
<i>La Gamba,</i>	the Leg.
<i>La Polpa della Gamba,</i>	the Calf of the Leg.
<i>L' Oso della Gamba,</i>	the Shin.
<i>La Nore del Piede,</i>	the Ankle.

S

Il

<i>Il Piede,</i>	the Foot.
<i>La Pianta del Piede,</i>	the Sole of the Foot.
<i>Il Collo del piede,</i>	the Instep.
<i>Il Calcagno,</i>	the Heel.
<i>Il dito del piede,</i>	the Toe.
<i>La Pelle, o il cuojo,</i>	the Skin.

Parti Interne, ed altre del Corpo. *Inward, and other Parts of the Body.*

<i>Un Osso,</i>	a Bone.
<i>La Midolla,</i>	the Marrow.
<i>La Carne,</i>	the Flesh.
<i>Il Grasso,</i>	the Fat.
<i>Il Sangue,</i>	the Blood.
<i>Una Vena,</i>	a Vein.
<i>Un' Arteria,</i>	an Artery.
<i>I Pori,</i>	the Pores.
<i>Un Nervo,</i>	a Sinew or Nerve.
<i>Un Muscolo,</i>	a Muscle.
<i>Il Cranio,</i>	the Skull.
<i>Le Cervella,</i>	the Brain.
<i>Le Viscere,</i>	the Entrails.
<i>Lo Stomaco,</i>	the Stomach.
<i>Le Budella,</i>	the Bowels.
<i>Il Cuore,</i>	the Heart.
<i>I Polmoni,</i>	the Lungs.
<i>Il Fegato,</i>	the Liver.
<i>La Milza,</i>	the Spleen.
<i>Il Fiele,</i>	the Gall.
<i>La Vescica,</i>	the Bladder.
<i>Il Latte,</i>	the Milk.

Esfcrementi del Corpo. *Excrements of the Body.*

<i>Il Pelo,</i>	the Hair in general.
<i>I Capelli,</i>	the Hair of the Head.

Una

<i>Una Zazzera,</i>	a Head of Hair.
<i>I Mustacci,</i>	} the Whiskers.
<i>Le Basette,</i>	
<i>Una Lagrima,</i>	a Tear.
<i>Lo Sputo,</i>	a Spit.
<i>La Saliva,</i>	the Spittle.
<i>Il Sudore,</i>	the Sweat.
<i>L' Urina,</i>	the Urine.

Certi Accidenti e Proprietà del Corpo. *Certain Accidents and Properties of the Body.*

<i>Il riso,</i>	the Laughter.
<i>Il Pianto,</i>	Weeping.
<i>Il Fiato,</i>	the Breath.
<i>Un Gemito,</i>	a Groan.
<i>Un Sospiro,</i>	a Sigh.
<i>Lo Sternuto,</i>	Sneezing.
<i>Il Singhiozzo,</i>	the Hiccough.
<i>Un Rutto,</i>	a Belch.
<i>Il Sonno,</i>	Sleep
<i>Un Sogno,</i>	a Dream.
<i>La Voce,</i>	the Voice.
<i>La Parola,</i>	the Speech.
<i>La Bellezza,</i>	Beauty.
<i>La Bruttezza,</i>	Ugglinefs.
<i>La Magrezza,</i>	Leannefs.
<i>La Grenezza,</i>	Fatnefs.
<i>La Sanità,</i>	Health.
<i>La Statura,</i>	the Shape.
<i>La Cera,</i>	the Mien.
<i>L' Aria,</i>	the Looks or Air.
<i>L' Andatura,</i>	the Gate.
<i>Il gesto,</i>	the Action or Motion.
<i>Una Postura,</i>	a Posture.
<i>Il Grugno,</i>	a Grimace, or Mouths.
<i>Fare il Grugno,</i>	to make Mouths.

I Cinque Senfi del Corpo, e loro Ogetti.

I a Vista,
L' Udito,
L' Odorato,
Il Gusto,
Il Tatto,
Un Colore,
Un Suono,
Un odore,
Un buon odore,
Un puzzo,
Un Sapore,

The Five Senses of the Body, and their Objects.

the Sight.
 the Hearing.
 the Smell.
 the Taste.
 the Feeling.
 a Colour.
 a Sound.
 a Smell.
 a sweet Smell.
 a Stench.
 a Taste.

Delle Malattie.

Una malattia,
Un' infermità,
Un' indisposizione,
Un dolore,
Un male.
Mal di ventre,
Mal di denti,
Mal di testa,
La febbre,
La terzana,
La quartana,
La rabbia,
Una tosse,
Un catarro,
La raucità,
L' asma,
Il mal caduco,
Uno scenimento,

Of Diseases.

a Sickness or Disease.
 a Distemper or Illness.
 an Indisposition.
 a Pain.
 an Ach.
 the Belly-ach.
 the Tooth-ach.
 the Head-ach.
 a Fever.
 a Tertian Ague.
 a Quartan Ague.
 Madness.
 a Cough.
 a Rheum, or a Cold.
 Hoarseness.
 short Wind.
 the Falling Sickness.
 a Fainting.

Lo scorbutico,
La lepra,
La peste,
Il flusso di sangue,
Le vajuola,
La rugivola,
Un pizzicore,
La scabbia,
Una bolla,
L' Eticia,
La colica,
Dolori colici,
La vertigine,
La gotta o la podagra,
La pietra,
La pleuresia,
La Idropesia,
La Paralifia,
Un tumore,
Un impostema,
Un' ulcera,
La marcia,

Un canchero,
La cangrena,
Una ferita,
Una Cicatrice,
Un callo,
Un colpo,
Una contusione,
Uno schiaffo,
Un pugno,
Un calcio,
La vita,
La morte,
La Ruffurrezione,

the Scurvy.
the Leprosy.
the Pestilence or Plague.
the Bloody-Flux.
the Small Pox.
the Measles.
an Itching.
the Itch or Scab.
a Wheal or Blister.
Phthifick.
the Cholick.
the Gripings.
the Dizzinefs.
the Gout.
the Stone.
the Pleurifie.
the Dropsy.
the Palfy.
a Swelling.
an Impoftume.
a Sore or Ulcer.
the Matter that comes
out of a Sore.
a Cancer.
the Gangrene.
a Wound.
a Scar.
a Corn.
a Blow.
a Bruife.
a Box on the Ear.
a Fifty Cuff.
a Kick.
Life.
Death.
the Refurrection.

Dell' Anima.

L' Anima,
Lo Spirito,
L' Intendimento,
La Volontà,
La Ragione,
Il Senso,
Il Giudizio,
Il Genio,
Stupidità,
Vivacità,
La Memoria,
La Dimenticanza,
La Saviezza,
La Follia,
La Scienza,
Uno Sbaglio,
Un errore,
L' Amore,
L' Odio,
La Fede,
La Speranza,
La Paura,
La Disperazione,
La Pace,
L' Allegrezza,
La Malinconia,
Il Piacere,
Il Dolore,
Il Dispiacere,
Un Dubbio,
Sospetto,
Desiderio,
Voglia,
Arditezza,

Of the Soul.

the Soul.
 the Mind.
 the Understanding.
 the Will.
 the Reason.
 the Sense.
 Discretion or Judgment.
 the Genius.
 Dulness.
 Liveliness.
 the Memory.
 Forgetfulness.
 Wisdom.
 Folly.
 Knowledge.
 a Mistake.
 an Errour.
 Love.
 Hatred.
 Faith.
 Hope.
 Fear.
 Despair.
 Peace.
 Joy.
 Sadness.
 Pleasure.
 } Grief or Sorrow.
 a Doubt.
 Suspicion.
 Desire.
 Wish.
 Boldness.

<i>Codardia,</i>		Cowardise.
<i>Timidita,</i>		Bashfulness.
<i>Vergogna,</i>		Shame.
<i>Invidia,</i>		Envy.
<i>Confidenza,</i>	}	Confidence, Trust.
<i>Fiducia,</i>		
<i>La collera,</i>		Anger.
<i>L' Ira,</i>		Wrath.
<i>La Pietà,</i>	}	Pity.
<i>La Compassione</i>		
<i>La Misericordia,</i>		Mercy.

Degli Abiti, e di quel che si porta adosso. *Of Cloaths, and Things carried about one.*

<i>Un vestito,</i>	}	a Suit of Cloaths.
<i>Un abito,</i>		
<i>Un Tabaro,</i>		a Coat.
<i>Un Giustacore,</i>		a close Coat.
<i>Una Camicivola,</i>		a Wastecoat.
<i>I Calzoni,</i>		the Breeches.
<i>La Manica,</i>		the Sleeve.
<i>Il Fornimento,</i>		the Trimming.
<i>Il Gallone,</i>		Lace.
<i>Il Merletto,</i>		Lace.
<i>La Frangia,</i>		Fringe.
<i>La Fodera,</i>		the Lining.
<i>Un Bottone,</i>		a Button.
<i>Una Bottoniera,</i>		a Button-hole.
<i>La Saccocia,</i>	}	the Pocket.
<i>La Tasca,</i>		
<i>La Scarsella,</i>		a Fob.
<i>Un Mantello,</i>		a Cloak.
<i>Una veste da Camera,</i>		a Night-Gown.
<i>Un Giubbone,</i>		a Doublet.
<i>Una Stringa,</i>		a String.
<i>Un Centurino,</i>		a Girdle.

Le biancherie,
Una camicia.
Le mutande,
I manicetti,
Mezze maniche,
Un collare,
Una crovatta,
Un fazzoletto,
Una berretta,
Gli scarpini,
Le calzette,
Le sotto calzette,
Le legaccio,
Le scarpe,
Le fibbie,
Le pianelle,
Il capello,
Una parrucca,
Un Guanto,
Un paro di guanti,
Un manicotto,
Un pettine,
Una spada,
Un pendone,
Gli stivali,
Gli stivaletti,
Gli sproni,
Un anello,
Un orivolo,
Una tabacchiera,
Una borsa,
Uno steccadenti,
Uno stucchio,
Gli occhiali,
Un rasojo,

the Linnen.
 a Shirt or Shift.
 the Drawers.
 the Cuffs or Ruffles.
 Cover-fluts or Shams.
 a Band.
 a Cravat.
 a Handkerchief.
 a Cap.
 the Socks.
 the Stockings.
 the Stirrup-Stockings.
 the Garter s.
 the Shoes.
 the Buckles.
 the Slippers.
 the Hat.
 a Wig.
 a Glove.
 a Pair of Gloves.
 a Muff.
 a Comb.
 a Sword.
 a Belt.
 the Boots.
 thin Boots.
 the Spurs.
 a Ring.
 a Watch.
 a Snuff-Box.
 a Purse.
 a Tooth-picker.
 a Case.
 the Spectacles.
 a Razor.

Abiti

Ab

Una Go
Una So
Un Gua
Il Bufo
Una Ca
Un mar
Una Go
Una Co
Una Cu
I Mani
La Man
Un Gre
La Scia
Una Ma
La Stec
Un vez
Una col
Gli Ore
Un Affi
Una Spi
Il Vento
I Nei,
Lo Spec
Un Pett
Il Belle
Del Mer
Un Nast
Un Gioj
Un Ago,
Un Dita
Le Forb
Della Se
Del Filo

Abiti da donna.

Cloaths belonging to a Woman.

Una Gonella,
Una Soggonna,
Un Guardinfante,
Il Busto,
Una Camiciuola,
Un mantello,
Una Gonna,
Una Comicia da donna,
Una Cuffia,
I Manichini,
La Mantellina,
Un Grembiule,
La Sciarpa,
Una Maschera,
La Stecca,
Un vezzo di Perle,
Una collana d' Oro,
Gli Orecchini,
Un Affibbiatojo,
Una Spilla,
Il Ventaglio,
I Nei,
Lo Specchio,
Un Pettine,
Il Belletto,
Del Merletto,
Un Nastro,
Un Giojello,
Un Ago,
Un Ditale,
Le Forbici,
Della Seta,
Del Filo,

a Petticoat.
 an under Petticoat.
 a Hoop-Petticoat.
 the Stays.
 a Bodice.
 a Mantua.
 a Gown.
 a Smock.
 a Head-dress.
 the Ruffles.
 a Combing-cloth.
 an Apron.
 the Scarf.
 a Mask.
 a Busk.
 a Necklace of Pearls.
 a Gold chain.
 a Bob or Ear-Pendant.
 a Clasp.
 a Pin.
 the Fan.
 the Patches.
 the Looking-glass.
 a Comb.
 Paint.
 Lace.
 a Ribbon.
 a Jewel.
 a Needle.
 a Thimble.
 the Cizars.
 Silk.
 Thread.

Una

Una conocchia,

a Distaff.

Un Fuso,

a Spindle.

*Del Mangiare.**Of Eating.**Il Cibo,*

Food.

I Viveri,

Victuals.

Le Provisionsi,

Provisions.

Un Pasto,

a Meal.

La Colazione,

Breakfast.

Il Pranzo,

Dinner.

*La Merenda,*the Beaver or After-
nooning.*La Cena,*

Supper.

Un Festino,

a Feast

Un Convitato,

a Guest.

Il Pane,

the Bread.

La Farina,

the Meal.

Il Fior di farina,

the Flower.

La Crusca,

the Bran.

La Pasta,

the Dough.

Il Levito,

the Leaven.

Una Pagnotta,

a Loaf.

Del Biscotto,

Bisket.

Un Tozzo,

a Bit.

Un Pezza,

a Piece.

Una Fetta,

a Slice.

Una Minestra,

a Mess.

Della Carne,

Meat.

Dell' Allesto,

boiled Meat.

Dell' Arosto,

roast Meat.

Un Manicaretto,

a Ragooe.

Una Fricassee,

a Fricass.

Uno Stufato,

shewed Meat.

Carne Salata,

salted Meat.

Carn: Fresca,

fresh Meat.

*Della**Della C**o ma**Del Ca**Della V**Del Ma**Dell' A**Del Po**Del La**Un Pre**Una Sa**Un San**Della S**Un Pas**Il Brod**Un Con**La Zup**Della P**Del lat**Del fior**Del Bun**Del Cas**Un Uov**Un novo**Una Fri**Delle F**Una Tor**Una Cre**Un Insa**Il Sale,**L' Olio,**L' Aceto**Una Sal**La Most**De' Cap**De' Fon**Dell' Al*

<i>Della Carne grassa</i>	}	lean or fat Meat:
<i>o magra,</i>		
<i>Del Castrato,</i>		Mutton.
<i>Della Vitella,</i>		Veal.
<i>Del Manfo,</i>		Beef.
<i>Dell' Agnello,</i>		Lamb.
<i>Del Porco,</i>		Pork.
<i>Del Lardo,</i>		Bacon.
<i>Un Presciutto,</i>		a Gammon of Bacon.
<i>Una Salsiccia,</i>		a Sausage.
<i>Un Sanguinaccio,</i>		a black Pudden.
<i>Della Selvaticina,</i>		Venison.
<i>Un Pasticcio,</i>		a Pie.
<i>Il Brodo,</i>		the Broth.
<i>Un Consumato,</i>		gelly Broth.
<i>La Zuppa,</i>		the Soop.
<i>Della Pappa,</i>		Pap.
<i>Del latte,</i>		Milk.
<i>Del fior di latta,</i>		Cream.
<i>Del Burro,</i>		Butter.
<i>Del Cascio,</i>		Cheese.
<i>Un Uovo,</i>		an Egg.
<i>Un uovo fresco,</i>		a new laid Egg.
<i>Una Frittata,</i>		a Pancake of Eggs.
<i>Delle Frittelle,</i>		Fritters.
<i>Una Torta,</i>		a Tart.
<i>Una Crostata,</i>		a Pie.
<i>Un Insalata,</i>		a Sallet.
<i>Il Sale,</i>		Salt.
<i>L' Olio,</i>		Oyl.
<i>L' Aceto,</i>		Vinegar.
<i>Una Salza,</i>		a Sauce.
<i>La Mostarda,</i>		the Mustard.
<i>De' Caperi,</i>		Capers.
<i>De' Fonghi,</i>		Mushromes.
<i>Dell' Alici,</i>		Anchovies.

Le Spezierie,
Del Zucchero,
Del Pepe,
La Cannella,
Dei Garofani,
Una noce moscata,
Del Safarono,
Della Regolizia,
Della Confitture,
Dei Zuccherini,
La Frutta,
La Bevanda,
Dell' Acqua,
Della Birra,
Del Vino,
Del vin rosso,
Del vin bianco,
Del vino di Francia,
Del Cidro,
La Feccia,
Un Sorso,
Un Bicchiere,

Spice.
 Sugar.
 Pepper.
 Cinnamon.
 Cloves.
 a Nutmeg.
 Saffron.
 Liquorice.
 Sweetmeats.
 Sugar-Plums.
 the Desert.
 the Drink.
 Water.
 Beer.
 Wine.
 Claret.
 White-wine
 French Wine.
 Cyder.
 Dregs.
 a Draught.
 a Glafs.

Gradi di Parentado.

Il padre,
la Madre,
Un Fanciullo,
I Figliuoli,
Un Figlio,
Una Figlia,
Il Nonno, l'Avo,
La Nonna, l'Ava,
Il Bisnonno, il
Bisavo,

Degrees of Kindred.

the Father.
 the Mother.
 a Child.
 Children.
 a Son.
 a Daughter.
 the Grandfather.
 the Grandmother.
 the great Grandfather.

}
 }

<i>la Bisnonna, la</i>	}	the Great Grandmo-
<i>Bisava,</i>		ther.
<i>Il Nipotino,</i>		the Grandson.
<i>la Nipotina,</i>		the Granddaughter.
<i>Il Fratello,</i>		the Brother.
<i>la Sorella,</i>		the Sister.
<i>I Gemelli,</i>		the Twins.
<i>Il Zio,</i>		the Uncle.
<i>la Zia,</i>		the Aunt.
<i>Il Nipote,</i>		the Nephew.
<i>la Nipote,</i>		the Niece.
<i>Il Cugino,</i>		the Cousin.
<i>La Cugina,</i>		the She Cousin.
<i>Il fratel cugino,</i>		a First Cousin.
<i>I Discendenti,</i>		Posterity.
<i>I parenti,</i>		Relations.
<i>Un parente,</i>		a Kinsman.
<i>Una parente,</i>		a Kinswoman.
<i>Un Amante,</i>		a Lover.
<i>Un Amata,</i>		a Mistress.
<i>Il Matrimonio,</i>		Wedlock.
<i>le Nozze,</i>		a Wedding.
<i>lo Sposo,</i>		the Bridegroom.
<i>la Sposa,</i>		the Bride.
<i>la Dote,</i>		the Portion.
<i>Il Marito,</i>		the Husband.
<i>la Moglie,</i>		the Wife.
<i>Il Suocero,</i>		the Father-in-Law.
<i>la Suocera,</i>		the Mother-in-Law.
<i>Il Patrigno,</i>		the Step-Father.
<i>la Matrigna,</i>		the Step-Mother.
<i>Il Figliastro,</i>	}	the Son-in-Law.
<i>il Genero,</i>		
<i>La Figliastra,</i>		the Daughter-in-Law.
<i>Un Battefimo,</i>		a Christning.
<i>Un Compare,</i>		a He Gossip.

<i>Una commare,</i>	a She Gossip.
<i>Un Patrino,</i>	a Godfather.
<i>Una Matrina,</i>	a Godmother.
<i>Il Figlioccio,</i>	a Godson.
<i>la Figlioccia,</i>	a Goddaughter.
<i>Un Erede,</i>	an Heir.
<i>Un' Eredità,</i>	an Inheritance.
<i>Una Erede,</i>	an Heiress.
<i>Un Vedouo,</i>	a Widower.
<i>Una Vedova,</i>	a Widow.
<i>Un Tutore,</i>	a Guardian.
<i>Un Pupillo,</i>	a Pupil.
<i>Un Orfano,</i>	an Orphan.
<i>Un Orfana,</i>	a She Orphan.
<i>Una Donna,</i>	} a Woman in the Straw.
<i>di Parto,</i>	
<i>Una Mammama,</i>	a Midwife.
<i>la Balia,</i>	the Nurse.
<i>Un Figlio di latte,</i>	a foster Child.
<i>Un Padre di latte,</i>	a foster Father.
<i>Un Frattello di latte,</i>	a foster Brother.
<i>Un Battardo,</i>	a Bastard.
<i>Un Battarda,</i>	a Bastard Daughter.
<i>Un Amico,</i>	a He Friend.
<i>Un' Amica,</i>	a She Friend.
<i>Un Rivale,</i>	a He Rival.
<i>Una Rivale.</i>	a She Rival.
<i>Un Vicino,</i>	a He Neighbour.
<i>Una Vicina,</i>	a She Neighbour.
<i>Un Compagno</i>	a He Companion.
<i>Un Compagna,</i>	a She Companion.
<i>Un Oste,</i>	a Landlord.
<i>Un' Osteffa,</i>	a Landlady.

*Dignita**Digni*

Un Impe
Un Impe
Un Re,
Una Reg
Un Prin
Una Pri
Un Arcia
Una Arc
Un Duca
Una Duc
Un Marc
Una Mar
Un Conte
Una Conu
Un Visco
Una Visco
Un Baron
Una Bar
Un Cava
Uno Scud
Un Genti
Una Genu
Un Domo
Una Dam
Un Amba
Un' Amba
Un Gover
Una Gove
Un Sindio
Un Giuro

Dignità Temporalì.

Temporal Dignities.

<i>Un Imperatore,</i>	an Emperour.
<i>Un Imperatrice,</i>	an Emprefs.
<i>Un Re,</i>	a King.
<i>Una Regina,</i>	a Queen.
<i>Un Principe,</i>	a Prince.
<i>Una Principessa,</i>	a Princess.
<i>Un Arciduca,</i>	an Arch-duke.
<i>Una Arciduchessa,</i>	an Arch-dutcheſs.
<i>Un Duca,</i>	a Duke.
<i>Una Duchessa,</i>	a Dutcheſs.
<i>Un Marchese,</i>	a Marqueſs.
<i>Una Marchese,</i>	a Marchioneſs.
<i>Un Conte,</i>	an Earl, or Count.
<i>Una Contessa,</i>	a Counteſs.
<i>Un Viſconte,</i>	a Viſcount.
<i>Una Viſcontessa,</i>	a Viſcounteſs.
<i>Un Barone,</i>	a Baron.
<i>Una Baroneſſa,</i>	a Baroneſs.
<i>Un Cavaliere,</i>	a Knight.
<i>Uno Scudiere,</i>	an Eſquire.
<i>Un Gentiluomo,</i>	a Gentleman.
<i>Una Gentildonna,</i>	a Gentlewoman.
<i>Un Domo,</i>	a Lord.
<i>Una Dama,</i>	a Lady.
<i>Un Ambaſciadore,</i>	an Ambaſſador.
<i>Un' Ambaſciatrice,</i>	an Embaſſadreſs.
<i>Un Governatore,</i>	a Governour.
<i>Una Governatrice,</i>	a Governeſs.
<i>Un Sindaco,</i>	an Alderman.
<i>Un Giurato,</i>	a Jurate.

Ufficiali

Ufficiali di Giustizia.

Officers of Justice.

Il Parlamento,
La Camera alta,
La camera bassa, o
la camera de' Co-
muni.

the Parliament.
 the House of Lords.

the House of Commons.

L'Oratore o'l Presidente,
Il Cancelliere,
Un Giudice di Pace,
Un Presidente,
Un Configliere,
Un Avvocato,
Un Procuratore,
Un Notaro,
Uno Scrivano,
Uno Sbirro,
Un Carceriere,
Il Boja,

the Speaker.
 the Chancellor.
 a Justice of Peace.
 a President.
 a Serjeant at Law.
 a Lawyer or Advocate.
 an Attorney.
 a Scrivener or Notary.
 a Clerk.
 a Serjeant or Bailey.
 a Goaler.
 a Hang-man.

D'una Chiesa.

Of a Church.

Una Chiesa,
Un Tempio,
Una Cappella,
La Nave d'una Chiesa,
Il Coro,
L'Altare.
Il Pulpito,
Il Desco,
La Sagristia,
Il Fonte,
Una Predica,
La Bibbia,

a Church.
 a Temple.
 a Chapel.
 the Nave of a Church.
 the Quire.
 the Altar.
 the Pulpit.
 the Desk.
 the Vestry.
 the Font.
 a Sermon.
 the Bible.

Il Vecch
Teslan
Il Vange
Un Vers
Un Capi
Un Salm
Una Preg
Un Sagra
Il Battef
La Comm
L'Elemof
Il Canto
Gli Orga
Un Camp
Un Orolo
Una Cam
Un Cimit
Una Sepo
Una Bar
S'Essequi
Il Funer

Dignità

Un Prela
Il Papa,
Un Cardi
Un Prima
Un Arciv
Un Vescov
Un Prete,
Un Decan
Un Canon
Un Preber
Un Diaco
Il Retton

<i>Il Vecchio, e 'l Nuovo</i>	}	the Old and New Te-
<i>Testamento,</i>		stament.
<i>Il Vangelo,</i>		the Gospel.
<i>Un Versetto,</i>		a Verse.
<i>Un Capitolo,</i>		a Chapter.
<i>Un Salmo,</i>		a Psalm.
<i>Una Pregbiera,</i>		a Prayer.
<i>Un Sagramento,</i>		a Sacrament.
<i>Il Battefimo,</i>		Baptism.
<i>La Communione,</i>		the Communion.
<i>L'Elemosine,</i>		the Alms.
<i>Il Canto</i>		Singing.
<i>Gli Organi,</i>		the Organs.
<i>Un Campanile,</i>		a Steeple.
<i>Un Orologio,</i>		a Clock.
<i>Una Campana,</i>		a Bell.
<i>Un Cimiterio,</i>		a Church-yard.
<i>Una Sepoltura,</i>		a Grave.
<i>Una Bara,</i>		a Coffin.
<i>S'Essequie,</i>		the Obsequies.
<i>Il Funerale,</i>		a Funeral.

Dignità Ecclesiastiche. *Ecclesiastical Dignity.*

<i>Un Prelato,</i>	a Prelate.
<i>Il Papa,</i>	the Pope.
<i>Un Cardinale,</i>	a Cardinal.
<i>Un Primato,</i>	a Primate.
<i>Un Arcivescovo,</i>	an Arch-bishop.
<i>Un Vescovo,</i>	a Bishop.
<i>Un Prete,</i>	a Priest.
<i>Un Decano,</i>	a Dean.
<i>Un Canonico,</i>	a Canon.
<i>Un Prebendario,</i>	a Prebendary.
<i>Un Diacono,</i>	a Deacon.
<i>Un Rettore,</i>	a Rector.

<i>Un Curato,</i>	a Parson.
<i>Un Ministro,</i>	a Minister.
<i>Un Piovano,</i>	a Vicar.
<i>Un Lettore,</i>	a Reader.
<i>Un Sagristano,</i>	a Vestry-keeper.
<i>Un Anziano,</i>	an Elder.
<i>Un Cantore,</i>	a Chanter.
<i>Uno Zago,</i>	a Singing Boy.

Delle Arti, delle Scienze, e delle Professioni, e di quelli che l' esercitano.

Of Arts, Sciences, and Professions, and of those that profess them.

*Una Scienza,
Un' Arte,
Un' Arte liberale,
Un Arte meccanica,
Un Mestiere,
La Teologia,
La Filosofia,
La Logica,
La Fisica,
La Metafisica,
La Morale,
La Medicina,
La Chirurgia,
La Legge,
La Giurisprudence,*

a Science.
an Art.
a Liberal Art.
a Mechanick Art.
a Trade.
Divinity.
Philosophy.
Logick.
Physicks.
Metaphysicks.
Ethicks.
Physick.
Surgery.
the Law.
the Knowledge of the
Civil Law.

*La Rettorica,
La Poesia,
La Matematica,
L' Astrologia,
L' Astronomia,*

Rhetorick.
Poetry.
Mathematicks.
Astrology.
Astronomy.

La

*La Croce,
L' Aritmetica,
La Geometria,
La Geografia,
La Proposizione,
L' Architetture,
Le Fortificazioni,
La Navigazione,
La Musica,
L' Arte di Pittura,
La Scultura,
La Stanza,
La Scheffatura,
La Cavalieria,
Il Ballo,
La Scrittura,
Un Teologo,
Un Predicatore,
Un Filosofo,
Un Logico,
Un Fisico,
Un Metafisico,
Un Istoricista,
Un Medico,
Un Chirurgo,
Uno Speziale,
Un Avvocato,
Un Giurista,
Un Rettore,
Un Oratore,
Un Poeta,
Un Matematico,
Un Astrologo,
Un Astronomo,*

<i>La Cronologia,</i>	Chronology.
<i>L' Aritmetica,</i>	Arithmetick.
<i>La Geometria,</i>	Geometry.
<i>La Geografia,</i>	Geography.
<i>La Prospettiva,</i>	Perspective.
<i>L' Architettura,</i>	Architecture.
<i>Le Fortificazioni,</i>	Fortifications.
<i>La Navigazione,</i>	Navigation.
<i>La Musica,</i>	Musick.
<i>L' Arte Chimica,</i>	Chymistry.
<i>La Pittura,</i>	Painting.
<i>La Scultura,</i>	Carving.
<i>La Stampa,</i>	Printing.
<i>La Scherma,</i>	Fencing.
<i>La Cavallerizza,</i>	the Riding of the great Horse.
<i>Il Ballo,</i>	Dancing.
<i>La Scrittura,</i>	Writing.
<i>Un Teologo,</i>	a Divine.
<i>Un Predicatore,</i>	a Preacher.
<i>Un Filosofo,</i>	a Philosopher.
<i>Un Logico,</i>	a Logician.
<i>Un Fifico,</i>	a Natural Philosopher.
<i>Un Metafisico,</i>	a Metaphysician.
<i>Un Istorico.</i>	an Historian.
<i>Un Medico,</i>	a Physician.
<i>Un Chirurgo,</i>	a Surgeon.
<i>Uno Speciale,</i>	an Apothecary.
<i>Un Avvocato,</i>	a Lawyer.
<i>Un Giurisconsulto,</i>	a Civilian.
<i>Un Rettorico,</i>	a Rhetorician.
<i>Un Oratore,</i>	an Orator.
<i>Un Poeta,</i>	a Poet.
<i>Un Matematico.</i>	a Mathematician.
<i>Un Astrologo,</i>	an Astrologer.
<i>Un Astronomo,</i>	an Astronomer.

<i>Un Cronologista,</i>	a Chronologer.
<i>Un Aritmetico,</i>	an Arithmetician.
<i>Un Geometra,</i>	a Geometer.
<i>Un Geografo,</i>	a Geographer.
<i>Un Architetto,</i>	an Architect.
<i>Un Ingegniere,</i>	an Ingeneer.
<i>Un Musico,</i>	a Musician.
<i>Un Chimico,</i>	a Chymist.
<i>Un Pittore,</i>	a Painter.
<i>Uno Statuario,</i>	a Carver.
<i>Uno Stampatore,</i>	a Printer.
<i>Un maestro di Scherma,</i>	a Fencing-master.
<i>Un Cavallerizza,</i>	a Riding-master.
<i>Un Ballerino,</i>	a Dancing-master.
<i>Un Maestro di Musica,</i>	a Musick-master.
<i>Un Maestro di Scrivere,</i>	a Writing-master.
<i>Un Maestro di Scuola,</i>	a School-master.
<i>Un Sotto-maestro,</i>	an Usher.
<i>Uno Scolare,</i>	a Scholar.
<i>Un Maestro di Violino,</i>	a Fidler.
<i>Un Comediante,</i>	a Stage-player.
<i>Un Cantinbanco,</i>	a Mountebank.
<i>Un Cittadino,</i>	a Citizen.
<i>Un Artegiano,</i>	a Tradesman.
<i>Un Mercante,</i>	a Merchant.
<i>Un Sensale,</i>	a Broker.
<i>Un Gioielliere,</i>	a Jeweller.
<i>Un Bottegaro,</i>	a Shop-keeper.
<i>Un Merciaro,</i>	a Mercer.
<i>Un Pannettiere,</i>	a Woollen-draper.
<i>Un Mercante di Tela,</i>	a Linnen-draper.
<i>Un Mercante di Seta,</i>	a Silk-man.
<i>Un Confettiere,</i>	a Confectioner.
<i>Un Orefice,</i>	a Gold-smith.
<i>Un Argentiere,</i>	a Silver-smith.
<i>Un Capellaro,</i>	a Hatter.

Un L
Un C
Un B
Un P
Un O
Un B
Un V

Un C
Un C
Un R
Un T
Un R
Un G
Una C
Una L
Un A
Uno S
Uno S
Un C
Un M
Un C
Un S
Un C
Un C
Un F
Un M
Un M
Un F
Un P
Un R

Un M
Un P

<i>Un Librajo,</i>	a Book-seller.
<i>Un Cartolaio,</i>	a Stationer.
<i>Un Barbiero,</i>	a Barber.
<i>Un Parrucchiere,</i>	a Perriwig-maker.
<i>Un Orologiaro,</i>	a Watch-maker.
<i>Un Bottonaro,</i>	a Button-maker.
<i>Un Vetrajo,</i>	a Glafs-maker, or Gla- fier.
<i>Un Candelaro,</i>	a Chandler.
<i>Un Cerajo,</i>	a Wax-chandler.
<i>Un Ricamatore,</i>	an Embroiderer.
<i>Un Tapezziere,</i>	an Upholsterer.
<i>Un Rigattiere,</i>	a Broker for old Cloths.
<i>Un Guantaro,</i>	a Glover.
<i>Una Cuffiara,</i>	a Millener.
<i>Una Lavandara,</i>	a Laundrefs.
<i>Un Armoriere,</i>	an Armourer.
<i>Uno Spadaro,</i>	a Sword-cutler.
<i>Uno Stagnaro,</i>	a Pewterer.
<i>Un Caldararo,</i>	a Braſier.
<i>Un Mareſcalco,</i>	a Smith.
<i>Un Chiavaro,</i>	a Lock-smith.
<i>Un Sellarò,</i>	a Sadler.
<i>Un Sartore,</i>	a Taylor.
<i>Un Calzolaro,</i>	a Shoe-maker.
<i>Un Ciavattino,</i>	a Cobler.
<i>Un Faligname,</i>	a Carpenter.
<i>Un Marangone,</i>	a Joiner.
<i>Un Muratore,</i>	a Maſon.
<i>Un Mulinaro,</i>	a Miller.
<i>Un Fornaro,</i>	a Baker.
<i>Un Paſticciere,</i>	a Paſtry-cook.
<i>Un Roſticciere,</i>	a Cook that keeps Shop.
<i>Un Maccellaro,</i>	a Butcher.
<i>Un Peſcivendolo,</i>	a Fiſhmonger.

278 *A New Italian Grammar.*

Un Brastatore,
Un Tavernaro,
Un Bottaro,
Un Messaggiero,
Un Corriero,
Un Postiglione,
Un Barcaruolo,
Un Baullaro,
Un Cardatore,
Un Tessitore,
Un Tintore.
Un Carbonaro,
Un Cocchiero,
Un Seggettiero,
Un Facchino,
Un Mendico,

a Brewer.
a Vintner.
a Cooper.
a Messenger.
a Courier.
a Post-boy.
a Water-man.
a Trunk-maker.
a Carder.
a Weaver.
a Dyer.
a Collier.
a Coach-man.
a Chair-man.
a Street-porter.
a Beggar.

Un Paese.

A Country or Land.

Uno Stato,
Un Regno,
Un Imperio,
Una Repubblica,
Un Principato,
Una Provincia;
Un Ducato,
Una Contea,
Un Marchesato,
Una Baronìa,
Un Territorio,
Un Arcivescovato,
Un Vescovato,
Una Diocesi,
Un Isola;
Il Continente,
L' Europa,

a State.
a Kingdom.
an Empire.
a Common-wealth.
a Principality.
a Province.
a Dutchy.
a County.
a Marquisate.
a Barony.
a Territory.
an Arch-bishoprick.
a Bishoprick.
a Diocess.
an Island.
the Continent.
Europe.

L' Asia,

<i>L' Asia,</i>	Asia,
<i>L' Africa,</i>	Africa.
<i>L' America,</i>	America.
<i>La Francia,</i>	France.
<i>La Spagna,</i>	Spain.
<i>Il Portogallo,</i>	Portugal.
<i>L' Inghilterra,</i>	England.
<i>La Scozia,</i>	Scotland.
<i>L' Irlanda,</i>	Ireland.
<i>L' Olanda,</i>	Holland.
<i>La Fiandra,</i>	Flanders.
<i>L' Alemagna,</i>	Germany.
<i>La Boemia,</i>	Bohemia.
<i>La Prussia,</i>	Prussia.
<i>Il Brandeburgo,</i>	Brandenburg.
<i>L' Ungheria,</i>	Hungary.
<i>La Polonia,</i>	Poland.
<i>La Svezia,</i>	Sweden.
<i>La Danimarca,</i>	Denmark.
<i>La Norvegia,</i>	Norway.
<i>Gli Svizzeri,</i>	Switzerland.
<i>La Savoia,</i>	Savoy.
<i>Il Piemonte,</i>	Piedmont.
<i>L' Italia,</i>	Italy.
<i>La Toscana,</i>	Tuscany.
<i>Il Milanese,</i>	the Milanese.
<i>Il Regno di Napoli,</i>	the Kingdom of Naples.
<i>La Sicilia,</i>	Sicily.
<i>La Moscovia,</i>	Muscovy.
<i>La Turchia,</i>	Turkey.
<i>La Grecia,</i>	Greece.
<i>La Persia,</i>	Persia.

*Una Nazione.**A Nation.*

<i>Un Europeo,</i>	an European.
<i>Un Asiatico,</i>	an Asiatick.
<i>Un Africano,</i>	an African.
<i>Un Americano,</i>	an American.
<i>Un Francese,</i>	a Frenchman.
<i>Uno Spagnuolo,</i>	a Spaniard.
<i>Un Portugheſe,</i>	a Portugeze.
<i>Un Ingleſe,</i>	an Engliſhman.
<i>Uno Scozzeſe,</i>	a Scotchman.
<i>Un' Irlandeſe,</i>	an Iriſhman.
<i>Un Olandeſe,</i>	a Dutchman.
<i>Un Fiamingo,</i>	a Fleming.
<i>Un Alemanno, o un } Todeſco,</i>	a German.
<i>Un Boemo,</i>	a Bohemian.
<i>Un Saffone,</i>	a Saxon.
<i>Un Brandeburgheſe,</i>	a Brandenburgher.
<i>Un Ungaro,</i>	an Hungarian.
<i>Un Polacco,</i>	a Polander.
<i>Uno Svezzeſe,</i>	a Swede.
<i>Un Daneſe,</i>	a Dane.
<i>Uno Svizzero,</i>	a Switzer.
<i>Un Savejardo,</i>	a Savoyard.
<i>Un Piemonteſe,</i>	a Piedmonteſe.
<i>Un Italiano,</i>	an Italian.
<i>Un Toſcano,</i>	a Tuſcan.
<i>Un Milaneſe,</i>	a Milaneſe.
<i>Un Napolitano,</i>	a Neapolitan.
<i>Un Siciliano,</i>	a Sicilian.
<i>Un Moſcovita,</i>	a Muſcovite.
<i>Un Turco,</i>	a Turk.
<i>Un Greco,</i>	a Grecian.
<i>Un Perſo,</i>	a Perſian.

Alcune

Alcune

Parigg
Madr
Lisbon
Londra
Edinbu
Dublin
Amster
Brusse
Vienna
Praga
Drejde
Berlino
Presbu
Buda
Varso
Stoccol
Copenh
Berna
Ciamb
Turino
Milan
Pavia
Genoa
Fioren
Livorn
Roma
Napol
Veneti
Palerm
Messin
Malt
Mosco
Const
Atene

Alcune Città Capitali.

Some capital Cities.

Pariggi,
Madrid,
Lisbona,
Londra,
Edinburgo,
Dublino,
Amsterdam,
Brusselle,
Vienna,
Praga,
Dreſden,
Berlino,
Presburgo,
Buda,
Varſovia,
Stoccolma,
Copennague,
Berna,
Ciamberi,
Turino,
Milano,
Pavia,
Genoa,
Fiorenza,
Livorno,
Roma,
Napoli,
Venetia,
Palermo,
Meffina,
Malta,
Mosco,
Constantinopoli,
Atene,

Paris.
Madrid.
Lisbon.
London.
Edinburgh.
Dublin.
Amsterdam.
Brussels.
Vienna.
Prague.
Dresden.
Berlin.
Presburgh.
Buda.
Warsaw.
Stockholm.
Copenhagen.
Bern.
Chambery.
Turin.
Milan.
Pavia.
Genoa.
Florence.
Leghorn.
Rome.
Naples.
Venice.
Palermo.
Messina.
Malta.
Moscow.
Constantinople.
Athens.

Iſpaan,

Ispaan,
Aleppo,

Ispahan.
Aleppo.

D' una Casa in generale. *Of a House in general.*

<i>Una Casa,</i>	a House.
<i>Un Palazzo,</i>	a Palace.
<i>Un Castello,</i>	a Castle.
<i>Una Capanna,</i>	a Cottage.
<i>Un Edificio,</i>	a Building.
<i>Il Muro,</i>	the Wall.
<i>Il Palco,</i>	the Floor.
<i>Il Fondamento,</i>	the Foundation.
<i>Il Cielo della Camera,</i>	the Cieling.
<i>La Bottega,</i>	the Shop.
<i>L' Appartamento terragno,</i>	the Ground Floor.
<i>Il primo Piano,</i>	the first Floor.
<i>Il secondo Piano,</i>	the second Floor.
<i>Il Soffitto,</i>	the Garret.
<i>Il Tetto,</i>	the Roof.
<i>Un Appartamento,</i>	an Apartment.
<i>La Scala,</i>	the Stairs.
<i>La Porta,</i>	the Door.
<i>La Sala bassa,</i>	the Parlour.
<i>La Camera,</i>	the Chamber.
<i>L' Anticamera,</i>	the Antichamber.
<i>Un Gabinetto,</i>	a Closet.
<i>La Guardarobba,</i>	the Wardrobe.
<i>Una Galleria,</i>	a Gallery.
<i>Un Balcone,</i>	a Balcony.
<i>La Finestra,</i>	the Window.
<i>L' Invidriata,</i>	a Sash-window.
<i>Un Golosia,</i>	a Lattice.
<i>La Dispensa,</i>	the Buttery.
<i>La Cucina,</i>	the Kitchen.
<i>Il Forno,</i>	the Oven.
<i>La Cantina,</i>	the Cellar.

Il Corti
La Tro
Un Poz
La Sta
Il Neco
Il Giar
La Ren
Un Ma
Una tr
Un Tra
Una te
Una P
Una T
Il Tav
Una P
Un M
La Ca
La Sab
Il Cam

Mobili

La Tap

Un Qu
Un Ris
Uno Sp
Una C
Una Se
Uno S
Un Cu
Una T
Un Bo
Un Tap
La Tor
Un Tor

<i>Il Cortile,</i>	the Yard.
<i>La Tromba,</i>	the Pump.
<i>Un Pozzo,</i>	a Well.
<i>La Stalla,</i>	the Stables.
<i>Il Necessario,</i>	the House-of-Office.
<i>Il Giardino,</i>	the Garden.
<i>La Remessa,</i>	the Coach-House.
<i>Un Magazzeno,</i>	a Ware-House.
<i>Una trave,</i>	a Beam.
<i>Un Travicello,</i>	a Rafter.
<i>Una tegola,</i>	a Lath.
<i>Una Panca,</i>	a Board.
<i>Una Tavola,</i>	a Shelf.
<i>Il Tavolato,</i>	the Wainscot.
<i>Una Pietra,</i>	a Stone.
<i>Un Mattone,</i>	a Brick.
<i>La Calcina,</i>	the Lime.
<i>La Sabbia,</i>	the Sand.
<i>Il Camino,</i>	the Chimney.

Mobili di Casa, ed altri *Household Goods, and some*
arnesi. *Utenfils.*

<i>La Tapizzzeria,</i>	the Hangings, or Tape- stry.
<i>Un Quadro,</i>	a Picture.
<i>Un Risvatto,</i>	a Picture.
<i>Uno Specchio,</i>	a Looking-glass.
<i>Una Cornice,</i>	a Frame.
<i>Una Sedia,</i>	a Chair.
<i>Uno Scabello</i>	a Joint-stool.
<i>Un Cuscino,</i>	a Cushion.
<i>Una Tavola,</i>	a Table.
<i>Un Boffetto,</i>	a Side-board.
<i>Un Tapeto,</i>	a Carpet.
<i>La Tovaglia,</i>	the Table-cloth.
<i>Un Tondo,</i>	a Plate.

Un

<i>Un Piatto,</i>	a Dish.
<i>Una Salvietta,</i>	a Napkin.
<i>Un Coltello,</i>	a Knife.
<i>Una Forchetta,</i>	a Fork.
<i>Una Posata,</i>	a Cover.
<i>Un Cucchiaro,</i>	a Spoon.
<i>Una Saliera,</i>	a Salt-fellar.
<i>Una Scudella,</i>	a Porringer.
<i>Una Mesciroba,</i>	an Ewer.
<i>Un Bacile,</i>	a Bason.
<i>Un Bocale,</i>	a Pot.
<i>Un Fiasco,</i>	a Bottle.
<i>Un Turaccio,</i>	a Cork.
<i>Un Bicchiere,</i>	a Drinking-glass.
<i>Un Acetajo,</i>	a Cruet.
<i>Una Sottocoppa,</i>	a Salver.
<i>Una Tazza,</i>	a Cup.
<i>Una Candela,</i>	a Candle.
<i>Un Candeliere,</i>	a Candlestick.
<i>Una Lanterna.</i>	a Lanthorn.
<i>Lo Smoccolatojo,</i>	the Snuffers.
<i>Una Lampada,</i>	a Lamp.
<i>Una Canestra,</i>	a Basket.
<i>Un Vaso,</i>	a Vessel.
<i>Una Botte,</i>	a But.
<i>Un Barrile,</i>	a Barrel.
 <i>Un Letto,</i>	 <i>a Bed.</i>
<i>Una Lettiera,</i>	a Bedstead.
<i>Le Colonne del Letto,</i>	the Bed-posts.
<i>Il Cielo del Letto,</i>	the Top of the Bed.
<i>La Testiera del Letto,</i>	the Tester.
<i>I Piedi del Letto,</i>	the Bedsfeet.
<i>Il Capezzale.</i>	the Bolster.
<i>La Coltre,</i>	The Feather-bed.
<i>Il Pagliaccio,</i>	the Straw-bed.
<i>Un Materasso,</i>	a Matrafs.

<i>Il Guanciale,</i>	the Pillow.
<i>Le Coperte,</i>	the Bed-cloaths.
<i>Le Lenzuala,</i>	the Sheets.
<i>Le Cortine,</i>	the Curtains.
<i>Lo Scaldaletto,</i>	the Warming-pan.
<i>L'Urinale,</i>	the Chamber-pot.
<i>La Selletta,</i>	a Close-stool.
<i>Il Camino,</i>	the Chimney.
<i>Il Focolare,</i>	the Hearth.
<i>I Torcieri,</i>	the Andirons.
<i>Il Soffietto,</i>	the Bellows.
<i>Le Mollette,</i>	the Tongs.
<i>La Paletta,</i>	the Shovel.
<i>I Capifuochi,</i>	the Andirons.
<i>Il Forcono,</i>	the Poker.
<i>Un Parafuoco,</i>	a Fire Screen.
<i>Un Paravento,</i>	a Screen.
<i>Il Fuoco,</i>	the Fire.
<i>Delle Legna,</i>	Wood.
<i>Del Carbone,</i>	Coal.
<i>Carbone di Legno,</i>	Charcoal.
<i>Carbone di Terra,</i>	Sea-Coal.
<i>Una Scintilla,</i>	a Spark.
<i>La Brace,</i>	the Live-Coal.
<i>Un Tizzone,</i>	a Fire-Brand.
<i>Le Generi,</i>	the Ashes.
<i>La Fiamma,</i>	the Flame
<i>Il Fumo,</i>	the Smoak.
<i>La Fuligine,</i>	the Soot.
<i>Il Fucile,</i>	the Tinder-box.
<i>L'esca,</i>	the Tinder.
<i>Un Zolfanello,</i>	a Match.
<i>Una Pietra focaja,</i>	a Flint.
<i>Il Fucile,</i>	the Steel.
<i>Un Incendio,</i>	a great Fire.

Arnesi di Cucina.

Un Caldaro,
Una Pignatta,
Un Coperchio,
Un Uncino,
Un Tripiedi,
Una Mestola,
Un Caldarino,
Una Padella,
Una tortiera,
Una Graticola,
Una Spiedo,
Un Torna Spiedo,
Una Secchia,
Uno Scopa,
Lo Strofinaccio,
Una Corda,
Una Scaldavivande,
La Catena,
La Grattuggia,
Un Setaccio,
Un Mortaro,
Un Pistello,
Una Madia.

Ufficiali di Casa.

Il Padrone,
La Padrona,
Un Domestico,
Il Mastro di Casa.
Il Dispensiere,
Il Cappellano,
Il Governatore,

Kitchen Tackling.

a Kettle.
 a Pot.
 a Pot-lid.
 a Flesh-hook.
 a Trevet.
 a Ladle.
 a Skillet.
 a Frying-pan.
 a Pudding-pan.
 a Gridiron.
 a Spit.
 a Jack.
 a Pail.
 a Broom.
 a Dish-clout.
 a Rope.
 a Chaffing-dish.
 the Pot-hanger.
 a Grater.
 a Strainer.
 a Mortar.
 a Pestle.
 a Kneading-trough.

Officers of a House.

the Master.
 the Mistress.
 a menial Servant.
 the Steward.
 the Caterer.
 the Chaplain.
 the Tutor.

*Il Cava**Il Came**Un Pag**Lo Scab**Il Copp**Il Cant**Un Cuor**Una Cu**Uno Sga**Il Cocch**Un Lac**Uno Sta**Un Pal**Il Port**La Ma**Una Ca**Una Do**Il Segre**Il Giar**De**Una Bes**Una Car**Un Lion**Un Lion**Un Lion**Un Elef**Un Dra**Un Cam**Un Dron**Un Leop**Una Pa**Uno Tig**Un Lioc*

<i>Il Cavallerizza,</i>	2	the Master, or the Gentleman of the Horse.
<i>Il Cameriero,</i>	3	the Valet de Chamber.
<i>Un Paggio,</i>		a Page.
<i>Lo Scalco,</i>		the Carver.
<i>Il Coppiere,</i>		the Cupbearer.
<i>Il Cantiniere,</i>		the Butler.
<i>Un Cuoco,</i>		a Cook.
<i>Una Cuoca,</i>		a Woman Cook.
<i>Uno Sgattaro,</i>		a Scullion.
<i>Il Cocchiero,</i>		the Coachman,
<i>Un Lacchè,</i>		a Lacquey.
<i>Uno Staffiere,</i>		a Footman.
<i>Un Palafriniere.</i>		the Groom of the Stable.
<i>Il Portinajo,</i>		the Porter.
<i>La Massara,</i>		the House-Keeper.
<i>Una Cameriera,</i>		a Chamber-Maid.
<i>Una Damigella,</i>		a Waiting-Woman.
<i>Il Segretario,</i>		the Secretary.
<i>Il Giardiniero,</i>		the Gardiner.

De' Quadrupedi.

Of four-footed Beasts.

<i>Una Bestia da soma,</i>	a labouring Beast.
<i>Una Cavalcatura,</i>	a Beast for the Saddle.
<i>Un Leone,</i>	a Lion.
<i>Un Lionessa,</i>	a Lioness.
<i>Un Lioncino,</i>	a Lion's Whelp.
<i>Un Elefante,</i>	an Elephant.
<i>Un Drago,</i>	a Dragon.
<i>Un Camelo,</i>	a Camel.
<i>Un Dromadario,</i>	a Dromedary.
<i>Un Leopardo,</i>	a Leopard.
<i>Una Pantera,</i>	a Panther.
<i>Uno Tigre,</i>	a Tyger.
<i>Un Liocorno,</i>	an Unicorn.

Un Lupo,
Una Lupa,
Un Orso,
Un Orsa,
Un Orsatto,
Un Cinghiale,
Una Volpe,
Una Scimia,
Un Lepre,
Un Coniglio,
Un Cervo,
Un Fauno,
Una Damma,
Una Donnola,
Un Castoro,
Un Riccio,
Il Bestiame,
Un Toro.
Un Bue,
Un Vacca,
Una Giovenca,
Un Vitello,
Un Cavallo,
Un Cavallo intiero,
Un Unghero,
Una Giumenta,
Un Polledro,
Una Chinea,
Cavallo d'affitto,
Un Moutone,
Una Pecora,
Un Castrato,
Un Agnello,
Un Caprone,
Una Capra,
Una Capretto,

a Wolf.
 a She-Wolf.
 a Bear.
 a She Bear.
 a Bear's Cub.
 a Wild-Boar.
 a Fox.
 an Ape.
 a Hare.
 a Coney.
 a Deer.
 a Fallow-deer.
 a Doe.
 a Weasel.
 a Castor.
 a Hedg-Hog.
 Cattle.
 a Bull.
 an Ox.
 a Cow.
 a Heifer.
 a Calf.
 a Horse.
 a Stone-Horse.
 a Gelding.
 a Mare.
 a Colt.
 an ambling Nag.
 a Hackney-Horse.
 a Ram.
 a Sheep.
 a Weather.
 a Lamb.
 a He-goat.
 a She-goat,
 a Kid.

Un A
Un A
Un A
Un M
Una M
Un Po
Un Ve
Una T
Un Po
Un Ca
Un Ca
Un Ma
Un Le
Una L
Un Ga
Una Ga
Un Sor
Una Ta
Una N

Cose a

Una Gr
Un Cuoj
Una Pe
Il Toson
La Lam
Un Corn
Crini di
L' Ugn
La Zam
I Crini,
La Coda

<i>Un Afino,</i>	an Ass.
<i>Un Afina,</i>	a She Ass.
<i>Un Afinello,</i>	a young Ass.
<i>Un Mulo,</i>	a He Mule.
<i>Una Mula,</i>	a She Mule.
<i>Un Porco,</i>	a Hog.
<i>Un Verro,</i>	a Boar.
<i>Una Traja,</i>	a Sow.
<i>Un Porcello,</i>	a Pig.
<i>Un Cane,</i>	a Dog.
<i>Un Cagna,</i>	a Bitch.
<i>Un Cagnolino,</i>	a Whelp.
<i>Un Mastino,</i>	a Mastiff.
<i>Un Levriero,</i>	a Greyhound.
<i>Una Levriera,</i>	a Greyhound-bitch.
<i>Un Gatto,</i>	a Boar Cat.
<i>Una Gatta,</i>	a She Cat.
<i>Un Sorcio,</i>	a Mouse.
<i>Una Talpa,</i>	a Mole.
<i>Una Nottola,</i>	a Bat.

Cose appartenenti alle
Bestie.

Things relating to Beasts.

<i>Una Gregge,</i>	a Herd or Flock.
<i>Un Cuojo,</i>	a Hyde.
<i>Una Pelle,</i>	a Skin.
<i>Il Tosone,</i>	the Fleece.
<i>La Lana,</i>	Wool.
<i>Un Corno,</i>	a Horn.
<i>Crini di Cavallo,</i>	Horse-hair.
<i>L' Unga,</i>	the Hoof.
<i>La Zampa,</i>	the Paw.
<i>I Crini,</i>	the Mane.
<i>La Coda,</i>	the Tail.

U

II

Il Muso,
Un Caprajo,
Un Pastore,
Una Pastorella,
Una Mandra,
Un Porcaro,
Un Porcile,
Una Cavezza,
Una Briglia,
Una Sella,
Un Basto,
La Mangiatoja,
La Stalla,

the Muzzle.
 a Goatherd.
 a Shepherd.
 a Shepherdess.
 a Sheepfold.
 a Hog-driver.
 a Hogsty.
 a Halter.
 a Bridle.
 a Saddle.
 a Pack-Saddle.
 the Manger.
 the Stable.

*Degli Uccelli.**Of Birds.*

Un Uccello,
Un' Aquila,
Una Fenice,
Un Falcone,
Un Corbo,
Una Cornacchia,
Una grue,
Un Cucco,
Un Capone,
Una Gallina,
Un Chioccia,
Un Pollo,
Un Pollastro,
Un Gallo,
Un Gallo d' India,
Un Oca,
Una Papara,
Un Anatra,
Un Cigno,

a Bird.
 an Eagle.
 a Phenix.
 a Hawk.
 a Raven.
 a Crow.
 a Crane.
 a Cuckow.
 a Capon.
 a Hen.
 a Brood-hen.
 a Chicken.
 a Pullet.
 a Cock.
 a Turkey.
 a Goose.
 a Gander.
 a Duck.
 a Swan.

Un C
Un P
Una C
Una T
Un N
Una P
Un Fag
Una B
Una B
Una Q
Un' Al

<i>Un Colombo,</i>	a Pidgeon.
<i>Un Piccione,</i>	a young Pigeon.
<i>Una Colomba,</i>	a Dove.
<i>Una Tortora,</i>	a Turtle-dove.
<i>Un Nibbio,</i>	a Kite.
<i>Una Pernice,</i>	a Partridge.
<i>Un Fagiano,</i>	a Pheasant.
<i>Una Beccaccia,</i>	a Wood-cock.
<i>Una Beccaccina,</i>	a Snipe.
<i>Una Quaglia,</i>	a Quail.
<i>Un' Alladola,</i>	a Lark.





GR

Dell

GL

A, l
t.

Si p

E, l

P

Le

Tut

Dell

A fi pr

Ital

Grace,

Place,

Table,

Plague

Pale,

Lame,

Shame



GRAMMATICA INGLESE.

Della Pronuncia delle Lettere Inglese.

G *L' Inglese si servono di vintiquattro Lettere, e sono*

A, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, w, x, y, z.

Si pronunciano generalmente così, viz.

E, bi, fi, di, i, f, gi, ecce, ai, che, l, m, n, o, pi, chiu, r, s, ti, ju, doppio ju, ex, guei, ized.

Le Lettere si dividono in vocali, e consonanti.

Le vocali sono sette.

A, e, i, o, u, w, y.

Tutte le altre sono consonanti.

Della Pronuncia delle vocali, e dei Dittonghi.

A.

A si pronunzia generalmente come l' E aperto in Italiano; ex.

Grace,	} Pronunciate,	Gres,	grazia.
Place,		Ples,	luogo.
Table,		Tebl,	tavola.
Plague,		Plegu,	peste.
Pale,		Pel,	pallido.
Lame,		Lem,	zoppo.
Shame,		Scem,	vergogna.
		U 3	Ecce-

Eccezioni.

A, *avante una consonante in una medesima sillaba si pronuncia come l' A Italiano, ma non troppo aperto, come in queste parole, Art, Action, glad, sad, a Rat, a Cart.*

Avanti, l, r, u, e doppio w, si pronuncia come in Italiano, ma molto lungo, come nel' interjezione ah, ex. Fall, call, Salt, Malt, far, hard, calm, cause, claw, raw.

A non si pronuncia doppo E; ex.

Bread,	} Pronunciate,	Bred,	pane.
Death,		Deth,	morte.
Dead,		Ded,	morto.
Meat,		Met,	carne.
Meal,		Mel,	pasto.
Ready,		Redi,	pronto.
Leave,		Lev,	conjedo.

Eccetto queste parole derivative.

Genealogy, Beatitude, Creation, real, Theater.

Creature, creatura, si pronuncia Criture.

A non si pronuncia ne meno appresso O; ex.

Coach,	} Pronunciate,	Coc,	carozza.
Oak,		Och,	quercia.
Approach,		approc,	approccio.
Boar,		Bor,	verro.
Choak,		Cioch,	strangolare.
Cloak,		Cloch,	mantello.

A, nel principio d' una parola, seguitato da due consonanti, si pronuncia sempre come A, in Italiano.

E.

Vi
chiam
sillabe

Be,
He,
Me,
She,
We,

L' e
seguen
Evenin
ratojo
Il se
fine di
quasi n
pronun

Grace,
Shade,
Game,
Shape,
Bane,
Gate,
Knave,

Il te
avanti
parole;
ex.

Ebbi
Edge

E.

Vi sono tre sorte d' e in Inglese ; il primo si chiama Musculino, e si trova alla fine delle monosillabe, e si pronuncia come l' i Italiano. ex.

Be,	}	Pronunciate,	}	bi,	si tu.
He,				hi,	egli.
Me,				mi,	me.
She,				sci,	ella.
We,				gui,	noi.

L' e è anche masculino nel principio delle parole seguenti ; Ear, orecchio ; evil, male ; even uguale ; Evening, sera ; Ew, una pecora ; Ewer, abbeveratojo ; Europe, Europa.

Il secondo e si chiama femminino, e si trova alla fine di molte parole, ma il suo suono si fa appena o quasi niente sentire ; ma la vocale che la precede si pronuncia lunga.

Grace,	}	Pronunciate,	}	gres,	grazia.
Shade,				sciad,	ombra.
Game,				ghem,	giuoco.
Shape,				sciap,	statura.
Bane,				ben,	peste.
Gate,				ghet,	porta.
Knave,				nev,	furbo.

Il terzo e si chiama neutro, o aperto, e si trova avanti le consonanti nel principio, o nel mezzo delle parole ; e si pronuncia come l' e aperto in Italiano. ex.

Ebbing, *flusso.*
Edge, *taglio.*

Effect, Effetto.

Egg, Uovo.

Ell, *Ala*, misura di due braccia.

Element, Elemento.

To escape, Scampare.

To Esteem, Stima.

Negligence, Negligenza.

Red, Rosso.

Left, Lasciato.

Hell, Inferno.

Step, Passo.

Due ee, si pronunciano come un i lungo. ex.

To see,	} Pronunciate,	to si,	vedere.
To feed,		to fid,	pascere.
Need,		Nid,	bisogno.
Queen,		Quin,	regina.
To keep,		to chip,	mantenere.
To sleep,		to slip,	dormire.
Feet,		Fit,	piedi.
Fleet,		Flit,	armata.
Street,		Strit,	strada.

L' e, femminino alla fine d' una parola muta il suono della vocale che la precede; ex.

Mad, pazzo; made, fatto.

Fat, grasso; Fate, Destino.

Hat, capello; hate, odiare.

A Mill, mulino; Mile, miglio.

Thin, minuto; thine, tuo.

Bit, pezzo; bite, mordere.

Not, non; note, polizza.

Plum, prugno; plume, piuma.

Tun, botte; Tune, Aria.

Win, guadagnare; Wine, Vino.

Still, ancora; stile, filo.

E avanti M, ed N, si pronuncia come in Italiano; ex.

Men, Uomini.

Ten, dieci.

Then, dunque.

Whence, d' onde.

French, Francese.

Lent, Quaresima.

Lend, imprestare.

Send, mandare.

Repent, pentirsi.

Offence, offesa.

Pretence, pretesto.

Length, lunghezza.

Strength, forza.

Eminence, eminenza.

Emphasis, enfasi.

Eccetto English, Inglese, che si pronuncia *Inglish*.

E, non si pronuncia in queste parole, Heart, cuore; hearken, ascoltare.

Eo si pronuncia in questa sola parola come un i; People, popolo, pron. *Piple*.

Ew si pronuncia come iu separatamente; ex. Blew, torchino; Dew, rugiada.

Eccetto shew; mostrare, che si pronuncia scio.

J. Vocale.

I, ha diverse pronuncie in Inglese; qualche volta ha due differenti suoni, ed allora si pronuncia, ai, o ei; qualche volta si pronuncia come in Italiano; e qualche volta si pronuncia come un e

I, si pronuncia ei avanti una semplice consonante, seguita da un e, ex.

Life,

Life,	Pronunciate,	Leif,	vita.
Crime,		Creim,	delitto.
Fine,		Fein,	bello.
Desire,		Diseir,	desiderio.
Time,		Teim,	tempo.
Rise,		Reis,	levarsi.
Pride,		Preid,	orgoglio.
twice,		tueis,	due volte.
Smile,		Smell,	sorriso.
Price,		Preis,	prezzo.

I, si pronuncia ai, in queste parole ; mine, mio ;
thine, tuo. pron. main thain.

I, si pronuncia come in Italiano avanti due con-
sonanti, ed avanti una sola consonante, non essendo
seguita d' un e. ex.

Rib, costola.	him, lui.
Rich, ricco.	swim, nuotare.
Sick, ammalato.	begin, cominciare.
Gift, dono.	sin, peccato.
Big, grosso.	thin, sottile.
Kill, ammazzare.	ship, vascello.
Will, volontà.	kiss, bacio.
Skill, arte.	dish, piatto.

I, avanti n impuro, nel principio, o nel mezzo
d' una parola, si pronuncia come in Italiano ; ex.

Industry, industria.
Inferiour, inferiore.
Ink, inchiostro.
Prince, Principe,
Stink, puzza.
Print, stampa.

Bisogna

Bisogna eccettuare le parole, nelle quali l' n è seguito d' un D, perche allora si pronuncia come ei, lungo; ex. Blind, cieco; find, trovare; Mind, pensiero.

I, seguitato da queste tre lettere ght, si pronuncia come ei lungo, e gh non si pronuncia; ex.

Fight, combattimento. Night, notte.

Knight, cavaliere. Sight, vista.

I, seguitato da queste tre lettere tch, si pronuncia come in Italiano; ex.

Ditch, fosso.

Pitch, pece.

Witch, mago.

I, non si pronuncia nelle seguenti parole, Suit, Fruit, Juice, Sutor, suitable.

O.

O, è una vocale tanto variabile nella lingua Inglese, che mi pare impossibile per un forestiere d' imparare i diversi suoni per altro mezzo che per uso. Pure, cercherò di stabilire alcune regole generali, le quali saranno di non poco ajuto ai principianti.

O, nel principio d' una parola si pronuncia comunemente come in Italiano; ex.

To obey, obedire.

Other, altro.

Old, vecchio.

Oven, forno.

Open, aperto.

Other, altro.

Però vi sono alcune parole che non seguitano questa regola, che si pronunciano come se fossero scritte con un a. ex.

Odds, sparo.	} pron.	{	ads.
Of, di.			af.
Ox, bue.			ax.

O, avan-

O, avanti a, ed e, si pronuncia anche come in Italiano, ma molto lungo; ex.

Oak,	} Pronunciate,	ok,	quercia.
Oats,		ots,	biada.
Oath,		oth,	giuramento.
Coach,		cor,	carozza.
Boar,		bot,	barchetta.
Throat,		throt,	gola.
Coast,		cost,	costa.
Goë,		go,	andare.
Foe,		fo,	nemico.
Toe,		to,	deto del piede.

O, avanti le consonanti seguite d' un e, si pronuncia altresì come in Italiano; ex.

Globe, sfera.	Stone, Pietra.
Abode, abituro.	Pope, Papa.
Smoak, fumo.	More, più.
Hole, buco.	Close, serrato.
Tome, tomo.	Nose, Naso.
Bone, osso.	

Ma avanti le consonanti, che non sono seguite d' un e, l' o si pronuncia come l' a in Italiano, come anche avanti ck, ex.

Rod,	} Pronun- ciate,	rad,	verga.
Fog,		fag,	nebbia.
Shop,		sciap,	bottega.
Top,		tap,	cima.
Hot,		bat,	caldo.
Knot,		nat,	nodo.
Pot,		pat,	pignatta.
Frost,		frast,	gelo.
Cross,		crass,	croce.
Loss,		lass,	perdita.
Cock,		cach,	gallo.
Knock,		noch,	picchiare.
Lock,		lach,	ferratura.
Smock,		Smach,	camiscia da donna.

O, avan-

O,
ex.

Word
Roll,
Toll,
Old,
Bold,
Cold,

O,
ma il

Bow,
Blow,
Snow
Know

O,
sequen

Brow
Cow,
How
Now
Brow
Crow
Gown
Town

Good
Book
Wood
Fool,

O, avanti l' ed r, si pronuncia come in Italiano;

ex.

Word, parola.

Roll, ruolo.

Toll, dazio.

Old, vecchio.

Bold, ardito.

Cold, freddo.

Told, detto.

Bolt, catenaccio.

Dolt, stupido.

Revolt, rivolta.

Resolve, risolvere.

O, avanti w, si pronuncia anche come in Italiano, ma il w non si pronuncia; ex.

Bow, arco.

Blow, colpo.

Snow, neve.

Know, conoscere.

Dow, pasta.

Hollow, concavo.

Tallow, sevo.

Eccezioni.

O, si pronuncia come un a, avanti nelle parole seguenti, ed il w, si pronuncia.

Brow,	} Pronunciate,	braw,	ciglio.
Cow,		caw,	vacca.
How,		haw,	come.
Now,		naw,	adesso.
Brown,		brawn,	bruno.
Crown,		craun,	corona.
Gown,		gaun,	gonna.
Town,		taun,	terra.

Due oo si pronunciano come u; ex.

Good, buono.

Book, libro.

Wood, bosco.

Fool, stolto.

Spoon, cucchiaro.

Foot, piede.

Root, radice.

Moon, luna.

Ou,

Ou, si pronuncia separatamente come au ; ex.

Cloud,	} Pronunciate,	claud,	nuvola.
Croud,		craud,	calca.
Loud,		laud,	alto.
Proud,		praud,	altiero.
About,		abaut,	intorno.
Gout,		gaut,	gotta.
Stout,		staut,	robusto.
South,		saut,	mezzogiorno.
Mouth,		mauth,	bocca.

Eccezioni.

Youth,	} Pronunciate,	juth,	gioventù.
Could,		culd,	potrei.
Should,		sciuld,	} vorrei.
Would,		guuld,	
You,		ju,	voi.

Avanti ugh, l' o si pronuncia come a lungo ; ed ugh non si pronunciano ; ex.

Bought,	} Pronunciate,	bat,	comprato.
Brought,		brat,	portato.
Fought,		fat,	combattuto.
Nought,		nat,	niente.
Thought,		that,	pentiero.
Wrought,		rat,	lavorato.

L' o finale, si pronuncia come in Italiano ; ex.
Go, andare ; so, così ; no, non.

Eccezioni.

In queste parole o, si pronuncia come u Italiano.

Two,
Do, fa

In
ma ci
alla fin
long,
wrong
O,
donne,

U,
in Ita
Use,
Union

U,
chiuse

Tub,
Pulse.
Cup,
Burn.
Butte
Put,
Much
Dutch
Such,
Dum
Drun
Crum
Gun,
Shun

U,
finale

Two, due.

To, a.

Do, fare.

Who, chi.

In alcune parole l' o, si pronuncia come un a ;
ma ciò arriva generalmente quando l' o, si trova
alla fine della parola, seguito da un n impuro ; ex.
long, lungo ; Song, canzone ; strong, forte ;
wrong, tort ; Bond, malleveria ; born, nato.

O, si pronuncia come i, in questa parola Women,
donne, cb' è il plurale di Woman, donna.

U

U, nel principio della parola si pronuncia come ju
in Italiano ; ex.

Use, uso.

University, università.

Union, unione.

Usurper, usurpatore.

U, avanti le consonanti si pronuncia come un o
chiuso in Italiano ; ex.

Tub,
Pulse,
Cup,
Burn,
Butter,
Put,
Much,
Dutch,
Such,
Dumb,
Drunk,
Crum,
Gun,
Shun,

Pronunciate,

tob,	tinello.
pols,	polso.
cop,	tazza,
born,	abbrucivo.
botter,	burro.
pot,	mezzo,
moch,	molto.
dotch,	Olandese.
soch,	tale,
domb,	muto.
dronk,	imbriaco.
crom,	mollica.
gon,	cannone.
scion,	evitato.

U, avanti una consonante seguitata da un' e
finale, si pronuncia come ju in Italiano ; ex.

Abuse,

Abuse,	} Pronunciate,	abius,	abbusare.
Accuse,		acchius,	accusare.
Truce,		trius,	tregua.
Fume,		fium,	fumo.
Presume,		presium,	presumere.
Tune,		tiun,	aria.
Cure,		chiur,	cura.
Pure,		piur,	puro.
Affure,		assur,	assicurare.

U, in queste, e simili parole non si pronuncia.

Guide,	} Pronunciate,	gheid,	scorta.
Guest,		ghest,	ospite.
Guile,		gheil,	frode.
Guilty,		ghilty,	colpevole.
Guilt,		ghilt,	colpa.

Ue si pronuncia come iu longo ; ex.

Blue, torchino.	Scrue, una vite.
Due, dovuto.	Spue, vomitare.
True, vero.	

U, non si pronuncia appresso a ; ma l'a si pronuncia lungo ; ex.

Cause, causa.	Baught, comprato.
Fault, colpa.	Taught, combattuto.

U, appresso q seguito d'un' altra vocale, si pronuncia come in Italiano ; ex.

Question, questione.	Quality, qualità.
Quil, Penna.	Quarrel, querela.

W.

Il w, nel principio, e nel mezzo d'una parola si pronuncia come gu in Italiano ; ex.

Wall,

Wall,	} Pronunciate,	gual,	muro.
War,		guar,	guerra.
Water,		guater.	acqua.
West,		guest,	occidente.
Wife,		gueif,	moglie.
Will,		guil,	volontà.
Wing,		guing.	ala.
Winter,		guinter.	verno.
Wonder,		guonder,	maraviglia.
Work,		guork,	lavoro.
Towards,		toguards,	verso.
Afterwards,		afterguards,	dopo.
Always,		alguais,	sempre.
Reward,		reguard,	guiderdone.

W, non si pronuncia avanti r; ex.

To write,	} Pronunciate,	reit,	scrivere.
Wrong,		rang,	torto.
Wrinkle,		rinkl,	ruga.
Wrist,		rist,	polso.

W, avanti h si pronuncia così; ex.

Whale,	} Pronunciate,	guel,	balena.
Wheel,		guil,	ruota.
Whip,		guip,	frustare.
Whore,		uore,	puttana.
What,		guat,	che.

Y.

Y, si pronuncia come l' i in Italiano; ex.

Beauty, Bellezza.	only, solamente.
Bounty, Bontà.	quickly, subito.
Angry, Irritato.	ready, in ordine.
Surely, Sicuramente.	City, Città.

X

Bisogna

Bisogna eccettuarne le monosillabe, perche allora si pronuncia come ai; ex.

By, per.

my, mio.

Cry, grido.

thy, tuo.

E molte altre parole, che si scrivono anche con ie; ex.

Deny, }
Reply, }
Defy, }

Pronunciate

{denai, negare.
{replai, replicare.
{defai, sfidare.

Y, si mette al principio d'una parola, in luogo dell'i lungo in Italiano; ex.

Yard, verga.

young, giovane.

Yes, sì.

Year, anno.

Youth, gioventù.

yet, ancora.

Ay, si pronuncia come e aperto; ex.

Say, dici.

Day, giorno.

May, maggio.

Way, via.

Della Pronuncia delle Consonanti.

B.

B, si pronuncia come in Italiano, eccetto, che non si pronuncia appresso un m; ex.

Comb, pettine.

Thumb, il pollice.

Lamb, agnello.

dumb, muto.

Womb, la matrice.

B, non si pronuncia ne meno avanti un t; ex.

Doubt, dubbio.

Debtor, debitore.

Debt, debito.

C, avanti

C.

C, avanti un h, si pronuncia forte, come se vi fosse
 t avanti, & l' h si pronuncia come un i; ex.

Charles, Carlo.

Church, Chiesa.

ie; Chamber, Camera.

C, seguitato da un a, o, u, si pronuncia come in Ita-
 liano; ex.

Capital, capitale.

Curious, curioso.

Careful, accurato.

Custom, costume.

ell' i Correct, corretto.

Curate, Piovano.

Cordial, cordiale.

C, avanti un e, o un i, si pronuncia come un s; ex.

Celestial, celeste.

Civil, civile.

Certainly, certamente.

City, città.

D.

D, Si pronuncia come in Italiano.

F.

F, Si pronuncia anche come in Italiano.

G.

G, avanti a, o, u, si pronuncia come in Italiano; ex.

Gain, gaudagno.

Gold, oro.

Game, giuoco.

Governour, governatore.

Garden, giardino.

Gum, gomma.

God, Iddio.

Gun, Cannone.

G, avanti e, ed i, si pronuncia come in Italiano; ex.

Gentleman, gentiluomo.

Gibbet, giubetto.

German, Alemanno.

Ginger, giunepo.

vanti
 ant, gigante.

Eccettuane le parole seguenti, nelle quali il g, si pronuncia duro, come se fosse seguitato da un h ; ex.

Geese, delle oche.	a Conger, un congro.
Gelding, un cavallo ungaro.	a Dagger, un pugnale.
To get, guadagnare.	to beget, generare.
Gift, dono.	a Druggist, un droghista.
Giddy, stordito.	a Finger, un dito.
To give, dare.	to forget, dimenticare.
Girdle, cinturino.	a Hanger, una catena.
Girl, ragazza.	Hunger, fame.
To gild, indorare.	Stronger, più forte.

G, Non si pronuncia avanti n, ne avanti ht ; ex.

To feign, fingere.	Night, notte.
Reign, regno.	Sight, vista.

H.

H, si aspira al principio d'ogni parola ; ma non pronuncia appresso g, ed r ; ex.

Ghost, spirito.	Rhetorick, rettorica.
-----------------	-----------------------

I.

I vocale, nel principio d'una parola si pronuncia come in Italiano ; ex.

Immortal, immortale.	Instrument, strumento.
Inconstant, incoostante.	Instruction, istruzione.
Irregular, irregolare.	Inferiour, inferiore..

I, nel mezzo della parola è molto irregolare, per dalle volte si pronuncia i, e dalle volte ai : e come ho potuto stabilire una regola senza moltissime co

zion
liano
sia n

J
Jest,
Joy,
Judg
June,
Jupit

K,
Kalen
Key,
Kitch

Ecc
da un
To kn
Knife,
Knee,

L,
Calf,
Half,

L,
Could,
Should
Would

zio

zioni, dirò solamente, che l' i, si pronuncia come in Italiano in tutte quelle parole, che derivano dal Latino, sia nel principio, sia nel mezzo della parola.

J.

J Consonante, si pronuncia come un g ; ex.

Jest,	}	Pronunciate	{	gest, giuoco.
Joy,				giai, gioja.
Judge,				giudge, giudice.
June,				giun, giugno.
Jupiter,				giupiter, giove.

K.

K, si pronuncia come ch in Italiano ; ex.

Kalender, calendario.	King, Rè.
Key, chiave.	Kiss, bacio.
Kitchen, cucina.	

Eccettuane le parole che cominciano d'un k seguitato da un n, perche allora non si pronuncia ; ex.

To know,	}	Pronunciate	{	to no, sapere.
Knife,				neif, coltello.
Knee,				ni, ginocchio.

L.

L, non si pronuncia avanti f, & K ; ex.

Calf, vitello.	Chalk, gesso.
Half, metà.	to walk, camminare.

L, non si pronuncia ne meno nelle parole seguenti.

Could, potrei.
Should, segno dell' Imperfetto dell' ottativo.
Would, vorrei.

M. N. P.

Queste tre lettere si pronunciano come in Italiano.

P, non si pronuncia in queste parole,

Psalms, salmo.

Receipt, ricevuta.

Ph, si pronuncia come f; ex.

Philosopher, filosofo. Phoebus, febo. Phoenix, fenice.

Eccetto le parole di due sillabe; come Shepherd, pastore.

Q.

Questa lettera non si trova, che avanti u, e qu si pronuncia come in Italiano; ex.

A Quail, una quaglia.

Quill, penna.

Question, questione.

quick, presto.

R.

R, si pronuncia come in Italiano.

S.

S, si pronuncia come in Italiano, eccettone queste parole,

Sugar,

Sure,

Affure,

} Pronunciate.

} sciugar, zuccaro.

} sciur, sicuro.

} asciur, assicurare.

Sh

Shape

Ship,

Shoe,

Shop,

Dish,

Fish,

Fra

Rose,

Nose,

Wife,

Ecc

Houfe

Loufe

T,

role in

Action

Corru

Gener

Excep

Admin

Contin

Bened

Th,

Sh

come n

ter ser

dalla b

suono

Sh si pronuncia come sci ; ex.

Shape,	} Pronunciate.	{ scep, statura.
Ship,		{ scip, vascello.
Shoe,		{ sciu, scarpa.
Shop,		{ sciap, bottega.
Dish,		{ disc, piatto.
Fish,		{ fisc, pescie.

Fra due vocali s si pronuncia rozzo, come un z ; ex.

Rose, rosa.	to rise, levarsi.
Nose, naso.	Excuse, scusa.
Wife, savio.	to refuse, recusare.

Eccetto appresso ou ; ex.

Houfe, casa.	Moufe, forcio.
Loufe, pidocchio.	

T.

T, si pronuncia come in Italiano ; eccettuate le parole in ion, nelle quali si pronuncia sc ; ex.

Action,	} Pron.	{ acscion, azione.
Corruption,		{ corrupscion, corruzione.
Generation,		{ generascion, generazione.
Exception,		{ excepscion, eccezione.
Admiration,		{ admirascion, ammirazione.
Continuation,		{ continuascion, continuazione.
Benediction,		{ benedicscion, benedizione.

Th, si pronuncia mettendo la lingua fra i denti ; e come non abbiamo in Italiano una sola parola da poter servire d' esempio, bisogna impararne la pronuncia dalla bocca di quelli che parlano Inglese, essendo un suono particolare alla lingua Inglese ; il che fa,

*che gli stranieri hanno grandissima difficoltà a pronun-
ciarlo.*

X.

X, si pronuncia fra noi come in Latino; ex.

Wax, *cera.*

Sex, *seſſo.*

Ox, *bue.*

fix, *ſei.*

Z.

Z, si pronuncia come in Italiano.

Fine della Pronuncia.

Delle Parti dell' Orazione.

*La lingua Ingleſe, come le altre lingue, è compoſta
d'otto parti d'orazione; che ſono, 1. Il Nome. 2. Il
Pronome. 3. Il Verbo. 4. Il Participio. 5. L' Ad-
verbio. 6. La Congiunzione. 7. La Prepoſizione.
8. l' Interjezione.*

Dei Nomi.

*I nomi ſono parole, che ſervono a nominare tutte le
coſe, che ſono nel mondo; ex. Un uomo, a Man; una
donna, a Woman; il mondo, the World; la terra,
the Earth.*

Si dividono in ſuſtantivi, e adjettivi.

*I nomi ſuſtantivi ſono le ſoſtanze medefime; come, il
cielo, the Sky; il ſole, the Sun; la luna, the Moon;
l'acqua, the Water; una pietra, a Stone; ed altri
nomi, ai quali non ſi puo propriamente aggiungere queſ-
ta parola (Coſa); come, la Prudenza, la ſaviezza, la
lunghezza, la bianchezza, e ſimili; perche non ſi po-
trebbe dire propriamente, la Prudenza coſa, la ſaviez-
za coſa, &c.*

I nomi adjettivi servono ad esprimere la qualità dei nomi sostantivi, ed ai quali si può propriamente aggiungere questa parola (Cosa); come, grande, great; piccolo, little; buono, good; cattivo, bad; nero, black; bianco, white; perchè si può dire propriamente, una piccola cosa, una gran cosa, a little Thing, a great Thing.

Gli adjettivi nella lingua Inglese sono indeclinabili, e per conseguenza servono a tutti i sostantivi tanto mascholini, e femminini, nel singolare, e nel plurale, senza variare la sua terminazione; come per esempio, un gran Re, a great King; una gran donna, a great Woman; un bell' uomo, a handsome Man; una bella casa, a handsome House; bei giardini, handsome Gardens; belle città, handsome Towns.

I nomi sostantivi si dividono in Nomi Proprij, e Nomi Appellativi. I nomi proprij sono quelli degli uomini, delle donne, de' Paesi, delle Città, de' Fiumi, e di tutte le cose in particolare; perchè non convengono, ch'alle sole cose così nominate; come, Paolo, Pietro, Maria, la Francia, l'Inghilterra, il Tevere, Londra, Roma.

I nomi appellativi convengono alle cose della medesima specie; come questa parola (Uomo) conviene a tutti gli uomini in generale; e così delle altre, come un lione, un cavallo, un cane. Ogni sorte di nomi sostantivi sono mascholini, o femminini, comuni, o neutri.

I Mascolini comprendono gli Angeli, gli Uomini, e gli animali maschi.

I femminini comprendono le donne, e le femmine degli animali.

I nomi del genere comune sono quelli che comprendono l'uno e l'altro sesso; come, Cousin, cugino, e cugina; Neighbour, vicino, e vicina; Servant, servitore, e serva; Thief, ladro, e ladra.

Il genere neutro comprende le creature delle quali non si sa di qual sesso siano; come i rettili; ma principalmente le cose inanimate.

Tutti i nomi sostantivi si declinano per mezzo di questi due articoli a, e the.

Degli Articoli, e della Declinazione de Nomi.

I nomi si declinano in Inglese, come in Italiano, cioè per mezzo degli articoli, senza variare la loro terminazione come fanno in Latino.

ARTICOLO DEFINITO.

S.

P.

Nom. the, *il.*Nom. the, *i.*Gen. of the, *del.*Gen. of the, *dei, o de'.*Dat. to the, *al.*Dat. to the, *ai, o a'.*Acc. the, *il.*Acc. the, *i.*Voc. o, *o.*Voc. o, *o.*Ab. from the, *dal.*Ab. from the, *dai, o da'*

ESEMPIO.

S.

P.

Nom. the King, *il Re.*Nom. the Kings, *i Re.*Gen. of the King, *del Re.*Gen. of the Kings, *dei Re.*Dat. to the King, *al Re.*Dat. to the Kings, *ai Re.*Acc. the King, *il Re.*Acc. the Kings, *i Re.*Voc. o King, *o Re.*Voc. o Kings, *o Re.*Ab. from the King, *dal Re.*Ab. from the Kings, *dai Re.*

S. F.

P. F.

Nom. the Queen, *la Regina.*Nom. the Queens, *le Regine.*Gen. of the Queen, *della Regina.*Gen. of the Queens, *delle Regine.*

Dat.

<i>Dat. to the Queen, alla Regina.</i>	<i>Dat. to the Queens, alle Regine.</i>
<i>Acc. the Queen, la Regina.</i>	<i>Acc. the Queens, le Regine.</i>
<i>Voc. o Queen, o Regina.</i>	<i>Voc. o Queens, o Regine.</i>
<i>Ab. from the Queen, dalla Regina.</i>	<i>Ab. from the Queens, dalle Regine.</i>

Dai precendenti esempi si vede, che la lingua Inglese non ha che un articolo, che serve per il mascolino, e per il femminino, singulare, e plurale.

ARTICOLO INDEFINITO.

L' articolo indefinito in Inglese come in Italiano non ha, che tre casi; cioè il genitivo, il dativo, e l' ablativo; e serve ai nomi proprij, e non ha plurale.

S.

*Gen. of, di.**Dat. to, a, o ad.**Ab. from, da.*

ESEMPIO.

<i>Nom. Peter, Pietro.</i>	<i>Nom. London, Londra.</i>
<i>Gen. of Peter, di Pietro.</i>	<i>Gen. of London, di Londra.</i>
<i>Dat. to Peter, a Pietro.</i>	<i>Dat. to London, a Londra.</i>
<i>Acc. Peter, Pietro.</i>	<i>Acc. London, Londra.</i>
<i>Ab. from Peter, da Pietro.</i>	<i>Ab. from London, da Londra.</i>

Parlando delle Virtù, delle Passioni, de' Vizj, delle Arti, delle Scienze, non ci serviamo dell' articolo; ex.

<i>Virtue cannot agree with Vice.</i>	<i>La Virtù non puo accordarsi col vizio.</i>
<i>Justice is without Interest.</i>	<i>La Giustizia non è interessata.</i>
<i>Chastity, Modesty, and Humility are lovely Virtues,</i>	<i>La Castità, la Modestia, e l'umiltà sono virtù amabili. Pru-</i>

Prudence is the Rule of all Virtues,	<i>La Prudenza è la regola di tutte le virtù.</i>
Justice is the Bond of human Society,	<i>La Giustizia è il legame della Società umana.</i>
Pride is the Sin of the Devil,	<i>La Superbia è un peccato diabolico.</i>
Discord is the Ruin of States,	<i>La discordia è la rovina degli stati.</i>
Drunkennes is abominable,	<i>L' ubbiachezza è abominevole.</i>
Love's Power is great,	<i>Il poter dell' amore è grande.</i>
Anger doth breathe nothing but Arms and Blood,	<i>La collera non spira, che armi, è sangue.</i>
Hope is the Ground of the Christian Religion,	<i>La speranza è 'l fondamento della Religione Cristiana.</i>
Philosophy is the Mistress of Wisdom,	<i>La filosofia è la maestra della sagesza.</i>
Musick is pleasing to the Ear,	<i>La musica è grata all' orecchio.</i>
Writing knows nothing, and teaches all Things,	<i>La scrittura non sa niente, ed insegna ogni cosa.</i>
Arithmetick is the Science of Numbers,	<i>L' Aritmetica è la scienza de' numeri.</i>

Parlando delle sostanze in generale, e principalmente di quelle, che non si contano, non ci serviamo d' Articolo.

Bread is the Staff of Life,	<i>Il pane è il sostegno della vita.</i>
If Salt loses its Savor,	<i>Se il sale perde il suo sapore.</i>

I love

I love Milk, Butter, and Cheefe,	<i>Amo il latte, il burro, ed il formaggio.</i>
Beef is the Partridge of England,	<i>Il bue è la pernice d' In- ghilterra.</i>
Mutton is sweeter than Bacon,	<i>Il castrato è più saporito del presciutto.</i>
Roast Meat is better than boiled Meat,	<i>L' arrosto, è migliore dell' alefso.</i>
Wine doth rejoice the Heart,	<i>Il vino rallegra il core.</i>
Gold and Silver do all Things,	<i>L' oro, e l' argento fan- no tutto.</i>
Grass and Hay are the Food of Cattel,	<i>L' erba, e'l fieno sono il pasto degli animali.</i>
Garlick stinks,	<i>L' aglio puzza.</i>
Sugar is sweet,	<i>Il zucchero è dolce.</i>

*Tutti i Sostantivi che si possono numerare, rice-
vono l' articolo nel Singolare, ma non nel Plurale,
parlando generalmente, e senza limitazione.*

I have a Friend,	<i>Ho un Amico.</i>
I have Friends,	<i>Ho degli Amici.</i>
I have a good Book,	<i>Ho un buon Libro.</i>
I have good Books,	<i>Ho buoni Libri.</i>
I have bought a Knife,	<i>Ho comprato un Coltello.</i>
I have bought Knives,	<i>Ho comprato Coltelli.</i>
Kings and Princes must be obeyed,	<i>Bisogna ubbidire ai Re, ed ai Principi.</i>
Old Men are twice Children,	<i>I vecchi sono due volte Bambini.</i>

*Bisogna avvertire, che in tutte le regole che ho
date, nelle quali non ci serviamo dell' articolo,
si tratta di sostanza in generale. Ma se veniamo a
specificare una cosa particolare, allora ci serviamo
dell' articolo, come facciamo in Italiano; ex.*

The Love of GOD,	<i>L' Amor di Dio.</i>
The Wisdom of Men is Folly before GOD,	<i>La saviezza degli uo- mini è pazzia in- nanzi Dio.</i>
I thank you for the Wine you sent me,	<i>Vi ringrazio del vino, che m' avete man- dato.</i>
I have spent all the Gold and Silver that I received Yesterday,	<i>Ho speso tutto l' oro, e l' argento, che rice- vei ieri.</i>
The Mutton that we did eat the other Day, was very sweet,	<i>Il castrato che mangi- ammo l' altro giorno, era molto saporito.</i>
The Books that I have bought,	<i>I Libri, che ho com- prati.</i>
The Women that we saw,	<i>Le donne, che vedemmo.</i>
The Knives that you sent me,	<i>I coltelli che m' avete mandati.</i>
The Kings of England and Spain are agreed,	<i>I Re d' Inghilterra, e di Spagna sono paci- ficati.</i>

*Parlando di cose differenti, non si ripete l' ar-
ticolo, come si fa in Italiano.*

The Kings and Princes,	<i>I Re, ed i Principi.</i>
The Eyes and Ears,	<i>Gli occhi, e le orecchie.</i>
The Arms and Legs,	<i>Le Braccia, e le Gambe.</i>
The Father, Mother, and Children,	<i>Il Padre, la Madre, ed i Figliuoli.</i>
Brothers and Sisters,	<i>I Fratelli, e le sorelle.</i>
The Light and Dark- ness.	<i>La Luce, e le tenebre.</i>

*Quando si parla dei membri del corpo, non ci
serviamo dell' articolo, ma del pronome possessivo.*
My

My Head akes,	<i>Mi duole la testa.</i>
My Eyes are fore,	<i>Ho male agli occhi.</i>
I have burnt my Finger,	<i>Mi sono abbruciato un dito.</i>
I'll break your Head,	<i>Vi romperò la testa.</i>
He hath lost his Sight,	<i>Egli ha perduta la vista.</i>
Wash your Hands,	<i>Lavatevi le mani.</i>
I'll throw that at your Face,	<i>Vi gitterò questo al viso.</i>

Quando si parla di due persone, o di due cose, l'una delle quali appartiene all'altra, bisogna mettere il genetivo avanti il nominativo senza articolo, aggiugnendovi un s, con un' apostrofo, fra il genetivo, e 'l nominativo, ex.

The King's son,	<i>Il Figlio del Re,</i>
The Queen's Coach,	<i>La Carozza della Regina.</i>
My Brother's Wife,	<i>La Moglie di mio fratello.</i>
My Father's House,	<i>La Casa di mio Padre.</i>
My Master's Horse,	<i>Il cavallo del mio Padrone.</i>
My Sister's Gloves,	<i>I guanti di mia sorella.</i>
My Uncle's Son,	<i>Il Figlio di mio Zio.</i>
My Friend's Books,	<i>I Libri del mio amico.</i>

Il genetivo si mette anche avanti il nominativo senza articolo, quando si parla d' una cosa fatta d' un'altra cosa, ex.

A Brick House,	<i>Una Casa di Mattoni.</i>
A Silver Dish,	<i>Un piatto d' Argento.</i>
A Scarlet Cloak,	<i>Un Mantello di Scarlata.</i>
Silk Stockings,	<i>Calzete di Seta.</i>
A wooden Box,	<i>Una Cassa di Legno.</i>

A Horn Comb,	<i>Un pettine di corno.</i>
A Gold Ring,	<i>Un anello d' oro.</i>
Brass Money,	<i>Moneta di rame.</i>
A Holland Shirt,	<i>Una camiscia di tela d' Olanda.</i>

Ma parlando di cose che contengono numeri, e misure, il genetivo seguita il nominativo con l' articolo, come in Italiano; ex.

A Glass of Wine,	<i>Un bicchiere di Vino.</i>
A Barrel of Beer,	<i>Un barrile di Birra.</i>
A Dish of Meat,	<i>Un piatto di Carne.</i>
A Dozen of Lemons,	<i>Una dozzina di Limoni.</i>
A Bottle of Wine,	<i>Un fiasco di vino.</i>
A Bushel of Wheat,	<i>Uno stajo di Formento.</i>
A Pound of Butter,	<i>Una libra di Burro.</i>
An Ell of Cloth,	<i>Un ala di Panno.</i>

Quando vogliamo esprimere a che uso una cosa s' adopra, la cosa adoprata si mette appresso alla cosa per la quale s' adopra; ex.

A Wine Glass,	<i>Un bicchiere da vino.</i>
A Tobacco Box,	<i>Una scatola da Tabacco.</i>
A Wine Bottle,	<i>Un fiasco da Vino.</i>
Salat Oil,	<i>Olio da Insalata.</i>
A Coach-Horse,	<i>Cavallo da Carozza.</i>
A Fire-Shovel,	<i>Una paletta da fuoco.</i>
A Night-Cap.	<i>Una baretta da notte.</i>

Parlando di musica ci serviamo dell' articolo the, accompagnato dalla preposizione on, o upon; e per gli altri ginocchi di guadagno, o di perdita, ci serviamo della preposizione at; ex.

To play upon the Fiddle,	<i>Suonare del Violino.</i>
--------------------------	-----------------------------

To play upon the Lute,	<i>Suonare del Liuto.</i>
To play upon the Guitar,	<i>Suonare della chitarra.</i>
To play on the Spinnet.	<i>Suonare della Spinetta.</i>
To play upon the Harp-ficord,	<i>Suonare dell' Arpicordo.</i>
To play at Cards,	<i>Giucare alle Carte.</i>
To play at Piquet,	<i>Giucare a Pichetto.</i>
At Bowls,	<i>Alle Bocce.</i>
At Tennis,	<i>Alla palla Corda.</i>
At Omber.	<i>All' Ombra.</i>

Della formazione del Numero del più dei Nomi Sufstantivi.

Il numero del più fi forma comunemente aggiungendo un s, al numero del meno; ex.

The King,	<i>il Re.</i>
The Kings,	<i>i Re.</i>
The Lord,	<i>il Signore.</i>
The Lords,	<i>i Signori.</i>
The Queen,	<i>la Regina.</i>
The Queens,	<i>le Regine.</i>
Book,	<i>Libro.</i>
Books,	<i>Libri.</i>
Horfe,	<i>Cavallo.</i>
Horfes,	<i>Cavalli.</i>
My Brother,	<i>mio Fratello.</i>
My Brothers,	<i>miei Fratelli.</i>
My Houfe,	<i>mia Casa.</i>
My Houfes,	<i>mie Cafe.</i>
Your Garden,	<i>vostro Giardino.</i>
Your Gardens,	<i>vostri Giardini.</i>
His Horfe,	<i>suo Cavallo.</i>
His Horfes,	<i>suoi Cavalli.</i>
Our Servant,	<i>nostro Servo.</i>
Our Servants,	<i>nostri Servi.</i>

Y

Questa

Questa regola ha tre Eccezioni.

I. ECCEZIONE.

I singolari che terminano in ch, dg, f, fh, ff, o x, formano il plurale aggiungendovi es; ex.

Church, *Chiesa*, Churches, *Chiese*.
 Match, *zolferino*, Matches, *zolferini*.
 Hedge, *siepe*, Hedges, *siepi*.
 Horse, *cavallo*, Horses, *cavalli*.
 Fish, *pesce*, Fishes, *pesci*.
 Cross, *croce*, Crosses, *croci*.
 Witness, *Testimonio*, Witnesses, *Testimonj*.
 Box, *scatola*, Boxes, *scatole*.

2. ECCEZIONE.

I singolari che terminano in f, o fe, cambiano fin ves; ex.

Calf, *vitello*, Calves, *vitelli*.
 Staff, *bastone*, Staves, *bastoni*.
 Thief, *ladro*, Thieves, *ladri*.
 Loaf, *un pane*, Loaves, *pani*.
 Knife, *coltello*, Knives, *coltelli*.
 Life, *vita*, Lives, *vite*.
 Wife, *moglie*, Wives, *mogli*.

3. ECCEZIONE.

I nomi seguenti sono irregolari.

Man, *uomo*, Men, *uomini*.
 Woman, *donna*, Women, *donne*.
 Child, *fanciullo*, Children, *fanciulli*.
 Ox, *bue*, Oxen, *buoi*.
 Mouse, *sorcio*, Mice, *forci*.
 Louse, *pidocchio*, Lice, *pidocchi*.

Die,

Die, *dado*, Dice, *dadi*.
 Foot, *piede*, Feet, *piedi*.
 Goose, *oca*, Geese, *ocche*.
 Penny, *soldo*, Pence, *soldi*.
 Sow, *troja*, Swine, *troje*.
 Tooth, *dente*, Teeth, *denti*.
 Sheep, *pecora*, non ha plurale.

Vi sono alcuni sostantivi, come sono i minerali, che non hanno plurale, come in Italiano; Gold, oro; Silver, argento; Copper, rame; Lead, piombo, &c.

Gli aggettivi, come ho detto di sopra, non hanno plurale, e servono a tutti i generi; ex. good Man, buon uomo; good Woman, buona donna; good Men, buoni uomini; good Women, buone donne.

Gli aggettivi vanno generalmente avanti i sostantivi.

An honest Man,	Un Uomo onesto.
A vertuous Woman,	Una donna virtuosa.
The first Tome,	Il primo tomo.
The second Book,	Il secondo libro.
White-wine,	Vino bianco.
Brown Bread,	Pan bruno.
A black Suit,	Un abito nero.
Grey Hair,	Capelli bianchi.
Red Stockings,	Calzette rosse.
An English Gentleman,	Un gentiluomo Inglese.
An Italian Proverb,	Un proverbio Italiano.
A Latin Sentence,	Un Sentenzia latina.
A roasted Capon,	Un capone arrosto.
Boiled Meat,	Carne alleffa.
Next Week,	La settimana prossima.
A round Table.	Una tavola rotonda.
Fresh Butter,	Del burro fresco.
Old Wine,	Vin vecchio.

The right Hand,	<i>La man dritta.</i>
Cold Weather,	<i>Tempo freddo.</i>
A rare Thing,	<i>Una cosa rara.</i>
A tall Man,	<i>Un uomo alto.</i>

Dei tre gradi di Comparazione.

I nomi aggettivi hanno tre gradi di Comparazione, il Positivo, il Comparativo, ed il Superlativo.

Il positivo significa solamente la semplice qualità d' una cosa ; come, handsome, bello, o bella.

Il comparativo innalza questa qualità, in comparazione a qualche altra cosa ; come, handsomer, più bello, o più bella.

Il superlativo esalta questa qualità in sommo grado ; come, the handsomest, or the most handsome, il più bello.

Il Comparativo si forma del Positivo, aggiungendovi er ; Il superlativo aggiungendovi est ; ex.

Low, basso.	High, alto.
Lower, più basso.	Higher, più alto.
The lowest, il più basso.	The highest, il più alto.
Great, grande.	Rich, ricco.
Greater, più grande.	Richer, più ricco.
The greatest, il più grande.	The richest, il più ricco.

Ci serviamo ancora di queste parole, more, most e very ; il primo per esprimere il comparativo, il secondo per esprimere il superlativo con comparazione ; ed il terzo esprime il superlativo senza comparazione ; ex.

<i>Peter is ingenious,</i>	<i>Pietrò è ingegnoso.</i>
<i>Paul is more ingenious,</i>	<i>Paolo è più ingegnoso.</i>
<i>Francis is the most ingenious in the World.</i>	<i>Francesco è il più ingegnoso del mondo.</i>

You

Your Wife is very hand- vostra moglie è bellissi-
some, ma, o molto bella.

*Da queste regole generali bisogna eccettuarne i
seguenti aggettivi.*

Good, buono; better, migliore; best, ottimo.

Ill, cattivo; worse, peggiore; the worst,

Bad, il più peggiore.

Many, molti; more, più; most, il più.

Little, piccolo; less, minore, o più piccolo;
the least, il più piccolo.

*Gli aggettivi che terminano in ous non hanno
altro comparativo, ne superlativo, che con l' ajuto
di queste tre parole, more, most, e very.*

Glorious, glorioso.

More glorious, più glorioso.

Most glorious, gloriosissimo, o più glorioso.

Very glorious, gloriosissimo, o molto glorioso.

Della Derivazione de' Nomi.

*I nomi si dividono anche in Primitivi, e Deri-
vativi.*

*Un nome Primitivo non deriva da nessun altro;
come, Love, amore.*

*Il Derivativo è quello, che deriva d' un Primi-
tivo; come, Lover, amatore.*

*Vi sono alcuni sostantivi materiali ai quali ag-
giungendovi una di queste tre Terminazioni er,
yer, o ster, sene formano altri sostantivi, che
significano o l' agente, o l' artifice impiegato a queste
cose; ex.*

A Hat, un cappello; a Hatter, un cappellajo.

A Pot, una pignatta; a Potter, un pignataro.

A Fish, un pesce; a Fisher, un pescatore.

A Glove, un guanto; a Glover, un guantaro.

A Garden, *un giardino*; a Gardener, *un giardiniero*.

A Gun, *un cannone*; a Gunner, *un cannoniero*.

A Law, *una legge*; a Lawyer, *un giuriconsulto*.

A Game, *un giuoco*; a Gamester, *un giuocatore*.

Vi sono ancora altri sostantivi personali, dai quali sene formano altri sostantivi di dignità, aggiungendovi questa particola Ship; come,

An Apostle, *un apostolo*; Apostleship, *apostolato*.
An Admiral, *un ammiraglio*; Admiralship, *ammiragliato*.

A Master, *un maestro*; Mastership, *magisterio*.

A Lord, *un Signore*; Lordship, *Signoria*.

Similmente questa particola hood, unita a qualche sostantivi, ha la medesima forza; ex.

Father, *padre*; Fatherhood, *paternità*.

Child, *fanciullo*; Childhood, *fanciullezza*.

Brother, *fratello*; Brotherhood, *fraternità*.

Man, *uomo*; Manhood, *virilità*.

False, *falso*; Falsehood, *falsità*.

Vi sono molti nomi sostantivi in Inglese, come in Italiano, che derivano dal latino in molte maniere.

1. *I sostantivi, che terminano in ion, vengono dal latino in io; come, Opinion, Religion, Question, &c.*

2. *I sostantivi che terminano in our, derivano dai latini in or; come, Labour, Honour, Favour, &c.*

3. *I sostantivi, che terminano in ty, derivano dai latini in tas; come, Pity, Charity, Liberality, Purity, &c.*

Sarebbe

*Sare
vi, che
lingua*

In che

*Gli
aggiung
una qu*

*Joy, a
Fruit,
Youth.
Care,
Use, u
Beauty
Bounty
Deceit
Disdai
Grace,
Faith,
Chear,
Skill,
Power
Deligh
Distru
Dread
Will,
Watch
Hurt,
Mind,
Pain,
Plenty*

Sarebbe troppo lungo di numerare tutti i sostantivi, che derivano dal latino ; gl' intelligenti della lingua latina potranno facilmente comprenderli.

In che maniere gli Aggettivi si formano dai Sostantivi.

Gli aggettivi seguenti si formano dai sostantivi aggiungendovi questa particola full, che comprende una quantità di quel, che la qualità significa ; ex.

Joy, allegrezza,	joyful, allegro.
Fruit, frutto,	fruitful, fruttifero.
Youth, gioventù,	youthful, giovanile.
Care, cura,	careful, accurato.
Use, uso,	useful, utile.
Beauty, beltà,	beautiful, bello.
Bounty, bontà,	bountiful, benigno.
Deceit, inganno,	deceitful, ingannevole.
Disdain, sdegno,	disdainful, sdegnoso.
Grace, grazia,	graceful, grazioso.
Faith, fede,	faithful, fedele.
Chear, allegria,	cheerful, allegro.
Skill, arte,	skilful, versato.
Power, potere,	powerful, potente.
Delight, piacere,	delightful, piacevole.
Distrust, sospetto,	distrustful, sospettoso.
Dread, spavento,	dreadful, spaventevole.
Will, volontà,	wilful, caparbio.
Watch, vigilia,	watchful, vigilante.
Hurt, nocumento,	hurtful, nocivo.
Mind, cura,	mindful, accurato.
Pain, dolore.	painful, doloroso.
Plenty, abbondanza,	plentiful, abbondante.

I seguenti si formano dai sostantivi aggiungendovi la particola less, ch' esprime una privazione di quel che il sostantivo significa; ex.

Beard, *barba*,
Blame, *biasimo*,
Father, *padre*,
Friend, *amico*,
End, *sine*,
Name, *nome*,
Question, *dubbio*,

Sense, *senso*,
e molti altri.

beardless, *sbarbato*.
blameless, *senza biasimo*.
fatherless, *senza padre*.
friendless, *senza amici*.
endless, *infinito*.
nameless, *senza nome*.
questionless, *indubitabile*.
senseless, *insensato*.

Vene sono degli altri che si formano aggiungendovi ous,

Danger, *pericolo*,
Courage, *coraggio*,
Malice, *malizia*,
Harmony, *armonia*,
Valour, *valore*,
Zeal, *zelo*,
Monster, *mostro*,
Outrage, *oltraggio*,

Marvel, *maraviglia*,

Rigour, *rigore*,
Vertue, *virtù*,
e molti altri.

dangerous, *pericoloso*.
courageous, *coraggioso*.
malicious, *malizioso*.
harmonious, *armonioso*.
valorous, *valoroso*.
zealous, *zeloso*.
monstrous, *mostroso*.
outrageous, *oltraggianti*.

marvellous, *maraviglioso*.

rigorous, *rigoroso*.
virtuous, *virtuoso*.

Vene sono degli altri che si formano aggiungendovi ly.

God, *Dio*,
Brother, *fratello*,
Earth, *terra*,

godly, *pio*.
brotherly, *fraterno*.
earthly, *terreno*.

Heaven,

Heaven,
Love,
Order,

Vene

Blood,
Dirt, *sporcizia*,
Guilt, *colpa*,
Hair, *capelli*,
Hunger,
Loue, *amore*,
Mud, *fanghina*,
Need, *bisogno*,
Sand, *sabbia*,
Stone, *pietra*,
Wind,

Vene

dovi *istesso*.

Brute, *bestia*,
Devil, *diavolo*,
Fool, *stolto*,
Sot, *ubriaco*,
Water,
Whore, *putana*,
Child, *figlio*,

Ma q

minuisc

White,
Red, *rosso*,
Yellow,
Cold, *freddo*,
Sweet, *dolce*,

Heaven, <i>cielo</i> ,	heavenly, <i>celeste</i> .
Love, <i>amore</i> ,	lovely, <i>amabile</i> .
Order, <i>ordine</i> ,	orderly, <i>regolato</i> .

Vene sono, che si formano aggiungendovi y.

Blood, <i>sangue</i> ,	bloody, <i>sanguinolente</i> .
Dirt, <i>sporcizia</i> ,	dirty, <i>sporco</i> .
Guilt, <i>colpa</i> ,	guilty, <i>colpevole</i> .
Hair, <i>pelo</i> ,	hairy, <i>pelofo</i> .
Hunger, <i>fame</i> ,	hungry, <i>famelico</i> .
Loufe, <i>pidocchio</i> ,	lousy, <i>pidocchioso</i> .
Mud, <i>fango</i> ,	muddy, <i>fangoso</i> .
Need, <i>bisogno</i> ,	needy, <i>bisognofo</i> .
Sand, <i>sabbia</i> ,	fandy, <i>sabbioso</i> .
Stone, <i>pietra</i> ,	stony, <i>pietrofo</i> .
Wind, <i>vento</i> ,	windy, <i>ventoso</i> .

*Vene sono degli altri, che si formano aggiungen-
dovi ish.*

Brute, <i>bruto</i> ,	brutish, <i>brutale</i> .
Devil, <i>diavolo</i> ,	devilish, <i>diabolico</i> .
Fool, <i>uno sciocco</i> ,	foolish, <i>sciocco</i> .
Sot, <i>un melenfo</i> ,	fottish, <i>melenfo</i> .
Water, <i>acqua</i> ,	waterish, <i>acquoso</i> .
Whore, <i>puttana</i> ,	whorish, <i>puttaniero</i> .
Child, <i>fanciullo</i> ,	childish, <i>fanciullesco</i> .

*Ma questa particola ish, unita agli aggettivi di-
minuisce la loro significazione ; ex.*

White, <i>bianco</i> ,	whitish, <i>bianchiccio</i> .
Red, <i>rosso</i> ,	reddish, <i>rossiccio</i> .
Yellow, <i>giallo</i> ,	yellowish, <i>gialliccio</i> .
Cold, <i>freddo</i> ,	coldish, <i>un poco freddo</i> .
Sweet, <i>dolce</i> ,	sweetish, <i>dolcioso</i> .

Vi sono altri aggettivi che si formano aggiugnendovi able.

Season, stagione,	seasonable, di stagione.
Blame, biasimo,	blameable, biasimevole.
Change, cangiamento,	changeable, mutabile.
Cure, cura,	curable, curabile.
Favour, favore,	favourable, favorevole.
Measure, misura,	measurable, misurabile.
Note, nota,	notable, notabile.
Pardon, perdono,	pardonable, perdonabile.
Profit, profitto,	profitable, profittevole.

e molti altri.

I, seguenti divengono aggettivi aggiugnendovi all, call, o ical.

Rhetorick, rettorica,	rhetorical, rettorico.
Angel, angelo,	angelical, angelico.
Canon, canone,	canonical, canonico.
Logick, Logica,	logical, logico.
Musick, musica,	musical, musico.
Allegory, allegoria,	allegorical, allegorico.
Accident, accidente,	accidental, accidentale.
History, istoria.	historical, istorico.
Method, metodo,	methodical, metodico.
Person, persona,	personal, personale.

La maggior parte degli aggettivi derivativi dei quali abbiamo fatto menzione, che hanno la terminazione in full, less, ous, y, e ish, divengono di nuovo sostantivi, aggiugnendovi questa particola, ness.

Powerful, potente.	Powerfulness, potenza.
Wilful, caparbio,	Wilfulness, caparbieta.
Careless, trascurato,	Carelessness, trascuragine.
Godly, pio,	Godliness, pietà.

Crafty,

*Crafty
Foolish
Right*

*Devilish
Brutish*

*Que
impieg
cose.*

*quello,
ch'è qu
ella, l
parla.
voi; th*

*Nom. I
Gen. o
Dat. to
Acc. me
Abl. fro*

*Nom. t
Gen. of
Dat. to
Acc, the
Abl. fro*

Crafty, <i>astuto,</i>	Craftiness, <i>astuzia.</i>
Foolish, <i>pazzo,</i>	Foolishness, <i>pazzia,</i>
Righteous, <i>giusto,</i>	Righteousness, <i>giustiz- zia,</i>
Devilish, <i>diabolico,</i>	Devilishness, <i>diavoleria.</i>
Brutish, <i>brutale,</i>	Brutishness, <i>brutalità.</i>

Dei Pronomi Personali.

Questi Pronomi si chiamano *Personali*, perche sono impiegati in luogo del nome delle Persone, e delle cose. I, io, si chiama la prima persona, ch' è quello, o quella che parla. Thou, tu, la seconda, ch' è quello, o quella a chi si parla. He, egli, she, ella, la terza, ch' è quello, o quella della quale si parla. I plurali de' quali sono, we; noi, ye, o you, voi; they, eglino, o elleno.

Declinazione de' Pronomi Personali.

S.

P.

Nom. I, io.	Nom. we, noi.
Gen. of me, di me.	Gen. of us, di noi.
Dat. to me, a me, o mi.	Dat. to us, a noi, o ci.
Acc. me, me, mi.	Acc. us, noi, o ci.
Abl. from me, da me.	Abl. from us, da noi.

S.

P.

Nom. thou, tu.	Nom. ye, o you, voi.
Gen. of thee, di te.	Gen. of you, di voi.
Dat. to thee, a te, o ti.	Dat. to you, a voi, o vi.
Acc. thee, te, o ti.	Acc. you, voi, o vi.
Abl. from thee, da te.	Abl. from you, da voi.

S. Nom.

S.

Nom. he, egli.
 Gen. of him, di lui.
 Dat. to him, a lui, o li.
 Acc. him, lui, o lo.
 Abl. from him, da lui.

S.

Nom. she, ella.
 Gen. of her, di lei.
 Dat. to her, a lei, o le.
 Acc. her, lei, o la.
 Abl. from her, da lei.

P.

Nom. they, eglino.
 Gen. of them, di loro.
 Dat. to them, a loro, o li.
 Acc. them, loro, o li.
 Abl. from them, da loro.

P.

Nom. they, elleno.
 Gen. of them, di loro.
 Dat. to them, a loro, o le.
 Acc. them, loro, o le.
 Abl. from them, da loro.

Del uso de Pronomi Personali.

I nominativi de questi Pronomi precede il verbo in una frase affirmativa.

I speak, io parlo,	we speak, noi parliamo.
Thou lovest, tu ami,	ye love, voi amate.
He eateth, egli mangia,	they eat, eglino mangia- no.

In una frase interrogativa il nominativo seguita il verbo, quando il detto verbo è nudo, cioè senza esser accompagnato d'alcuno segno del Presente, del Preterito, o del futuro; ex.

Have you good Cloth?	avete del buon panno?
Can you do this?	Potete far questo?
Is he rich?	è ricco?
Are you a Man of your Word?	Sete uomo di parola!
Are they come?	Sono venuti?
Are they well?	Stanno bene?

Il Nominativo si mette fra il verbo ed il segno; ex.

Do you speak <i>Italian</i> ?	<i>Parlate Italiano ?</i>
What doth he do ?	<i>Che fa ?</i>
Do you sleep so late ?	<i>Dormite cosi tardi ?</i>
Shall I dine with you ?	<i>Resterò a pranzo con voi ?</i>
Why do you walk so fast ?	<i>Perche camminate cosi presto ?</i>
Do you fear him ?	<i>Avete paura di lui ?</i>

Il nome si mette anche come il Pronome ; ex.

Is your Master at home ?	<i>Il vostro padrone è in casa ?</i>
Is the Coach ready ?	<i>La Carozza è in ordine ?</i>
Is the Sermon done ?	<i>E' finita la predica ?</i>
Are my Books bound ?	<i>Sono legati i miei libri ?</i>
Are your Sisters married ?	<i>Son maritate le vostre sorelle ?</i>
Hath she brought my Linnen ?	<i>Ha ella portata le mie biancherie ?</i>
Doth your Father know me ?	<i>Vostro padre mi conosce ?</i>
When will the Horses be ready ?	<i>Quando saranno in ordine i cavalli ?</i>

In una frase negativa interrogativa, la negativa deve precedere il nome ; ex.

Is not the King gone a Hunting ?	<i>Non è il Rè andato alla caccia ?</i>
Are not the Horses ready yet ?	<i>Non sono ancora in ordine i cavalli ?</i>
Hath not my Father paid you ?	<i>Non v'ha pagato mio padre ?</i>

Ma la negativa si può mettere avanti o dopo il Pronome ; ex.

Is he not at home?	}	Non è egli in casa ?
Is not he at home ?		
Are they not here ?	}	Non sono loro qui ?
Are not they here ?		
Doth he not know me?	}	Non mi conosce egli ?
Doth not he know me?		
Do you not love me ?	}	Non m' amate voi ?
Do not you love me ?		
Will he not come with us ?	}	Non verrà egli con noi ?
Will not he come with us ?		

Il Dativo, e l' Accusativo de' Pronomi Personali seguitano il verbo ; ex.

I love you,	<i>Vi amo.</i>
You see me,	<i>Voi mi vedete.</i>
He sends you this,	<i>Egli vi manda questo.</i>
I gave him,	<i>Io li diedi.</i>
I told her,	<i>Io le dissi.</i>
He knows me,	<i>Egli mi conosce.</i>
I shall see her,	<i>Io la vedrò.</i>
I will thank them,	<i>Io li ringrazierò.</i>
He will come to see me,	<i>Egli mi verrà a vedere.</i>

Questi Pronomi si mettono fra'l verbo ed il segno nell' Imperativo ; ex.

Let him love,	<i>Che ami.</i>
Let her go,	<i>Che vada.</i>
Let us drink,	<i>Beviamo.</i>
Let us walk faster,	<i>Camminiamo più presto.</i>
Let them come,	<i>Che vengano.</i>
Let them come in,	<i>Cb' entrino.</i>

Questi
mettono
tengono a
e sono in
Questi
Assoluti.
I cong
Gli aff
declinano

Nom. m
Gen. of
la
Dat. to
mi
Acc. my
Abl. fro
da

Nom. th
Gen. of
tu
Dat. to
tu
Acc. th
Abl. fr
da

De' Pronomi Possessivi.

Questi Pronomi si chiamano Possessivi, perche si mettono avanti le cose che son possedute, o che appartengono alle Persone alle quali i Pronomi si riferiscono; e sono indeclinabili.

Questi Pronomi sono di due sorti, Congiuntivi, ed Assoluti.

I congiuntivi sono quelli che s' uniscono coi nomi.

Gli assoluti sono quelli che sono senza i nomi, e si declinano come i Pronomi Personali.

I Congiuntivi.

S.

Nom. my, il mio, la mia.

Gen. of my, del mio, della mia.

Dat. to my, al mio, alla mia.

Acc. my, il mio, la mia.

Abl. from my, dal mio, dalla mia.

P.

Nom. my, i miei, le mie.

Gen. of my, de' miei, delle mie.

Dat. to my, a' miei, alle mie.

Acc. my, i miei, le mie.

Abl. from my, da' miei, dalle mie.

S.

Nom. thy, il tuo, la tua.

Gen. of thy, del tuo, della tua.

Dat. to thy, al tuo, alla tua.

Acc. thy, il tuo, la tua.

Abl. from thy, dal tuo, dalla tua.

P.

Nom. thy, i tuoi, le tue.

Gen. of thy, de' tuoi, delle tue.

Dat. to thy, a' tuoi, alle tue.

Acc. thy, i tuoi, le tue.

Abl. from thy, da' tuoi, dalle tue.

S. Nom.

S.

Nom. his, *il suo, la sua.*Gen. of his, *del suo, della sua.*Dat. to his, *al suo, alla sua.*Acc. his, *il suo, la sua.*Abl. from his, *dal suo, dalla sua.*

S.

Nom. her, *il suo, la sua.*Gen. of her, *del suo, della sua.*Dat. to her, *al suo, alla sua.*Acc. her, *il suo, la sua.*Abl. from her, *dal suo, dalla sua.*

P.

Nom. his, *il suoi, le sue.*Gen. of his, *de' suoi, delle sue.*Dat. to his, *a suoi, alle sue.*Acc. his, *i suoi, le sue.*Abl. from his, *da' suoi, dalle sue.*

P.

Nom. her, *i suoi, le sue.*Gen. of her, *de' suoi, delle sue.*Dat. to her, *a' suoi, alle sue.*Acc. her, *i suoi, le sue.*Abl. from her, *da' suoi, dalle sue.*

Parlando della terza Persona bisogna dire his, per le cose che appartengono ad un uomo, e her, per quelle, che appartengono ad una donna; ex.

His Child, *il suo figliuolo.* His Children, *i suoi figliuoli.*

Her Child, *il suo figliuolo.* Her Children, *i suoi figliuoli.*

His House, *la sua casa.* His Houses, *le sue case.*

Her House, *la sua casa.* Her Houses, *le sue case.*

La lingua Inglese ha un altro pronome possessivo congiuntivo, che serve alle cose inanimate, ed è its, e si declina come gli altri; ex.

The Diamond is the most valuable of all other precious Stones; because its Hardness, and its Bright-

ness fur
tutte le
il suo s

Nom.
mia.
Gen. o
della
Dat. t
alla
Acc.
mia.
Abl. fro
dalla

Nom. t
tua.
Gen. o
della
Dat. t
alla
Acc. th
Abl. fro
dalla

Nom. l
Gen. of
sua.
Dat. to
sua.

ness surpasse all others, *il diamante è più stimato di tutte le altre pietre preziose, perchè la sua durezza. ed il suo splendore eccede tutte le altre.*

I Pronomi Assoluti.

S.

P.

Nom. mine, *il mio, la mia.* i miei, le mie.

Gen. of mine, *del mio, della mia.* de' miei, delle mie.

Dat. to mine, *al mio, alla mia.* a' miei, alle mie.

Acc. mine, *il mio, la mia.* i miei, le mie.

Abl. from mine, *dal mio, dalla mia.* da' miei, dalle mie.

S.

P.

Nom. thine, *il tuo, la tua.* i tuoi, le tue.

Gen. of thine, *del tuo, della tua.* de' tuoi, delle tue.

Dat. to thine, *al tuo, alla tua.* a' tuoi, alle tue.

Acc. thine, *il tuo, la tua.* i tuoi, le tue.

Abl. from thine, *dal tuo, dalla tua.* da' tuoi, dalle tue.

S.

P.

Nom. his, *il suo, la sua.* i suoi, le sue.

Gen. of his, *del suo, della sua.* de' suoi, delle sue.

Dat. to his, *al suo, alla sua.* a' suoi, alle sue.

Z

Acc.

338 GRAMMATICA INGLESE.

Acc. his, *il suo, la sua.* *i suoi, le sue.*
Abl. from his, *dal suo, da' suoi, dalle sue.*
dalla sua.

S.

P.

Nom. hers, *il suo, la sua.* *i suoi, le sue.*
Gen. of hers, *del suo, della sua.* *de' suoi, delle sue.*
Dat. to hers, *al suo, alla sua.* *a' suoi, alle sue.*
Acc. hers, *il suo, la sua.* *i suoi, le sue.*
Abl. from hers, *dal suo, dalla sua.* *da' suoi, dalle sue.*

S.

P.

Nom. ours, *il nostro, la nostra.* *i nostri, le nostre.*
Gen. of ours, *del nostro, della nostra.* *de' nostri, delle nostre.*
Dat. to ours, *al nostro, alla nostra.* *a' nostri, alle nostre.*
Acc. ours, *il nostro, la nostra.* *i nostri, le nostre.*
Abl. from ours, *dal nostro, dalla nostra.* *da' nostri, dalle nostre.*

S.

P.

Nom. yours, *il vostro, la vostra.* *i vostri, le vostre.*
Gen. of yours, *del vostro, della vostra.* *de' vostri, delle vostre.*
Dat. to yours, *al vostro, alla vostra.* *a' vostri, alle vostre.*
Acc. yours, *il vostro, la vostra.* *i vostri, le vostre.*

Abl.

Abl. fr
stro,

Nom. t
loro.
Gen. o
della
Dat. t
alla l
Acc. th
loro.
Abl. fro
ro, d

My Fat
My Bro
telli.
Thy H
vallo.
Thy Do
His Bed
His Coa
rozza

Your H
Your Fr
Your I
mine,
My Cou
My Frie
Our Serv
Their H
than o

Abl. from yours, dal vostro, dalla vostra. da' vostri, dalle vostre.

S.

P.

Nom. theirs, il loro, la loro. i loro, le loro.

Gen. of theirs, del loro, della loro. de' loro, delle loro.

Dat. to theirs, al loro, alla loro. a' loro, alle loro.

Acc. theirs, il loro, la loro. i loro, le loro.

Abl. from theirs, dal loro, dalla loro. da' loro, dalle loro.

Esempi.

My Father, *mio Padre.* My Mother, *mia Madre.*

My Brothers, *i miei Fratelli.* My Sisters, *le mie Sorelle.*

Thy Horse, *il tuo Cavallo.* Thy House, *la tua Casa.*

Thy Dogs, *i tuoi Cani.* Thy Cows, *le tue Vacche.*

His Bed, *il suo Letto.* His Beds, *i suoi Letti.*

His Coach, *la sua Carozza.* His Coaches, *le sue Carozze.*

Your House and mine, *la vostra casa, e la mia.*

Your Friends and mine, *i vostri amici, ed i miei.*

Your Daughters and mine, *le vostre Figliuole e le mie.*

My Country and yours, *il mio Paese, ed il vostro.*

My Friends and yours, *i miei Amici, ed i vostri.*

Our Servants and theirs, *i nostri Servi, ed i loro.*

Their Horses are finer than ours. *i loro Cavalli, sono più belli de' loro.*

Z z

Your

Your House is larger than mine.	<i>la vostra Casa e' più grande della mia.</i>
I have lost my Knife,	<i>Ho perduto il mio Coltello.</i>
Lend me yours,	<i>Imprestatem' il vostro.</i>
I have forgot my Cloak,	<i>Ho dimenticato il mio mantello.</i>
Will you have mine?	<i>Volete il mio?</i>
Make use of mine,	<i>Servitevi del mio.</i>

Dei Pronomi Dimostrativi.

Questi Pronomi si chiamano dimostrativi, perchè servono a dimostrare le persone, e le cose.

I Pronomi dimostrativi sono due; this, questo, that, quello: Si declinano in questa maniera; e sono d'ogni genere.

S.

*Nom. this, questo.
Gen. of this, di questo.
Dat. to this, a questo.
Acc. this, questo.
Abl. from this, da questo.*

S.

*Nom. that, quello.
Gen. of that, di quello.
Dat. to that, a quello.
Acc. that, quello.
Abl. from that, da quello.*

P.

*Nom. these, questi.
Gen. of these, di questi.
Dat. to these, a questi.
Acc. these, questi.
Abl. from these, da questi.*

P.

*Nom. those, quelli.
Gen. of those, di quelli.
Dat. to those, a quelli.
Acc. those, quelli.
Abl. from those, da quelli.*

Esempi.

This Man, <i>queste uomo.</i>	These Men, <i>questo uomo.</i>
This Woman, <i>questa donna.</i>	These Women, <i>queste donne.</i>

This B

This H

That M

That V

donna

That B

That H

That M

That V

some,

How d

House

That ve

I do not

Are you

that?

This Co

better

Avam

nomi Per

He that

rich,

She that

Blessed a

in the

They th

are to

Ci serv

tare la rep

This Kn

so well

I lost,

Th

This Book, <i>questo libro.</i>	These Books, <i>questi li- bri.</i>
This House, <i>questa casa.</i>	These Houses, <i>queste case.</i>
That Man, <i>quell' uomo.</i>	Those Men, <i>quelli uomi- ni.</i>
That Woman, <i>quella donna.</i>	Those Women, <i>quelle donne.</i>
That Book, <i>quel libro.</i>	These Books, <i>quelli libri.</i>
That House, <i>quella casa.</i>	Those Houses, <i>quelle case.</i>
That Man pleases me,	<i>Quell' uomo mi piace.</i>
That Woman is hand- some,	<i>Quella donna è bella.</i>
How do you like this House?	<i>Che vi pare di questa casa?</i>
That vexes me,	<i>Questo mi dispiace.</i>
I do not believe that,	<i>Non credo cio.</i>
Are you content with that?	<i>Sete contento di questo?</i>
This Colour pleases me better than that,	<i>Questo colore mi piace me- glio di quello.</i>
<i>Avanti il Relativo (that, che) ci serviamo de' Pro- nomi Personali, e non dei Dimostrativi.</i>	
He that is content, is rich,	<i>Colui ch'e' contento è ricco.</i>
She that you know,	<i>Quella che conoscete.</i>
Blessed are they that dye in the Lord,	<i>Felici quelli che morono nel Signore.</i>
They that have done it are to blame,	<i>Quelli che l'hanno fatto sono da biasimare.</i>

*Ci serviamo di questi Pronomi, this, that, per evi-
tare la repetizione della medesima parola; ex.*

This Knife doth not cut so well as that which I lost,	<i>Questo coltello non taglia così bene che l' altro ch'ho perduto.</i>
---	---

That Cloth is not so fine *Questo panno non è sì fino,*
as that you bought *che quello che compraste*
Yesterday, *ieri.*

Dei Pronomi Relativi.

I Pronomi relativi si riferiscono ai sostantivi, che li precedono ; e sono tre ; who, chi, che ; which, il quale, la quale, i quali, le quali ; that, che ; sono d'ogni numero, e d'ogni genere, e si declinano come gli altri Pronomi.

<i>Nom.</i> who, chi, che.	<i>Acc.</i> whom, chi, che.
<i>Gen.</i> of whom, di chi, di che.	<i>Abl.</i> from whom, da chi, da che.
<i>Dat.</i> to whom, a chi, a che.	

<i>Nom.</i> which, il quale.	<i>Nom.</i> that, che.
<i>Gen.</i> of which, del quale.	<i>Gen.</i> of that, di che.
<i>Dat.</i> to which, al quale.	<i>Dat.</i> to that, a che.
<i>Acc.</i> which, il quale.	<i>Acc.</i> that, che.
<i>Abl.</i> from which, dal quale.	<i>Abl.</i> from that, da che.

Il Pronome who, si riferisce solamente alle Persone.

Alexander, who found the Earth too little,	<i>Alessandro, che trovò la terra troppo angusta.</i>
Of whom do you speak?	<i>Di chi parlate ?</i>
Who told you that?	<i>Chi v'ha detto quello ?</i>
He is a Man of whom I have received many favours,	<i>Egli è un uomo da chi ho ricevuto molti favori.</i>
To whom I am much oblig'd,	<i>A chi sono molto obligato.</i>
She is the Woman whom I love,	<i>Ella è la donna ch'amo.</i>

Which

Which

The M

The v

dest

The B

They

whi

Mis

Gold

dot

wan

the

Def

whi

ump

cult

Fortun

rece

vour

Who,

Who is

Who is

Who is

Who a

Which

Which

ses d

From

this

Which

Lond

Which, e that, *si riferiscono alle Persone, ed alle cose indifferentemente.*

The Man that lives well, *L' uomo che ben vive.*
 The woman that is modest. *La donna ch'è modesta.*

The Birds that fly, *Gli uccelli che volano.*
 They are Predictions *Sono predizioni quelli, che*
 which warn us of our *ci avvertiscono delle no-*
 Misfortunes, *stre disgrazie.*

Gold is a Metal which *L'oro è un metallo, che ci*
 doth help us in all our *assiste ne' ogni nostri*
 wants, which makes *bisogni, che facilita*
 the Execution of our *l'effecuzione de' nostri di*
 Designs easie, and *segni, e ci fa superare*
 which makes us tri- *tutte le difficoltà.*
 umph over all Diffi-
 culties.

Fortune, of which I have *La fortuna da chi ho ri-*
 receiv'd so many Fa- *cevenuti tanti favori.*
 vours,

Who, e which *sono ancora Pronomi Interrogativi;*
ex.

Who is there? *Chi è li?*
 Who is that Man? *Che uomo è quello?*
 Who is that Woman? *Che donna è quella?*
 Who are those Men? *Che uomini son quelli?*
 Which will you have? *Quale volete?*
 Which of these two Hor- *Quale di questi due caval-*
 ses do you like best? *li amate meglio?*
 From whom have you *Da chi avete inteso queste*
 this News? *novelle?*
 Which is the Way to *Qual' è la strada di Lon-*
 London? *dra?*

Ci serviamo di what, per esprimere quel che in Italiano ; come anche per domandare d'una persona, o d'una cosa.

What you say is true,	<i>Quel che dite è vero.</i>
Give me what you will,	<i>Datemi quel che volete.</i>
What one wins the other spends.	<i>Quel che l'uno guadagna, l'altro spende.</i>
Say what you know,	<i>Dite quel che sapete.</i>
What Man is that?	<i>Che uomo è quello ?</i>
What Trade are you of ?	<i>Di che mestiere sete voi ?</i>
What say you ?	<i>Che dite voi ?</i>
What do you want ?	<i>Che volete ?</i>
What will you drink ?	<i>Che volete bere ?</i>

Queste parola (where) seguitata dalle seguenti Preposizioni about, at, in, unto, with, è usitato in luogo di which ; ex.

Whereabout,	<i>Verso qual luogo.</i>
Whereat,	<i>Alla qual cosa, o al che.</i>
Wherein,	<i>Nella qual cosa, o nel che.</i>
Whereof,	<i>Del che.</i>
Wherewith,	<i>Colla qual cosa, o con che.</i>
Whereunto,	<i>Alla qual cosa, o al che.</i>

Dei Verbi.

Il verbo è una parte d' orazione ; che significa fare patire, ed essere ; e si congiuga per tempi, modi, persone, e numeri.

Vi sono due sorti di verbi, Personale, ed Impersonale.

Il verbo personale si congiuga per tre persone, tanto nel singulare, che nel plurale ; ex. I love, io amo ; thou lovest, tu ami ; he loveth o loves, egli ama ;

we

we lov
love, e
Il v
na sing
vica.

Vi j
verbo
scrivo ;
fica pa
am lov
nifica e
io sto.

Un
gere qu
eat for
thing,

Non
Italian
i parti
be, fa
mare,
to, è u

I v
zione.

Il p
affirma
come,
parlo ;

Il s
niera
that,
pray
vove.

Il
manie

we love, noi amiamo; ye love, voi amate; they love, eglino amano.

Il verbo impersonale si congiuga per la terza persona singulare; come, it rains, piove; it snows, nevica.

Vi sono tre sorti di verbi personali in Inglese: Un verbo attivo, che significa fare; come, I write, io scrivo; I read, io leggo: Un verbo passivo che significa patire; come, I am beaten, io sono battuto; I am loved, io sono amato: Un verbo neutro, che significa essere, o esistere; come, I am, io sono; I stand, io sto.

Un verbo attivo si conosce, quando vi si può aggiungere questa parola something, qualche cosa; come, to eat something, mangiar qualche cosa; to drink something, bere qualche cosa.

Non abbiamo nella lingua Inglese, come ne meno nell'Italiana, verbi passivi, che siano tali in loro stessi, ma i participi de verbi attivi declinati col verbo essere, to be, fa diventare il verbo passivo; come, to love, amare, è un verbo attivo; to be beloved, essere amato, è un verbo passivo.

I verbi hanno quattro modi, o maniere di significazione.

Il primo modo, o maniera di mostrare, dichiarare, affermare, negare, e domandare, si chiama Indicativo; come, I speak, io parlo; I do not speak, io non parlo; do you speak? parlate voi?

Il secondo modo si chiama Imperativo, ch'è la maniera di comandare, pregare, ed esortare; come, do that, fate ciò; let him do that, che faccia questo; pray do me that Favour, vi prego fatemi questo favore.

Il terzo modo è il Potenziale, o ottativo, ch'è la maniera di desiderare di poter fare; come, God grant that

that I may 'do that, Dio voglia, ch' io lo passa fare.

Il quarto, ed ultimo modo si chiama infinito, ch' è la maniera d'esprimere un verbo semplicemente, senza definire il tempo, la persona, ne il numero; come, to speak, parlare; to do, fare, to be, essere.

Ogni verbo comprendendo in se un' azione fatta, o ricevuta, o una esistenza, bisogna necessariamente, che questa azione accada, o si faccia in un certo tempo, e questo tempo bisogna che sia presente, o passato, o futuro; e perciò diciamo, ch' un verbo è presente, o preterito, o futuro. Questi sono i termini de grammatici per esprimere i diversi tempi.

Il tempo presente è quello nel quale facciamo, o soffriamo qualche cosa; come, I love, io amo; I am loved, io sono amato.

Il tempo passato, o preterito si divide in tempo imperfetto, perfetto, e piu che perfetto.

Il primo si chiama imperfetto, perchè mostra, ch' un' azione non era finita nel tempo della quale si fa menzione; come, I was writing a Letter when he came, scrivevo una lettera quando lui venne; la lettera non era finita.

Il secondo si chiama preterito perfetto, perchè significa, ch' un' cosa è affatto finita, ed il tempo è ancora specificato; come, Yesterday I saw your Brother, ieri io viddi vostro fratello; I spoke to him this Morning, li ho parlato stamattina.

Il terzo si chiama preterito piu che perfetto, perchè dinota che l' azione era passata, quando si fa menzione d'un tempo, o d'un' altra azione; come, I had received your Letter before ye came, avevo ricevuto la vostra lettera, prima che voi veniste; I had dined before you sent me the Wine, avevo pransato, prima che voi mi mandaste il vino.

Ogni

Ogni
rale.

Ogni
o she,

We
leno, p

La
come, l

La
parla;

speak,
La

parla;
lino pa

Olti
lato, r

ari; c
za rag

grand
verbo,

verbo
Pr

sarà j
glese n

altro
alcune

per m
colare

Pr
tri te

L'
come,

senti
Il

tolta
la se

Ogni tempo ha due numeri, il singulare, ed il plurale.

Ogni tempo ha tre persone, I, io; thou, tu; he, o she, egli, o ella, per il singulare.

We, noi; ye o you, voi; they, eglino, o el-
leno, per il plurale.

La prima persona è quella, o quelle, che parlano; come, I speak, io parlo; we speak, noi parliamo.

La seconda persona è quella, o quelle alle quali si parla; come, thou speakest, tu parli; ye o you speak, voi parlate.

La terza persona è quella o quelle, delle quali si parla; come, he speaks, egli parla; they speak, eglino parlano.

Oltre le diverse sorti di verbi de' quali abbiamo parlato, vi sono due altri verbi, che sono chiamati ausiliari; cioè to have, avere; e to be, essere. Non senza ragione vengono chiamati ausiliari, perche sono di grand ajuto nella coniugazione degli altri verbi. Il verbo, to have, avere, serve ai verbi attivi, ed il verbo essere, to be, ai verbi passivi.

Prima di principiare la coniugazione de' verbi, non sarà fuor di proposito d'avvertire, che la lingua Inglese non ha ch' una sola coniugazione, la quale non è altro ch'una repetizione dell' Infinito, aggiungendovi alcune particole, che fanno la differenza de' tempi. Ma per maggior intelligenza parlerò d'ogni tempo in particolare, e del segno che l'accompagna.

Principierò dunque dall' Infinito, perche tutti gli altri tempi si formano da questo.

L' infinito si conosce dalla particola to, che lo precede; come, to love, amare; to believe, credere; to hear, sentire.

Il presente dell' indicativo non è altro che l' infinito tolta la particola to; con questa sola differenza, ch' alla seconda persona s'aggiunge st; ed alla terza th,

o s;

o s; e così diciamo, I love, io amo; thou lovest, tu ami; he loveth or loves, egli ama; we love, noi amiamo; ye love, voi amate; they love, eglino amano. I believe, io credo; thou believest, tu credi; he believeth, or believes, egli crede; we believe, noi crediamo, &c. I hear, io sento; thou hearest, tu senti; he heareth, o hears, egli sente; we hear, noi sentiamo, &c.

A questo tempo s'aggiunge qualche volta la particola do; ma allora la significazione del verbo riceve maggior forza, ed ha più energia; come, I know it, lo so; I do know it, lo so in vero; e si congiuga in questo modo; I do know, io so; thou dost know, tu sai; he does know, egli sa; we do know, noi sappiamo; ye do know, voi sapete; they do know, eglino fanno.

L'imperfetto è formato da questa particola did, e l'infinito del verbo: Non varia in nessuna persona; solamente la particola did, riceve st, alla seconda persona singolare; come, I did love, io amavo; thou didst love, tu amavi; he did love, egli amava; we did love, noi amavamo, &c.

Il preterito definito de' verbi regolari si forma dall'infinito aggiungendovi un d; ma alla seconda persona singolare vi si aggiunge di più st; come, I loved, io amai; thou lovedst, tu amasti; he loved, egli amò; we loved, noi amammo; ye loved, voi amaste; they loved, eglino amarono.

Bisogna però avvertire, che quando l'infinito de' verbi regolari termina con una consonante, allora vi s'aggiunge ed; o solamente un d; ed in luogo dell'e, vi si mette un'apostrofo; così; I hear, io sento; I heard o hear'd, io sentii; thou hearest, tu sentisti; he heard o hear'd, egli sentì, &c.

Gli altri Preteriti si formano dal participio del verbo, governato dai verbi ausiliari to have, avere; o to be, essere; come in Italiano.

Il fu-

Il fu-
vi una
non van
la, la
re; ex
o wilt
merà;
will lo
ameran

E' p
ticole d
l'una p
lingua
lament
io ande
tre per
de per
alla pe
thou f
io; he
io; e
in luog

Al
del fut
volont
will g
dare f

L'
alcuna
le; e pa
rale r
let; c
altro
love,
let th

*Il futuro si forma similmente dall' infinito aggiunta-
vi una di queste particole shall, o will; ma l'infinito
non varia in nissuna delle persone, ma bensì la partico-
la, la quale riceve un t, alla seconda persona singola-
re; ex. I shall o will love, io amerò; thou shalt
o wilt love, tu amerai; he shall o will love, egli a-
merà; we shall o will love, noi ameremo, ye shall o
will love, voi amerete; they shall o will love, egliino
ameranno.*

*E' però da notare, che sebbene shall, e will sono par-
ticole del futuro, non devono però usarsi indifferentemente
l'una per l'altra, come fanno i poco intelligenti della
lingua Inglese; perche shall, nelle prime persone è so-
lamente un puro segno del futuro; come, I shall go,
io anderò; we shall go, noi anderemo; ma nell' al-
tre persone, benchè sia anche segno del futuro, compren-
de però un certo comando o forza, che si volesse fare
alla persona alla quale, o della qualle si parla; come,
thou shalt go, tu anderai; cioè, ti farò ben andar
io; he shall go, egli anderà, cioè lo farò ben andar
io; e così della seconda, e terza persona plurale; ma
in luogo di shall bisogna servirsi di will.*

*Al contrario will nelle prime persone, oltre il segno
del futuro significa una certa risoluzione, o determinata
volontà di fare qualche cosa; come, to morrow I
will go out of Town, domani anderò, e voglio an-
dare fuor di città.*

*L' Imperativo parte vien formato dall' infinito, senza
alcuna particola, cioè la seconda persona singolare e plura-
le; e parte, cioè la terza singolare, e la prima, e terza plu-
rale vien formato dall' infinito, e da questa particola
let; che si mette sempre avanti il pronome personale, o
altro nominativo; ex. love thou, ama tu; let him
love, che ami; let us love, amiamo; love ye, amate;
let them love, che amino.*

Il presente dell' ottativo si forma similmente dall' Infinito, e questa particola may, senza variare la terminazione dell' infinito; aggiungendo solamente st, alla particola nella seconda persona singolare; ex. I may love, io ami; thou mayest love, tu ami; he may love, egli ami; we may love, noi amiamo; ye may love, voi amiate; they may love, eglino amino.

Il primo imperfetto dell' ottativo si forma dall' infinito, e queste particole should, o would, aggiungendo est, alle particole nella seconda persona singolare; ex. I should o would love, io amerei; thou shouldest o wouldest love, tu ameresti; he should o would love, egli amerebbe, we should o would love, noi ameremmo; &c.

Il secondo Imperfetto si forma anche dall' infinito, e dalla particola might, aggiungendovi est, nella seconda persona singolare; ex. I might love, io amassi; thou mightest love, tu amassi; he might love, egli amasse, &c.

Havendo parlato a bastanza della formazione de' tempi, procederò adesso alla coniugazione de' verbi ausiliari, come i più necessarj a sapere, e serviranno di regola a tutti gli altri.

La Coniugazione de' verbi Ausiliari.

L' Indicativo.

Presente.

S.

P.

I have *Io ho.*We have, *noi abbiamo.*Thou hast, *tu hai.*Ye have, *voi avete.*He hath or has, *egli ha.*They have, *eglino hanno.*

S. I

L' Imperfetto.

S.

I had, *io avevo.*
 Thou hadst, *tu avevi.*
 He had, *egli aveva.*

P.

We had, *noi avevamo.*
 Ye had, *voi avevate.*
 They had, *eglino avevano.*

Il Perfetto.

S.

I had, *io ebbi.*
 Thou hadst, *tu avesti.*
 He had, *egli ebbe.*

P.

We had, *noi avemmo.*
 Ye had, *voi aveste.*
 They had, *eglino ebbero.*

1. Preterito piu che Perfetto.

S.

I have had,
 Thou hast had,
 He has o hath had,

io ho avuto.
tu hai avuto.
egli ha avuto.

P.

We have had,
 Ye have had,
 They have had,

noi abbiamo avuto.
voi avete avuto.
eglino hanno avuto.

2. Preterito piu che Perfetto.

S.

I had had,
 Thou hadst had,
 He had had,

Io avevo avuto.
tu avevi avuto.
egli aveva avuto.

P.

We had had,
 Ye had had,
 They had had,

noi avevamo avuto.
voi avevate avuto.
eglino avevano avuto.

H

Il futuro.

S.

I shall have, *io averò.*
 Thou shalt have, *tu avrai.*

He shall have, *egli averà.*

P.

We shall have, *noi avremo.*

Ye shall have, *voi averete.*

They shall have, *eglino averanno.*

L' Imperativo.

S.

Have thou, *abbi tu.*

Let him have, *abbia egli.*

P.

Let us have, *abbiamo noi.*

Have ye, *abbiate voi.*

Let them have, *abbiano, eglino.*

L' Ottativo Presente.

S.

I may have,
 Thou mayest have,
 He may have,

io abbia.

tu abbia.

egli abbia.

P.

We may have,
 Ye may have,
 They may have,

noi abbiamo.

voi abbiate.

eglino abbiano.

1. Imperfetto.

S.

I should have,
 Thou shouldest have,
 He should have,

io avrei.

tu avresti.

egli averebbe,

P.

We should have,
 Ye should have,
 They should have,

noi averemmo.

voi avereste:

eglino averebbero.

2. Imp.

I mig
 Thou
 He m

We m
 Ye m
 They

I shall
 Thou
 He sha

We sh
 Ye sha
 They

To ha

To ha
 vuto

I am,
 Thou
 He is,

2. Imperfetto.

S.

S.

I might have,
Thou mightst have,
He might have,

Io avessi.
tu avessi.
egli avesse.

P.

P.

We might have,
Ye might have,
They might have,

noi avessimo.
voi aveste.
eglino avessero.

Il Futuro.

S.

S.

I shall have had,
Thou shalt have had,
He shall have had,

Io averò avuto.
tu averai avuto.
egli averà avuto.

P.

P.

We shall have had,
Ye shall have had,
They shall have had,

noi averemo avuto.
voi averete avuto.
eglino averanno avuto.

L' Infinito.

Presente.

Il Participio.

To have, *avere.*had, *avuto.*

Il Preterito.

Gerundio.

To have had, *avere a-* having, *avendo.*
vuto.

Congiugazione del verbo

To be, *essere.*

Indicativo.

Presente.

S.

P.

I am, *io sono.*
Thou art, *tu sei.*
He is, *egli è.*

We are, *noi siamo.*
Ye are, *voi siete.*
They are, *eglino sono.*

A a

L' Im-

L' Imperfetto.

S.	S.
I was,	<i>Io ero.</i>
Thou wast,	<i>tu eri.</i>
He was,	<i>egli era.</i>
P.	P.
We were,	<i>Noi eramo.</i>
Ye were,	<i>voi erate.</i>
They were,	<i>eglino erano.</i>

Il Preterito Perfetto.

S.	P.
I was, <i>io fui.</i>	We were, <i>noi fummo.</i>
Thou wast, <i>tu fosti.</i>	Ye were, <i>voi foste.</i>
He was, <i>egli fu.</i>	They were, <i>eglino furono.</i>

1. Preterito piu che Perfetto.

S.	S.
I have been,	<i>Io sono stato.</i>
Thou hast been,	<i>tu sei stato.</i>
He hath or has been,	<i>egli è stato.</i>
P.	P.
We have been,	<i>Noi siamo stati.</i>
Ye have been,	<i>voi sete stati.</i>
They have been,	<i>eglino sono stati.</i>

2. Preterito piu che Perfetto.

S.	S.
I had been,	<i>Io ero stato.</i>
Thou hadst been,	<i>tu eri stato.</i>
He had been,	<i>egli era stato.</i>
P.	P.
We had been,	<i>Noi eramo stati.</i>
Ye had been,	<i>voi erate stati.</i>
They had been,	<i>eglino erano stati.</i>

I shall

Il futuro.

S.	S.
I shall be,	<i>Io farò.</i>
Thou shalt be,	<i>tu farai.</i>
He shall be,	<i>egli sarà.</i>
P.	P.
We shall be,	<i>Noi faremo.</i>
Ye shall be,	<i>voi sarete.</i>
They shall be,	<i>eglino saranno.</i>

L' Imperativo.

S.	S.
Be thou,	<i>sii tu.</i>
Let him be,	<i>sia egli.</i>
P.	P.
Let us be,	<i>siamo noi.</i>
Be ye,	<i>siate voi.</i>
Let them be,	<i>siano eglino.</i>

Ottativo.

S.	Presente.	S.
I may be,	<i>Io sia.</i>	
Thou mayst be,	<i>tu sia, o sii.</i>	
He may be,	<i>egli sia.</i>	
P.		P.
We may be,	<i>Noi siamo.</i>	
Ye may be,	<i>voi siate.</i>	
They may be,	<i>eglino siano, o sieno.</i>	

1. Imperfetto.

S.	S.
I should be,	<i>Io farei.</i>
Thou shouldst be,	<i>tu faresti.</i>
He should be,	<i>egli farebbe.</i>
P.	P.
We should be,	<i>Noi faremmo.</i>
Ye should be,	<i>ve fareste.</i>
They should be,	<i>eglino farebbero.</i>

2. Imperfetto.

S.	S.
I might be,	<i>io fossi.</i>
Thou mightst be,	<i>tu fossi.</i>
He might be,	<i>egli fosse.</i>
P.	P.
We might be,	<i>Noi fossimo.</i>
Ye might be,	<i>voi foste.</i>
They might be,	<i>eglino fossero.</i>

1. Preterito piu che Perfetto.

S.	S.
I may have been,	<i>Io sia stato.</i>
Thou mayst have been,	<i>tu sia stato.</i>
He may have been,	<i>egli sia stato.</i>
P.	P.
We may have been,	<i>Noi siamo stati.</i>
Ye may have been,	<i>voi siate stati.</i>
They may have been,	<i>egli siano stati.</i>
S.	S.
I should have been,	<i>Io sarei stato.</i>
Thou shouldst have been,	<i>tu saresti stato.</i>
He should have been,	<i>egli sarebbe stato.</i>
P.	P.
We should have been,	<i>Noi saremmo stati.</i>
Ye should have been,	<i>voi sareste stati.</i>
They should have been,	<i>eglino sarebbero stati.</i>

2. Imperfetto.

S.	S.
I might have been,	<i>Io fossi stato.</i>
Thou mightst have been,	<i>tu fossi stato.</i>
He might have been,	<i>egli fosse stato.</i>
P.	P.
We might have been,	<i>Noi fossimo stati.</i>
Ye might have been,	<i>voi foste stati.</i>
They might have been,	<i>eglino fossero stati.</i>

Il fu-

Il Futuro.

S.

I shall have been,
Thou shalt have been,
He shall have been,

P.

We shall have been,
Ye shall have been,
They shall have been,

S.

Io sarò stato.
tu sarai stato.
egli sarà stato.

P.

Noi saremo stati.
voi sarete stati.
eglino saranno stati.

L' Infinito Presente.

To be, *essere.*

Il Preterito.

To have been, *essere*
stato.

Participio.

Been, *stato.*

Gerundio.

Being, *essendo.*
Having been, *essendo*
stato.

Congiugatione d' un verbo regolare.

Indicativo Presente.

S.

I love, *Io amo.*
Thou lovest, *tu ami.*
He loveth, or loves, *e-*
gli ama.

P.

We love, *noi amiamo.*
Ye love, *voi amate.*
They love, *eglino ama-*
no.

Imperfetto.

S.

I did love, *Io amavo.*
Thou didst love, *tu a-*
mavi.
He did love, *egli amava.*

P.

We did love, *noi ama-*
vamo.
Ye did love, *voi ama-*
vate.
They did love, *eglino*
amavano.

Perfetto.

S.	P.
I loved, <i>Io amai.</i>	We loved, <i>noi amammo.</i>
Thou lovedst, <i>tu amasti.</i>	Ye loved, <i>voi amaste.</i>
He loved, <i>egli amò.</i>	They loved, <i>eglino amarono.</i>

1. Pret. piu che Perf.

S.	P.
I have loved, <i>Io ho amato.</i>	We have loved, <i>noi abbiamo amato.</i>
Thou hast loved, <i>tu hai amato.</i>	Ye have loved, <i>voi avete amato.</i>
He hath or has loved, <i>egli ha amato.</i>	They have loved, <i>eglino hanno amato.</i>

2. Pret. piu che Perf.

S.	S.
I had loved,	<i>Io avevo amato.</i>
Thou hadst loved,	<i>tu avevi amato.</i>
He had loved,	<i>egli aveva amato.</i>
P.	P.
We had loved,	<i>noi avevamo amato.</i>
Ye had loved,	<i>voi avevate amato.</i>
They had loved,	<i>eglino avevano amato.</i>

Futuro.

S.	S.
I shall love,	<i>Io amerò.</i>
Thou shalt love,	<i>tu amerai.</i>
He shall love,	<i>egli amerà.</i>
P.	P.
We shall love,	<i>noi ameremo.</i>
Ye shall love,	<i>voi amerete.</i>
They shall love,	<i>eglino ameranno.</i>

Im-

Imperativo.

S.		S.
Love thou,	<i>ama tu.</i>	
Let him love,	<i>ami egli.</i>	
P.		P.
Let us love,	<i>amiamo noi.</i>	
Love ye,	<i>amate voi.</i>	
Let them love,	<i>amino eglino.</i>	

Ottativo Pref.

S.		S.
I may love,	<i>Io ami.</i>	
Thou mayst love,	<i>tu ami.</i>	
He may love,	<i>egli ami.</i>	
P.		P.
We may love,	<i>noi amiamo.</i>	
Ye may love,	<i>voi amiate.</i>	
They may love.	<i>eglino amino.</i>	

1. Imperf.

S.		S.
I should love,	<i>Io amerei.</i>	
Thou shouldst love,	<i>tu amaresti.</i>	
He should love,	<i>egli amerebbe.</i>	
P.		P.
We should love,	<i>noi ameremmo.</i>	
Ye should love,	<i>voi amereste.</i>	
They should love,	<i>eglino amerebbero.</i>	

2. Imperf.

S.		S.
I might love,	<i>Io amassi.</i>	
Thou mightst love,	<i>tu amassi.</i>	
He might love,	<i>egli amasse.</i>	

P.	P.
We might love,	<i>noi amassimo.</i>
Ye might love,	<i>voi amaste.</i>
They might love,	<i>eglino amassero.</i>

Pret. piu che Perf.

S.	S.
I may have loved,	<i>Io abbia amato.</i>
Thou mayst have loved,	<i>tu abbia amato.</i>
He may have loved,	<i>egli abbia amato.</i>

P.	P.
We may have loved,	<i>noi abbiamo amato.</i>
Ye may have loved,	<i>voi abbiate amato.</i>
They may have loved,	<i>eglino abbiano amato.</i>

1. Imperf.

S.	S.
I should have loved,	<i>Io averei amato.</i>
Thou shouldst have loved,	<i>tu averesti amato.</i>
He should have loved,	<i>egli avarebbe amato.</i>

P.	P.
We should have loved,	<i>noi averemmo amato.</i>
Ye should have loved,	<i>voi avereste amato.</i>
They should have loved,	<i>eglino averebbero amato.</i>

2. Imperf.

S.	S.
I might have loved,	<i>Io avessi amato.</i>
Thou mightst have loved,	<i>tu avessi amato.</i>
He might have loved,	<i>egli avesse amato.</i>

P.	P.
We might have loved,	<i>noi avessimo amato.</i>
Ye might have loved,	<i>voi aveste amato.</i>
They might have loved,	<i>eglino avessero amato.</i>

Futuro.

Futuro.

S.

I shall have loved,
 Thou shalt have loved,
 He shall have loved,

P.

We shall have loved,
 Ye shall have loved,
 They shall have loved,

S.

*Io averò amato.
 tu averai amato.
 egli averà amato.*

P.

*noi averemo amato.
 voi averete amato.
 eglino averanno amato.*

Infinito Pref.

To love, *amare.*

Pret.

To have loved, *avere amato.*

Participio.

Loved, *amato.*

Gerundio.

Loving, *amando.*

Il Verbo Passivo come in Italiano, non è altro, che il Verbo Sostantivo to be, essere, ed il participio del Verbo Attivo. ex.

I am loved, *io sono amato.*

We are loved, *noi siamo amati.*

I was loved, *io ero amato.*

We were loved, *noi eramo amati.*

I shall be loved, *io sarò amato.*

We shall be loved, *noi saremo amati.*

De' Verbi Irregolari.

L' Irregolarità de' verbi Ingleſi non conſiſte che nel Participio paſſivo, e da queſto ſi forma il Preterito definito de detti verbi, aggiungendo ſolamente alla ſeconda Perſona ſingulare *it*, per quelli che non terminano in *t*; perche a queſti vi ſ' aggiunge ſolamente un *s*. I Participi de' verbi di moto ſono conjugati col verbo eſſere, *to be*; come, *I am gone*, ſono andato; *I am come*, ſono venuto; tutti gli altri, ſono congiugati col verbo *to have*, avere; come, *I have loved*, ho amato, *I have ſlept*, ho dormito.

Liſta de' verbi Irregolari.

INF.

- To abide*, dimorare. *I abode*, dimorai. *I have abode*, ho dimorato.
to ask, domandare. *I asked*, io domandai. *I have asked*, ho domandato.
to awake, ſvegliare. *I awaked*, io ſvegliai. *I have awaked*, ho ſvegliato.
to be, eſſere. *I was*, io fui. *I have been*, ſono ſtato.
to buy, comprare. *I bought*, io comprai. *I have bought*, ho comprato.
to begin, cominciare. *I began*, io cominciai. *I have begun*, ho cominciato.
to bear, portare. *I bore*, io portai. *I have born*, ho portato.
to be born, naſcere. *I was born*, io nacqui. *I have been born*, ſono nato.
to behold, mirare. *I beheld*, io mirai. *I have beheld*, ho mirato.
to bring, portare. *I brought*, io portai. *I have brought*, ho portato.
to bleed, ſangrare. *I bled*, io ſangrai. *I have bled*, ho ſangrato.

To

To breed, *generare*. I bred, *io generai*. I have bred, *ho generato*.

to bend, *piegare*. I bent, *io piegai*. I have bent, *ho piegato*.

to bite, *mordere*. I bit, *io morfi*. I have bitten, *ho morso*.

to bid, *comandare*. I bad, *io comandai*. I have bidden, *ho comandato*.

to break, *rompere*. I broke, *io rompei*. I have broken, *ho rotto*.

to beseech, *supplicare*. I besought, *io supplicai*. I have besought, *ho supplicato*.

to blow, *soffiare*. I blew, *io soffiai*. I have blown, *ho soffiato*.

to bind, *legare*. I bound, *io legai*. I have bound, *ho legato*.

to bereave, *spogliare*. I bereft, *io spogliai*. I have bereft, *ho spogliato*.

to beget, *generare*. I begot, *io generai*. I have begotten, *ho generato*.

to become, *diventare*. I became, *io diventai*. I have become, *sono diventato*.

to burn, *bruciare*. I burnt, *io bruciai*. I have burnt, *ho bruciato*.

to come, *venire*. I came, *io venni*. I am come, *sono venuto*.

to cut, *tagliare*. I cut, *io tagliai*. I have cut, *ho tagliato*.

to chuse, *scegliere*. I chose, *io scelsi*. I have chosen, *ho scelto*.

to chide, *sgridare*. I chid, *io sgridai*. I have chidden, *ho sgridato*.

to cleave, *fendere*. I clave, *io fendei*. I have cloven or cleft, *ho fenduto*.

to catch, *prendere*. I catched, *io presi*. I have caught, *ho preso*.

To creep,

- To creep, *rampicare*. I crept, *io rampicai*. I have crept, *ho rampicato*.
- to curse, *maladire*. I cursed, *io maledissi*. I have cursed, *ho maledetto*.
- to cling, *attaccarsi*. I clung, *io m'attaccai*. I have clung, *mi sono attaccato*.
- to crack, *rompere*. I craked, *io rompei*. I have cracked, *ho rotto*.
- to crow, *cantare*. I crew, *io cantai*. I have crowed, *ho cantato. come fa un gallo*.
- to do, *fare*. I did, *io feci*. I have done, *ho fatto*.
- to draw, *tirare*. I drew, *io tirai*. I have drawn, *ho tirato*.
- to drink, *bere*. I drank, *io bevei*. I have drunk, *ho levuto*.
- to drive, *scacciare*. I drove, *io scacciai*. I have driven, *ho scacciato*.
- to 'dare, *ardire*. I durst, *io ardi*. I have dared, *ho ardito*.
- to deal, *dividere*. I dealt, *io divisi*. I have dealt, *ho diviso*.
- to dwell, *abitare*. I dwelt, *io abitai*. I have dwelt, *ho abitato*.
- to dip, *immergere*. I dipt, *io immerfi*. I have dipt, *ho immerfo*.
- to eat, *mangiare*. I eat, o ate, *io mangiai*. I have eaten, *ho mangiato*.
- to feed, *pascere*. I fed, *io pascei*. I have fed, *ho pasciuto*.
- to fling, *gittare*. I flung, *io gittai*. I have flung, *ho gittato*.
- to fly, *volare*. I flew, *io volai*. I have flown, *ho volato*.
- to forget, *dimenticare*. I forgot, *io dimenticai*. I have forgotten, *ho dimenticato*.

To fetch,

To fetch, *andare*. I fetcht, *io andai* I have fetcht,
a cercare. *a cercare.* *io sono andato*
a cercare.

to feel, *sentire*. I felt, *io sentii*. I have felt, *ho*
sentito.

to flee, *fuggire*. I fled, *io fuggii*. I have flown,
sono fuggito.

to fall, *cascare*. I fell, *io cascai*. I have tallen, *sono*
cascato.

to fight, *combattere*. I fought, *io combattei*. I
have fought, *ho combattuto.*

to find, *trovare*. I found, *io trovai*. I have found,
ho trovato.

to fix, *appicare*. I fixt, *io appiccai*. I have fixt,
ho appiccato.

to go, *andare*. I went, *io andai*. I am gone, *so-*
no andato.

to get, *guadagnare*. I got, *io guadagnai*. I have
gotten, *ho guadagnato.*

to grind, *macinare*. I ground, *io macinai*. I have
ground, *ho macinato.*

to give, *dare*. I gave, *io diedi*. I have given, *ho*
dato.

to gird, *cignere*. I girded, *io cinsi*. I have girt,
ho cinto.

to grow, *crescere*. I grew, *io crebbi*. I am grown,
sono cresciuto.

to geld, *castrare*. I gelt, *io castrai*. I have gelt,
ho castrato.

to gild, *indorare*. I gilt, *io indorai*. I have gilt,
ho indorato.

to hang, *impiccare*. I hung, *io impiccai*. I have
hung, *ho impiccato.*

to hide, *nascondere*. I hid, *io nascosi*. I have hid-
den, *ho nascosto.*

To help,

- To help, *ajutare*. I helped, *io aiutai*. I have helped, *ho aiutato*.
- to have, *avere*. I had, *io ebbi*. I have had, *ho avuto*.
- to hit, *battere*. I hit, *io battei*. I have hit, *ho battuto*.
- to hold, *tenere*. I held, *io tenni*. I have held, *ho tenuto*.
- to keep, *mantenere*. I kept, *io mantenni*. I have kept, *ho mantenuto*.
- to know, *conoscere*. I knew, *io conobbi*. I have known, *ho conosciuto*.
- to kiss, *baciare*. I kissed, *io baciai*. I have kissed, *ho baciato*.
- to leave, *lasciare*. I left, *io lasciai*. I have left, *ho lasciato*.
- to laugh, *ridere*. I laughed, *io risi*. I have laughed, *ho riso*.
- to lose, *perdere*. I lost, *io persi*. I have lost, *ho perso*.
- to learn, *imparare*. I learnt, *io imparai*. I have learned, *ho imparato*.
- to lead, *condurre*. I led, *io condussi*. I have led, *ho condotto*.
- to lie, *giacere*. I lay, *io giacqui*. I have lain, *ho giaciuto*.
- to lend, *imprestare*. I lent, *io prestai*. I have lent, *ho prestato*.
- to make, *fare*. I made, *io feci*. I have made, *ho fatto*.
- to meet, *incontrare*. I met, *io incontrai*. I have met, *ho incontrato*.
- to mix, *mescolare*. I mixed, *io mescolai*. I have mixed, *ho mescolato*.
- to mow, *mietere*. I mowed, *io mietei*. I have mowed, *ho mietuto*.

To owe,

To owe, *dovere*. I owed, *io dovei*. I have owed, *ho dovuto*.

to put, *mettere*. I put, *io misi*. I have put, *ho messo*.

to pitch, *impeciare*. I pitched, *io impeciai*. I have pitched, *ho impeciato*.

to quake, *tremare*. I quaked, *io tremai*. I have quaked, *ho tremato*.

to read, *leggere*. I read, *io lessi*. I have read, *ho letto*.

to ring, *suonare*. I rung, *io suonai*. I have rung, *ho sonato*.

to run, *correre*. I ran, *io corsi*. I have run, *ho corso*.

to rise, *levarsi*. I rose, *io mi levai*. I am risen, *mi sono levato*.

to rend, *stracciare*. I rent, *io stracciai*. I have rent, *ho stracciato*.

to ride, *cavalcare*. I rode, *io cavalcai*. I have ridden, *ho cavalcato*.

to stink, *puzzare*. I stunk, *io puzzai*. I have stunk, *ho puzzato*.

to speak, *parlare*. I spoke, *io parlai*. I have spoken, *ho parlato*.

to sell, *vendere*. I sold, *io vendei*. I have sold, *ho venduto*.

to sleep, *dormire*. I slept, *io dormii*. I have slept, *ho dormito*.

to sing, *cantare*. I sang, *io cantai*. I have sung, *ho cantato*.

to send, *mandare*. I sent, *io mandai*. I have sent, *ho mandato*.

to stand, *stare*. I stood, *io stetti*. I have stood, *sono stato*.

to spread, *spandere*. I spread, *io spandei*. I have spread, *ho spanduto*.

to strike, *percuotere*. I struck, *io percossi*. I have struck, *ho percosso*.

To snatch,

- to snatch, *strappare*. I snatcht, *io strappai*. I have snatched, *ho strappato*.
- to smell, *odorare*. I smelt, *io odorai*. I have smelt, *ho odorato*.
- to shoot, *tirare*. I shot, *io tirai*. I have shot, *ho tirato*.
- to sow, *cucire*. I sowed, *io cucij*. I have sowed, *ho cucito*.
- to spend, *spendere*. I spend, *io spesi*. I have spent, *ho speso*.
- to spring, *saltare*. I sprang, *io saltai*. I have sprung, *ho saltato*.
- to sting, *mordere*. I stung, *io mordei*. I have stung, *ho morduto*.
- to string, *legare con fune*. I strung, *io legai*. I have strung, *ho legato*.
- to swear, *giurare*. I swore, *io giurai*. I have sworn, *ho giurato*.
- to spill, *versare*. I spilt, *io versai*. I have spilt, *ho versato*.
- to sweat, *sudare*. I sweat, *io sudai*. I have sweat, *ho sudato*.
- to smite, *percuotere*. I smote, *ii percoffi*. I have smitten, *ho percoffo*.
- to see, *vedere*. I saw, *io viddi*. I have seen, *ho visto*.
- to seek, *cercare*. I sought, *io cercai*. I have sought, *ho cercato*.
- to sit, *sedere*. I sat, *io sedei*. I have sat, *sono assiso*.
- to shoo, *ferrare*. I shod, *io ferrai*. I have shooed, *ho ferrato*.
- to shed, *versare*. I shed, *io versai*. I have shed, *ho versato*.
- to shake, *tremare*. I shook, *io tremai*. I have shaken, *ho tremato*.
- to spit, *sputare*. I did spit, *io sputai*. I have spit-ten, *ho sputato*.

to steal,

- To steal, *rubbare*. I stole, *io rubbai*. I have stolen,
ho rubbato.
 to swim, *nuotare*. I swam, *io nuotai*. I have swom,
ho nuotato.
 to slide, *sdrucchiolare*. I slid, *io sdrucchiolai*. I have
 slid o sliddden, *ho sdrucchiolato*.
 to shine, *risplendere*. I shone *io risplendei*. I have
 shone, *ho risplenduto*.
 to slay, *ammazzare*. I slew, *io ammazzai*. I have
 slain, *ho ammazzato*.
 to seeth, *bollire*. I sod, *io bollii*. I have sodden,
ho bollito.
 to spin, *filare*. I span, *io filai*. I have spun, *ho*
filato.
 to say, *dire*. I said, *io dissi*. I have said, *ho detto*.
 to speed, *riuscire*. I sped, *io riuscii*. I have sped,
ho riuscito.
 to sweep, *spazzare*. I swept, *io spazzai*. I have
 swept, *ho spazzato*.
 to shrink, *scorciare*. I shrunk, *io scorciai*. I have
 shrunk, *ho scorciato*.
 to split, *fendere*. I splitted, *io fendei*. I have split,
ho fesso.
 to stick, *attaccarsi*. I stuck, *io m' attaccai*. I have
 stuck, *mi sono attaccato*.
 to strip, *spogliare*. I stript, *io spogliai*. I have
 stript o stripped, *ho spogliato*.
 to strive, *procurare*. I strove, *io procurai*. I have
 striven, *ho procurato*.
 To slip, *scappare*. I slipt, *io scappai*. I have slipt
 o slipped, *ho scappato*.
 to sink, *affondare*. I sunk, *io affondai*. I have sunk,
sono affondato.
 to take, *prendere*. I took, *io presi*. I have taken,
ho preso.

370 GRAMMATICA INGLESE.

- to think, *pensare*. I thought, *io pensai*. I have thought, *ho pensato*.
- to tear, *stracciare*. I tore, *io stracciai*. I have torn, *ho stracciato*.
- to throw, *gittare*. I threw, *io gittai*. I have thrown, *ho gittato*.
- to thrive, *prosperare*. I throve, *io prosperai*. I have thriven, *ho prosperato*.
- to tell, *dire*. I told, *io dissi*. I have told, *ho detto*.
- to teach, *insegnare*. I taught, *io insegnai*. I have taught, *ho insegnato*.
- to tread, *calpestare*. I trod, *io calpestai*. I have trodden, *ho calpestato*.
- to understand, *intendere*. I understood, *io intesi*. I have understood, *ho inteso*.
- to write, *scrivere*. I wrote, *io scrissi*. I have written, *ho scritto*.
- to weep, *piangere*. I wept, *io piansi*. I have wept, *ho pianto*.
- to wring, *torcere*. I wrung, *io torsi*. I have wrung, *ho torto*.
- to wear, *portare*. I wore, *io portai*. I have worn, *ho portato*.
- to weave, *tessere*. I wove, *io tessei*. I have woven, *ho tessuto*.
- to wipe, *frustare*. I wiped, *io frustai*. I have wiped, *ho frustato*.
- to win, *guadagnare*. I won, *io guadagnai*. I have won, *ho guadagnato*.
- to wind, *girare*. I wound, *io girai*. I have wound, *ho girato*.

Verbi

Verbi Irregolari d'un altra forte.

I verbi che hanno due ee avanti un d finale, non ne hanno che uno al Preterito o Participio.

To bleed, *sangrare*. I bled, *io sangrai*. bled, *sangrato*.
To feed, *pascere*. I fed, *io pascei*. fed, *pasciuto*.

Quei che terminano in eep, hanno il loro participio in ept.

To keep, <i>mantenere</i> .	kept, <i>mantenuto</i> .
To creep, <i>rampicare</i> .	crept, <i>rampicato</i> .
To weep, <i>piangere</i> .	wept, <i>pianto</i> .
To sleep, <i>dormire</i> .	flept, <i>dormito</i> .
To sweep, <i>spazzare</i> .	swept, <i>spazzato</i> .

Quei che terminano in end, hanno il loro Participio in ent; ex.

To bend, <i>piegare</i> .	bent, <i>piegato</i> .
To lend, <i>imprestare</i> .	lent, <i>imprestato</i> .
To send, <i>mandare</i> .	sent, <i>mandato</i> .
To spend, <i>spendere</i> .	spent, <i>speso</i> .

Quei che terminano in ind, hanno il loro Participio in ound; ex.

To bind, <i>legare</i> .	bound, <i>legato</i> .
To find, <i>trovare</i> .	found, <i>trovato</i> .
To grind, <i>macinare</i> .	ground, <i>macinato</i> .
To wind, <i>girare</i> .	wound, <i>girato</i> .

Quei che terminano in ing, hanno il loro Participio in ung; ex.

To sting, <i>mordere</i> .	stung, <i>morduto</i> .
To wring, <i>torcere</i> .	wrung, <i>torto</i> .
To ring, <i>sonare</i> .	rung, <i>sonato</i> .

To sing, <i>cantare.</i>	fung, <i>cantato.</i>
To sling, <i>lanciare.</i>	flung, <i>lanciato.</i>
To fling, <i>gettare.</i>	flung, <i>gettato.</i>
To spring, <i>nascere.</i>	sprung, <i>nato.</i>

Quei che terminano in ear, hanno il loro Participio in orn; ex.

To wear, <i>portare.</i>	worn, <i>portato.</i>
To swear, <i>giurare.</i>	sworn, <i>giurato.</i>
To bear, <i>portare.</i>	born, <i>portato.</i>
To tear, <i>stracciare.</i>	torn, <i>stracciato.</i>

Quei che terminano in aw o ow, hanno il loro Preterito in ew, ed il Participio in awn o own; ex.

To draw, <i>tirare.</i>	drew, <i>tirai.</i>	drawn, <i>tirato.</i>
To blow, <i>soffiare.</i>	blew, <i>suffiai.</i>	blown, <i>soffiato.</i>
To crow, <i>cantare.</i>	crew, <i>cantai.</i>	crown o crowed, <i>cantato.</i>
To know, <i>conoscere.</i>	knew, <i>conobbi.</i>	known, <i>conosciuto.</i>
To throw, <i>gettare.</i>	threw, <i>gettai.</i>	thrown, <i>gettato.</i>

Lista de' verbi più Irregolari.

To abide, <i>dimorare.</i>	I abode, <i>io dimorai, e dimorato.</i>
to bereave <i>privare.</i>	I bereaved, <i>io privai. bereft, privato.</i>
to beseech, <i>supplicare.</i>	besought, <i>supplicai, e supplicato.</i>
to bring, <i>portare.</i>	brought, <i>portai, e portato.</i>
to buy, <i>comprare.</i>	bought, <i>comprai, e comprato.</i>
to break, <i>rompere.</i>	I broke, <i>io ruppi. broken, rotto.</i>
to beat, <i>battere.</i>	I did beat, <i>battei. beaten, battuto.</i>
to beget, <i>generare.</i>	I begot, <i>io generai. begotten, generato.</i>
to bid, <i>comandare.</i>	I bad, <i>io comandai. bidden, comandato.</i>

To bite,

To bite, *mordere*. I did bite, *io morfi*. bitten, *morso*.

to catch, *prendere*. caught, *presi, e preso*.

to cleave, *fendere*. cleave, *fendei*. cloven *e cleft, fesso*.

to chide, *sgridare*. I chid, *io sgridai*. chidden, *sgridato*.

to come, *venire*. I came, *io venni*. come, *venuto*.

to choose, *scegliere*. did choose, *scelsi*. chosen, *scelto*.

to dare, *ardire*. durst, *ardij*. dared, *ardito*.

to drive, *scacciare*. drove, *scacciai*. driven, *scacciato*.

to drink, *bere*. drank, *bevei*. drunk, *bevuto*.

to do, *fare*. did, *feci*. done, *fatto*.

to eat, *mangiare*. did eat, *mangiai*. eaten, *mangiato*.

to fall, *cascare*. fell, *cascai*. fallen, *casato*.

to fly, *fuggire*. fled, *fuggij, e fuggito*.

to feel, *sentire*. felt, *sentij, e sentito*.

to forget, *dimenticare*. forgot, *dimenticai*. forgotten, *dimenticato*.

to fly, *volare*. flew, *volai*, flown, *volato*.

to gird, *cignere*. girded, *cinsi*. girt, *cinto*.

to get, *guadagnare*. got, *gaudagnai*. got, *e gotten, guadagnato*.

to give, *dare*. gave, *diedi*. given, *dato*.

to go, *andare*. went, *andai*. gone, *andato*.

to hang, *impiccare*. hung, *impiccai*. hanged, *impiccato*.

to help, *ajutare*. helped, *ajutai, e ajutato*.

to hide, *nascondare*. hid, *nascosi*. hidden, *nascofo*.

to kiss, *baciare*. kissed, *baciai, e bacciato*.

to lead, *menare*. led, *menai, e menato*.

to leave, *lasciare*. left, *lasciai, e lasciato*.

to lose, *perdere*. lost, *perdei, e perduto*.

to loose, *sciogliere*. loosed, *sciolsi, sciolto*.

to lay, *coricare*. lay'd *e laid*, *coricai, e coricato*.

to make, *fare*. made, *feci, e fatto*.

to meet, *incontrare*. met, *incontrai, e insontrato*.

to mean, *voler dire*. meant, *intesi, e inteso*.

374 GRAMMATICA INGLESE.

- To miss, *mancare*. miss o missed, *mancai, e mancato*.
to mow, *mietere*. mowed, *mietei*. mown, *mietuto*.
to pitch, *impeciare*. pitcht o pitched, *impeciai, e impeciato*.
to read, *leggere*. read, *lessi, e letto*.
to ride, *cavalcare*. rid o rode, *cavalcai*. ridden, *cavalcato*.
to rise, *levarsi*. rose, *mi levai*. risen, *levato*.
to run, *correre*. ran, *corsi*. run, *corso*.
to see, *vedere*. saw, *viddi*. seen *veduto*.
to smite, *battere*. smote, *battei*. smitten, *battuto*.
to spread, *spandere*. spread, *spandei, e spaso*.
to spill, *versare*. spilt o spilled, *versai, e versato*.
to smell, *sentire*. smelt, *sentij, e sentito*.
to sell, *vendere*. sold, *vendei, e venduto*.
to seek, *cercare*. sought, *cercai, e cercato*.
to stand, *stare in piedi*. stood, *stetti, e sono stato in piedi*.
to sit, *sedere*. sat, *sedei, e seduto*.
to shoo, *ferrare*. shod, *ferrai, e ferrato*.
to shew, *mostrare*. shewed, *mostrai*. shown, *mostrato*.
to shake, *tremare*. shook, *tremai*. shaken, *tremato*.
to slay, *ammazzare*. slew, *ammazzai*. slain, *ammazzato*.
to seeth, *bollire*. sod, *bollij*. sodden, *bollito*.
to shed, *versare*. shed, *versai, e versato*.
to speak, *parlare*. spake o spoke, *parlai, spoken, parlato*.
to steal, *rubbare*. stole, *rubbai*. stolen *rubbatto*.
to shine, *rilucere*. shone, *rilucei, shined, rilucente*.
to strike, *battere*. struck, *battei, e battuto*.
to spit, *sputare*. spat, *sputai*. spitten, *sputato*.
to stink, *puzzare*. stank, *puzzai*. stunk, *puzzato*.
to spin, *filare*. span, *filai*. spun, *filato*.
to swim, *nuotare*. swam, *nuotai*. swum, *nuotato*.
to slide, *sdruciolare*. slid, *sdruciolai*. slidden, *sdruciolato*.
to tell, *dire*, told, *disi, e detto*.
to take, *prendere*. took, *presi, taken, preso*. To

To teach, *insegnare*. taught, *insegnai, e insegnato*.

to think, *pensare*. thought, *pensai, e pensato*.

to tread, *calpestare*. trod, *calpestai*. trodden, *calpestato*.

to work, *lavorare*. worked *lavorai*. wrought, *lavorato*.

to write, *scrivere*. wrote, *scrissi*. written, *scritto*.

La maniera di servirsi d'un verbo in ogni maniera, Affirmativa, Negativa, ed Interrogativa.

I do see, *io vedo*.

I do not see, *io non vedo*.

Do I see? *Vedo io?*

Do I not see? *Non ved' io?*

He doth see, *egli vede*.

He doth not see, *egli non vede*.

Doth he see? *Vede egli?*

Doth he not see? *non ved' egli?*

We do see, *noi vediamo*.

We do not see, *noi non vediamo*.

Do we see? *vediamo noi?*

Do we not see? *non vediamo noi?*

You do see, *voi vedete*.

You do not see, *voi non vedete*.

Do you see? *Vedete voi?*

Do you not see? *Non vedete voi?*

They did see, *eglino vedevano*.

They did not see, *Eglino non vedevano*.

Did they see? *Vedevano eglino?*

Did they not see? *Non vedevano eglino?*

I have seen, *Io ho veduto*.

I have not seen, *Io non ho veduto*.

Have I seen? *Ho veduto io?*

Have I not seen? *Non ho veduto io?*

You have done,	<i>Voi avete finito.</i>
You have not done,	<i>Voi non avete finito.</i>
Have you done ?	<i>Avete voi finito ?</i>
Have you not done ?	<i>Non avete voi finito ?</i>
We shall go,	<i>Noi anderemo.</i>
We shall not go ,	<i>Noi non anderemo.</i>
Shall we go ?	<i>Anderemo noi ?</i>
Shall we not go ?	<i>Non anderemo noi ?</i>

Ci serviamo in Inglese de' tempi del verbo to be, essere, e del participio attivo d'un altro verbo, per esprimere i tempi d'essi verbi ; ex.

I am going,	<i>io vo, o mene vo.</i>
He is going,	<i>egli va, o sene va.</i>
We are speaking,	<i>noi parliamo.</i>
'They are writing,	<i>eglino scrivono, o stanno scrivendo.</i>
She is dancing,	<i>ella balla, o sta ballando.</i>
Whither were you going Yesterday when I met you ?	<i>Ove andavate ieri, quando v'incontrai.</i>
What was he doing ?	<i>che faceva egli ?</i>
He was a writing.	<i>scriveva, o stava scrivendo.</i>
He was a reading.	<i>leggeva, o stava leggendo.</i>

De' verbi Impersonali di voce Attiva.

It rains,	<i>piove.</i>
It doth not rain,	<i>non piove ?</i>
Doth it rain ?	<i>piove ?</i>
Doth it not rain ?	<i>non piove ?</i>
It did rain,	<i>pioveva ?</i>
It did not rain,	<i>non pioveva.</i>
Did it rain ?	<i>pioveva ?</i>
Did it not rain ?	<i>non pioveva ?</i>

It

It hath rained,
 It hath not rained,
 Hath it rained?
 Hath it not rained?
 It will rain,
 It will not rain,
 Will it rain?
 Will it not rain?
 Let it rain.

It blows, o
 it doth blow,

It freezes,
 It thaws,
 It snows,
 It hails,
 It thunders,
 It lightens,
 It is hot,
 It is cold,
 It is not hot,
 It is not cold,
 It is fair Weather,
 It is bad Weather,
 It grieves me,

ha piovuto.
 non ha piovuto.
 ha piovuto?
 non ha piovuto?
 pioverà.
 non pioverà.
 pioverà?
 non pioverà?
 che piova.

} fa vento.

gela.
 digela.
 nevica.
 grandina.
 tuona.
 lampeggia.
 fa caldo.
 fa freddo.
 non fa caldo.
 non fa freddo.
 fa bel tempo.
 fa cattivo tempo.
 mi dispiace.

La Congiugatione del verbo Impersonale there is, v'è, affirmativamente.

There is,
 There was,

There has been,
 There had been,
 There will be,

v'è, vi sono.
 v'era, v'erano, vi fu, vi furono.
 v'è stato, vi sono stati.
 v'era stato, v'erano stati.
 vi sarà, vi saranno.

Interrogativamente.

Is there?
 Was there?

v'è? vi sono?
 v'era? v'erano?

Hath

Hath there been?
Will there be?

v' è stato? vi sono stati?
vi sarà? vi saranno?

Questo verbo must, bisogna, ch' è impersonale in Italiano, è personale in Inglese; ma è difettivo, perchè non si usa che nel presente dell' Indicativo.

I must go,
Thou must go,
He must go,
We must go,
Ye must go,
They must go,
You must do that,

*bisogna ch' io vada.
bisogna che tu vada.
bisogna ch' egli vada.
bisogna che noi andiamo.
bisogna che voi andiate.
bisogna ch' eglino vadano.
bisogna che voi facciate
questo.*

He must learn,
We must not wonder,

*bisogna ch' egli impari.
non bisogna maravigliarci.*

L' Imperfetto di questo verbo s'esprime con questa particola should.

You should have done
that,

voi dovevate far ciò.

You should have let me
know it,

*dovevate avvertirmelo, o
farmelo sapere.*

Del verbo Impersonale di voce Passiva.

Il verbo Impersonale di voce passiva s'esprime generalmente in Italiano con la particola si; ed in Inglese s'esprime diversamente; qualche volta con la particola they; ex.

They say,
They speak good Italian
in Tuscany,
They eat good Meat in
England,

*si dice.
si parla buon Italiano in
Toscana.
si mangia della buona carne
in Inghilterra.*

Qual-

*Qualche volta s'esprime con queste parole, Men,
People, o one; ex.*

Men lose many Things	<i>molte cose si perdono per</i>
for want of asking,	<i>non domandarle.</i>
One told me so,	<i>m'è stato detto così.</i>
People talk of War,	<i>si parla di guerra.</i>
People tell a great many	<i>si dicono molte menzogne.</i>
lies,	

*Ma comunemente s'esprime per mezzo del verbo to be,
essere, e d'un participio; ex;*

I am told,	<i>mi vien detto.</i>
It is said,	<i>si dice.</i>
The best English is spo-	<i>Il migliore Inglese si parla</i>
ken in London,	<i>in Londra.</i>
That is known by every	<i>ognuno sa questo.</i>
body,	
I have been commanded,	<i>m'è stato comandato.</i>
It will be found out,	<i>si saprà.</i>
It shall be done,	<i>si farà.</i>
Roses are found among	<i>le Rose si trovano fra le</i>
Thorns,	<i>Spine.</i>
A Friend is known in	<i>Nel bisogno si conoscon gli</i>
Necessity,	<i>amici.</i>

Dell' uso de' tempi.

*Ci serviamo del tempo presente in Inglese, come fac-
ciamo in Italiano; ex.*

I am your Servant,	<i>sono vostro servo.</i>
We are all Friends,	<i>noi siamo tutti amici.</i>
You are very kind,	<i>voi sete molto cortese.</i>
He is very diligent,	<i>egli è molto diligente.</i>
He rises betimes,	<i>egli si leva di buon' ora.</i>

He

He plays every Day at Cards,	<i>egli giuoca alle carte ogni giorno.</i>
You dine too late,	<i>voi desinate troppo tardi.</i>
Fortune doth change as the Moon,	<i>la fortuna cangia come la luna.</i>
As Thorns are among Roses, so Difficulty is found among glorious Things,	<i>come le spine sono fra le rose, così la difficoltà si trova fra le cose gloriose.</i>

Ci serviamo qualche volta del tempo presente in luogo del futuro; ex.

What day is to morrow?	<i>che giorno è domani?</i>
To morrow is Sunday,	<i>domani è domenica.</i>
When do you go?	<i>quando anderete?</i>
I go next Week?	<i>Anderò la settimana prossima.</i>
The King goes to morrow a hunting,	<i>il Re anderà alla caccia domani.</i>
Next Monday is a Holy Day,	<i>Lunedì prossimo è festa.</i>

Ci serviamo del tempo presente del verbo I am, io sono, col participio presente d' un altro verbo, per esprimere il tempo presente del detto verbo; ex.

I am going to Church,	<i>io vo alla chiesa.</i>
He is going to France,	<i>egli va in Francia.</i>
What is he doing?	<i>che fa?</i>
He is a writing,	<i>scrive, o sta scrivendo.</i>
He is a reading,	<i>legge, o sta leggendo.</i>

Ma è d'avvertire, che bisogna, ch' il verbo sia d'una azione attiva, e ch' esprima la continuatione dell' azione; perche non sarebbe ben detto, he is seeing, egli vede; perche in questo caso, l' azione cessa, subito che si vede qualche cosa.

Il Preterito Imperfetto, ed il Preterito Perfetto, s'esprime con un solo Preterito in Inglese; ex.

Alexander did take, o *Alessandro si diletta-
took great pleasure in to di bere.*
drinking,

The People abstained, o *Il popolo s'asteneva dalla
did abstain from eat- carne.*
ing Flesh,

The Pagans did worship, *I Pagani adoravano i fal-
o worshipped the false si dei.*
Gods,

Un verbo Italiano di moto nell' imperfetto s' esprime in Inglese per L' imperfetto del verbo I am, io sono, col participio presente del detto verbo di moto; ex.

Whither were you go- *dove andavate ieri quan-
going Yesterday when do v'incontrai?*
I met you?

What was he doing? *che faceva?*

He was writing, *scriveva, o stava scriven-
do.*

When you were dancing, *quando voi erate a ballare,
he was sleeping on the egli dormiva per terra.*
Ground,

Del Preterito Indefinito.

Il Preterito indefinito non ha veruna difficoltà, e cene serviamo quasi come in Italiano; ex.

I have been there seve- *vi sono stato molte volte.*
ral times,

He has carried your Let- *egli ha portato la vostra
ter to the Post-house. lettera alla Posta.*

We have drunk together *abbiamo bevuto insieme
a great many times, spesso volte.*

They have done what *Hanno fatto quello, che
they*

382 GRAMMATICA INGLESE.

they ought never to have done; non dovevano mai fare.

I have seen the King at Dinner, Ho visto il Re a pranzo.

E da notare, che se il tempo è determinato, allora bisogna servirsi del definito ; ex.

I was there last Week, vi fui la settimana passata.

He carried your Letter to the Post-house last Night, egli portò la vostra lettera alla Posta, iersera.

I saw the King at Dinner Yesterday, viddi ieri il Re a pranzo.

Il Più che Perfetto non ha veruna difficoltà.

I gave him all the Money I had about me, li diedi tutti i danari ch' avevo adosso.

We had dined when you came, avevamo pransato quando voi veniste.

They had done before we came, avevano finito prima che venissimo.

As soon as we had dined, we went a walking, pransato ch' avemmo, andammo a spasseggiare.

Ci serviamo del futuro come in Italiano ; ex.

I shall be glad to see you, averò a caro di vedervi.

We shall see what he will do, vederemo quel che farà.

He will be obliged to you, vi sarà obbligato.

I shall love him as long as I live, l' amerò tanto che vivrò.

We

We will tell you all that vi diremo tutto il successo.
happened,

E molto facile di servirsi dell' Imperativo, e di tutti gli altri tempi dell' Ottativo ; è però non è necessario di farne mentione ; la sola lettura de' verbi bastera per sapere in che maniera servir-sene.

Bisogna però osservare una cosa , che dopo il presente, ed Imperfetto del verbo io voglio, gl' Inglese non si servono dell' Ottativo, come fanno gl' Italiani, ma si servono dell' Infinito col verbo Have, avere ; come si puo vedere dagli esempj seguenti.

I will have you know,	<i>voglio che sappiate.</i>
My Father will have me go to France,	<i>mio padre vuole ch' io vada in Francia.</i>
I would not have him hazard himself,	<i>non vorrei che si mettesse in pericolo.</i>
She would have me promise her,	<i>voleva ch' io le promettessi.</i>
They will have no body see what they do,	<i>non vogliono, che nissuno veda, quel che fanno.</i>

Dell' Infinito.

Ci serviamo dell' Infinito d' un verbo, dopo un altro verbo, quando i due verbi appartengono alla medesima persona.

I desire to learn Music,	<i>ho desiderio d' imparare la musica.</i>
Will you learn to write,	<i>volete imparare a scrivere.</i>

I will

I will teach you to play upon the Lute,	v' insegnerò a suonare del liuto.
I am forced to leave you,	sono sforzato a lasci- arvi.
Give me something to eat,	dateme qualche cosa da mangiare.

Gl' Italiani si servono di tre preposizioni differenti avanti un Infinito, cioè a, di, per; ma gl' Inglese non ne hanno che una, che ha la medesima significazione, che hanno le tre Italiane, cioè to; ex.

I have something to do,	ho qualche cosa a fare.
I have Letters to write,	ho lettere a scrivere.
Have you any thing to give me?	havete niente a darmi?
He has no Reason to use me so;	non ha ragione di trat- tarmi così.
He begins to speak good Italian,	Comincia a parlar bene Italiano.
I pray you to do me a Favour,	vi prego di farmi un fa- vore.
I am going to Italy to learn Italian,	vo in Italia per impara- re l' Italiano.
All Creatures were cre- ated to serve Man,	tutte le creature sono state create per servi- zio dell' uomo.
Men must work to get Money,	Bisogna lavorare per guadagnar danari.

Qualche volta la Particola a deve esprimersi in Inglese per la Particola in, ed allora ci serviamo del Participio Presente in luogo dell' Infinito; ex.

He spends his Time in Gaming and Drink- ing,	egli spende il suo tempo a givocare, ed a bere.
--	--

My

My only Delight is in *l' unico mio piacere è a*
 Reading, *leggere.*
 He applies himself in *egli s' applica a regola*
 managing his Affairs, *re i suoi affari.*

Queste particole of di, from da, for per, without senza, non governano l' Infinito come in Italiano, ma il Participio Presente; ex.

I come from fishing, *vengo da pescare.*
 I am tired of reading, *sono lasso di leggere.*
 He was hang'd for rob- *è stato impiccato per a-*
 bing in the Highway. *ver rubbato nella stra-*
da.

Can you not speak *non potete parlare senza*
 without laughing? *ridere?*

De' Participj.

I Participj sono quelli che partecipano della natura de' Nomi e de' Verbi.

Vene sono di due sorti, Attivi, e Passivi.

Gli Attivi in Italiano terminano in ando, per li verbi della prima coniugazione, ed in endo per quelli della seconda, e della terza; ed in Inglese terminano in ing; come, amando loving, credendo believing, dormendo sleeping.

I Passivi hanno diverse terminazioni, nell'una e nell' altra lingua; come, amato loved, creduto believed, bevuto drank, dormito slept.

Degli Adverbj.

Gli Adverbj servono a specificare la significazione del Verbo. Vene sono di molte sorti, perche esprimono le diverse circostanze delle azioni significate dal verbo. Vi darò qui i più necessarj ad imparare a mente.

C c

Adverbj

Adverbj di tempo.

To day,	<i>hoggi.</i>
To morrow,	<i>domani.</i>
Now,	<i>adesso.</i>
Already,	<i>gia, digià.</i>
Betimes,	<i>di buon' ora,</i>
Early,	<i>di buon' ora,</i>
Lately,	<i>ultimamente, di fresco.</i>
Yesterday,	<i>jeri.</i>
Formerly,	<i>anticamente, altre volte.</i>
Before,	<i>avanti, prima, innanzi.</i>
After,	<i>appresso, dopo.</i>
Hereafter,	<i>all' avvenire.</i>
Shortly,	<i>in breve, frappoco.</i>
Every Day,	<i>ogni giorno.</i>
Daily,	<i>giornalmente.</i>
Continually,	<i>continuamente.</i>
Eternally,	<i>eternamente.</i>
Never,	<i>mai.</i>
Always,	<i>sempre.</i>
Day and Night,	<i>giorno e notte.</i>
By Day,	<i>di giorno.</i>
By Night,	<i>di notte.</i>
Then,	<i>allora.</i>
Whilst,	<i>mentre.</i>
Late,	<i>tardi.</i>

Adverbj di luogo.

Here,	<i>qui, qua.</i>
There,	<i>lì, là.</i>
This Way,	<i>per qua, per qui.</i>
That Way,	<i>per là, per lì.</i>
Hitherto,	<i>fin qui, fin qua.</i>
Below,	<i>giù.</i>

Above,

Above,	<i>su.</i>
Near,	<i>vicino.</i>
Far,	<i>lontano.</i>
Aside,	<i>da parte.</i>
Before,	<i>avanti, innanzi.</i>
Behind,	<i>dietro.</i>
In, within,	<i>entro, dentro.</i>
Out,	<i>fuori.</i>
Without,	<i>fuori.</i>
Upon,	<i>sopra.</i>
Under,	<i>sotto.</i>
About,	<i>incirca, all' intorno.</i>
Amongst,	<i>fra, tra.</i>
Between,	<i>fra.</i>
Beyond,	<i>oltre.</i>
Some where,	<i>in qualche luogo.</i>
Else where,	<i>in qualcb' altro luogo.</i>
No where,	<i>in nissun luogo.</i>
Every where,	<i>dapertutto.</i>

Adverbj d' Interrogazione.

Where?	<i>dove?</i>
From whence?	<i>donde?</i>
Which way?	<i>per dove?</i>
How far?	<i>fin dove?</i>
How much?	<i>quanto?</i>
How many?	<i>quanti?</i>
How long?	<i>di che lunghezza?</i>
When?	<i>quando?</i>
Why?	<i>perchè?</i>
What?	<i>che?</i>
How?	<i>come?</i>
Only,	<i>solamente.</i>
As much,	<i>altrettanto.</i>
Almost,	<i>quasi.</i>
But little,	<i>non molto.</i>

Adverbj di Numero, e di Quantità.

Once,	<i>una volta.</i>
Twice,	<i>due volte.</i>
Thrice,	<i>tre volte.</i>
Sometimes,	<i>qualche volta.</i>
Often,	<i>spesso.</i>
Little,	<i>poco.</i>
Much,	<i>molto.</i>
Many,	<i>molti.</i>
Enough,	<i>abbastanza.</i>
More,	<i>più.</i>
At most,	<i>al più.</i>
At least,	<i>almeno.</i>
Wholly,	<i>intieramente.</i>
Intirely,	<i>affatto.</i>
Sufficiently,	<i>abbastanza.</i>
All,	<i>tutto.</i>
None,	<i>nissuno.</i>
Nothing,	<i>niente.</i>
Too much,	<i>troppo.</i>

Adverbj di Qualità.

Wisely,	<i>saviamente.</i>
Prudently,	<i>prudentemente.</i>
Happily,	<i>felicemente.</i>
Boldly,	<i>arditamente.</i>
Reasonably,	<i>ragionevolmente.</i>
Coldly,	<i>freddamente.</i>
Hotly,	<i>caldamente.</i>
Softly,	<i>dolcemente.</i>
Insolently,	<i>insolentemente.</i>
Imprudently,	<i>imprudentemente.</i>
Readily,	<i>prontamente.</i>
Quickly,	<i>presto.</i>

At Ease,	<i>aggiatamente.</i>
Openly,	<i>apertamente.</i>
Kneeling,	<i>in ginocchione.</i>
Standing,	<i>in piedi.</i>
Backwards,	<i>in dietro.</i>
Heartily,	<i>cordialmente.</i>
Secretly,	<i>secretamente.</i>
In earnest,	<i>da vero.</i>
On purpose,	<i>apposta.</i>
Rashly,	<i>temerariamente.</i>
Heedlessly,	<i>inconsideratamente.</i>
Carelessly,	<i>negligentemente.</i>
On a sudden,	<i>in un subito.</i>
In haste,	<i>in fretta.</i>
Under hand,	<i>sotto mano.</i>
Unawares,	<i>improvvisamente.</i>
In jest,	<i>in burla.</i>
In pudding time,	<i>a tempo.</i>

Adverbj d' Affirmazione.

Yes,	<i>sì,</i>
So it is,	<i>così è.</i>
Affuredly,	<i>sicuramente, per certo.</i>
Undoubtedly,	<i>indubbitamente.</i>
Infallibly,	<i>infallibilmente.</i>
Truly,	<i>veramente.</i>
In Truth,	<i>in vero, in verità.</i>

Adverbj di Negazione.

No,	<i>no, non.</i>
Not,	<i>non.</i>
Not at all,	<i>niente affatto.</i>
By no means,	<i>in conto alcuno.</i>
Nor,	<i>ne.</i>
Neither,	<i>ne.</i>

Adverbj d' Ordine.

First,	<i>primariamente.</i>
Secondly,	<i>secondariamente.</i>
Thirdly,	<i>in terzo luogo.</i>
Next,	<i>dopo.</i>
At first,	<i>alla prima.</i>

Delle Congiunzioni.

Le Congiunzioni sono parole che servono ad unire le parole e le frasi insieme.

Le une si chiamano Copulative.

And,	<i>e, o ed.</i>
Also,	<i>anche.</i>

Le altre si chiamano Disgiuntive.

Or,	<i>o.</i>
Either,	<i>o.</i>
Nor,	<i>ne.</i>
Neither,	<i>ne.</i>

Le altre si chiamano Condizionali.

If,	<i>se.</i>
On condition,	<i>con patto,</i>
Provided,	<i>purchè.</i>
Unless,	<i>a meno.</i>

Le altre si chiamano Causali.

For,	<i>perchè.</i>
Because,	<i>perchè.</i>
Since,	<i>poichè.</i>
To the end that,	<i>affinche.</i>
Therefore,	<i>dunque.</i>

Le altre si chiamano Adversative.

But,	<i>ma.</i>
Though, although,	<i>benche.</i>
However,	<i>pure.</i>
Notwithstanding,	<i>non ostante.</i>
Nevertheless,	<i>nulla dimeno.</i>
Yet,	<i>pure, però.</i>

Delle Preposizioni.

Le Preposizioni sono parole, che si mettono avanti le altre parti d' orazione, come Nomi, e Pronomi.

Near, nigh,	<i>vicino.</i>
About,	<i>all' intorno.</i>
Before,	<i>avanti.</i>
Behind,	<i>dietro.</i>
Toward,	<i>verso.</i>
For,	<i>per.</i>
At,	<i>da.</i>

Dell' Interjezioni.

Le Interjezioni sono parole, che servono ad esprimere la veemenza di qualche passione.

Di Dolore.

Ah,	<i>ah! ai!</i>
Alas,	<i>oimè!</i>
O God,	<i>o Dio!</i>

D' Allegrezza.

Ah, ah, ah,	<i>ah, ah, ah.</i>
Come come,	<i>su su.</i>
Let us be merry,	<i>allegramente.</i>

D' Averfione.

Fie, fie,
Foh,*oibo.*
eh via.

Di Coraggio.

Cheer,
Well well,
Have good Heart,*animo.*
ben bene.
state di buon core.

D' Ammirazione.

Oh oh !
Oh wonderful,*o, o.*
o maraviglia.

Frafi Familiari.

*Familiar Phrases.*Per domandar qualche
cosa.*To ask something.**Datemi vi prego,*
Portatemi,
Imprestatemi,
Vi ringrazio,
Vi rendo grazie,
Andate a cercare,
Adeffo-adeffo,
Mio caro Signore fatemi
questo piacere,
Fatemi questo favore o
questa grazia,
Mia cara Signora fatemi
questo favore,
Vene supplico,
Vene scongiuro,

*Velo domando in grazia.*I pray you give me.
Bring me.
Lend me.
I thank you.
I give you thanks.
Go and fetch.
Presently.
Dear Sir, do me that
Kindness.
Do me this Favour, or
this Kindness.
Dear Madam, grant me
that Favour.
I beseech you.
I intreat or conjure you
to it.
I beg it as a Favour.

Ef-

Espressioni di tenerezza. *Expressions of Kindness,*

Vita mia, My Life.
Anima mia, My dear Soul.
Mia cara, My Dear.
Amor mio, My Love.
Ben mio, Tesoro mio. My Darling.
Cuor mio, My Heart.

Per ringraziare, e far *To thank and Compli-*
 Complimenti. *ment.*

Vi ringrazio, I thank you.
Vi rendo grazie, I give you Thanks.
Vi rendo mille grazie, I give you a thousand
 Thanks.

Lo farò con piacere, I shall do it with Pleasure.
Di tutto cuore, With all my Heart.
Di buon cuore, Heartily.

Vi sono obbligato, I am obliged to you.
Son tutto vostro. I am all yours.
Sono servo vostro, I am your Servant.
Umilissimo servo vostro. Your most humble Ser-
 vant.

Voi sete molto cortese, You are very obliging.
Voi vi pigliate troppo fa- You give your self too
stidio, much Trouble.

Che domandate ? What do you want ?
Che comanda V.S. What will you be pleased
 to have ?

Senza complimenti, Without Complements.
Senza cerimonie, Without Ceremonies.
V' amo di tutto cuore. I love you with all my
 Heart.

Fate capitale della mia Rely on me.
persona,

Mi comandi, Command me. *M'onori*

<i>M'onori de suoi comandi,</i>	Honour me with your Commands.
<i>Avete niente a comandarmi?</i>	Have you any thing to command me?
<i>Disponga del suo servitore,</i>	Dispose of your Servant.
<i>Non aspetto ch'i suoi comandi.</i>	I only wait for your Commands.
<i>V. S. mi fa troppo onore.</i>	You do me too much Honour?
<i>Lasciamo da banda queste cerimonie,</i>	Let's forbear Compli- ments, I pray.
<i>Fate i miei baciamani al Sig^r N.</i>	Present my Service to Master N.
<i>Non mancherò.</i>	I shall not fail.
<i>Mi riverisca la Sig^{ra} L.</i>	Present my Respects to Mistress L.

Per affermare, negare,
consentire, &c. *To affirm, deny, consent,
&c.*

<i>E' vero,</i>	It is true.
<i>E' vero?</i>	Is it true?
<i>E' troppo vero.</i>	It is too true.
<i>A dirvi il vero,</i>	To tell you the Truth.
<i>In fatti è così,</i>	Really, it is so.
<i>Chi ne dubbita?</i>	Who doubts it?
<i>Non v'è dubbio,</i>	There's no doubt on't.
<i>Credo di sì,</i>	I believe yes.
<i>Credo di no,</i>	I believe not.
<i>Dico di sì,</i>	I say yes.
<i>Dico di no,</i>	I say not.
<i>Scommetto di sì,</i>	I lay it is.
<i>Scommetto di no,</i>	I lay it is not.
<i>Sì, alla fe,</i>	Yes, Faith.
<i>In coscienza mia,</i>	Upon my Conscience.
<i>Per vita mia,</i>	Upon my Life.

Passa

Possa morire, se mento,

Let me die, if I tell a Lie.

Vi giuro alla fe di gentil-uomo,

I swear as I am a Gentleman.

Da galantuomo, da uomo d'onore,

As I am an honest Man, upon my Honour.

Mi creda,

Believe me.

Scommetterei qualche cosa,

I could lay something.

Non si burla?

Don't you jest?

Parla da vero?

Are you in earnest?

Parlo da vero,

I speak in earnest.

Voi l'avete indovinata,

You guess right.

Voi vi sete apposto,

You have hit the Nail on the Head.

Questo non è impossibile,

That is not impossible.

E bene, alla buon ora,

Well, let it be to,

Piano-piano,

Softly-softly.

Non è vero,

It is not true.

E' falso,

That's false.

Non c'è tal cosa.

There's no such Thing.

E' una buggia,

That's a Lye.

E' una menzogna,

That's an untruth.

L'ho detto in burla,

I did say it in jest.

Sì in verità,

Yes indeed.

Non voglio,

I will not, or I won't,

In conto alcuno,

By no means.

Per consultare o considerare.

To consult or consider.

Che bisogna fare? Che c'è da fare?

What is to be done? what must we do?

Che faremo noi?

What shall we do?

Che mi consigliate di fare?

What do you advise me to do?

Facciamo così,

Let us do so.

Fac-

Facciamo una cosa, Let us do one Thing.
Sarà meglio, che - - - - It will be better that -

Amerei meglio, - - - - I had rather, - - - -
Voi fareste meglio di - - - You had best to - - - -
Lasciate fare a me, Let me alone.
S'io fossi voi, - - - - If I was you, - - -
S'io fossi in luogo vostro. - Were I in your Place.

E la medesima cosa. 'Tis the same Thing.

Del mangiare, e del
Bere.

Of Eating, and Drinking.

Ho buon appetito, I have a good Stomach.
Ho fame, I am hungry.
Ho gran fame, I am very hungry.
Mi moro di fame, I am almost starved.
Mangiate qualche cosa, Eat something.
Che volete mangiare ? What will you eat ?

Mangerei un boccone di qualche cosa. I could eat a mouthful of something.

Datemi qualche cosa a mangiare, Give me something to eat.

Ho mangiato a bastanza. I have eat enough.

Sono sazio, I am satisfied.

Volete mangiar più ? Will you eat any more.

Non ho più fame, I have no more Stomach.

Ho sete, I am dry.

Ho gran sete, I am very dry.

Mi moro di sete, I am almost choaked with Thirst.

Datemi a bere, Give me some drink.

Bevete un bicchiere di vi- Drink a glass of Wine.

*Ho bevuto a bastanza,
Non posso più bere,
Non ho più sete,*

I have drunk enough.
I can drink no more.
I am no more dry.

*D'andare, venire, muo-
verli, &c.*

*Of going, coming, stirring,
&c.*

Donde venite ?

From whence come you?

Dove andate ?

Where are you going ?

Vengo—— Vo——

I come—— I go——

Salite—— scendete.

Come up—— come
down——.

Entrate—— uscite——

Come in—— go out——

Non vi movete,

Don't stir from thence.

State lì,

Stay there.

Avvicinatevi a me,

Come near me.

Andate via,

Go your ways.

Venite qua,

Come hither.

Aspettate un poco,

Stay a little.

Aspettatemi,

Stay for me.

*Non camminate tanto
presto,*

Do not go so fast.

*Voi camminate troppo
presto,*

You go too fast.

Non mi toccate,

Don't touch me.

Lasciatemi stare,

Let me alone.

Perchè ?

Why ?

Perche——

Because——

Sto bene qui,

I am well here.

La porta è chiusa,

The Door is shut.

La porta è aperta,

The Door is open.

Chiudete la porta,

Shut the Door.

Aprite la porta,

Open the Door.

Chiudete la finestra,

Shut the Window.

Aprite la finestra,

Open the Window.

Venite per qua,

Come this way.

Andate per là,
Passate per qui,
Passate per là,

Go that way.
Come this way.
Go that way.

Per parlare, dire, fare,
 &c.

Of speaking, saying, do-
ing, &c.

Parlate alto,
Voi parlate troppo basso,
A chi parlate ?
Parlate a me ?
Parlate Italiano ?
Molto poco.
Che dite ?
Ch' avete detto ?
Non dico niente,
Non ho detto niente,
Tacete,
L'ho inteso dire,
Non l' ho inteso dire.
M' è stato detto,
Si dice così,
Chi vel' ha detto ?
Il Signor N. mel' ha det-
to,
Non lo credo,

Speak loud.
You speak to low.
Whom do you speak to?
Do you speak to me?
Do you speak Italian?
Very little.
What do you say?
What did you say?
I say nothing.
I said nothing.
Hold your Tongue.
I heard it.
I never heard it.
I was told so.
They say so.
Who told you so?
Master N. told me so.

I don't believe it.

Dell' Età.

Of Age.

Quanti anni avete ?
Ho vinti anni,
Quanti anni ha vostro
fratello ?
Non ha ancora quindici
anni.
Ha due anni più di mio
fratello,

How old are you?
I am twenty Years old.
How old is your Brother?
He is not fifteen Years old yet.
He is two Years older than my Brother.

Voi

Voi sete più vecchio di me, You are older than I,

Quanti anni credete ch'io abbia? How old do you think I am?

Credo ch'abbiate quarant'anni incirca, I believe you are about forty Years old.

Comincio ad entrar negli anni, I begin to grow old.

Un uomo non si puo dir vecchio a quarant'anni, A Man cannot be call'd old at forty.

Sia come si voglia, io sto bene di salute, e questo basta, Let it be how it will, I am well in Health, and that's enough.

Dell' Ora.

Of the Hour.

Che ora è?

What's a Clock?

Che ora credete che sia?

What a Clock do you think it is?

Vedete che ora è.

See what a Clock it is.

Ditemi che ora è,

Tell me what a Clock it is.

Non sapete che ora è?

Don't you know what's a Clock?

Non so che ora è,

I do not know what a Clock it is.

E di buon' ora,

It is early.

Non è tardi,

It is not late.

Non è più di mezzodi,

'Tis but twelve a Clock or Noon.

E' quasi un ora,

'Tis almost one.

E' un' ora è un quarto.

'Tis a quarter past one.

E' un' ora è mezza,

'Tis half an hour past one.

Sono sei ore sonate,

'Tis past six.

E' quasi mezza notte,

'Tis almost midnight, or twelve a Clock at Night.

Del

Del tempo,

Che tempo fa?
Fa bel tempo?
Fa cattivo tempo?
Fa caldo?
Fa freddo?
Fa bel tempo,
Fa cattivo tempo,
Fa caldo,
Fa freddo,
Fa molto caldo, o molto
freddo,
Fa un tempo chiaro, e se-
reno,
Fa un tempo oscuro,
Fa un tempo nuvoloso,
Piove?
Non lo credo,
Piove,
Non piove,
Dilluvia,

Comincia a piovere,
Pioverà tutt' oggi,
La pioggia passerà subito,

Grandina,
Tuona,
Lampeggia,
Nevica,
Gela,
Digela,
Fa gran vento,
Il vento è cangiato,

Of the Weather.

How is the Weather?
 Is it fine Weather?
 Is it bad Weather?
 Is it hot?
 Is it cold?
 It is fine Weather.
 It is bad Weather.
 It is hot.
 It is cold.
 It is very hot, or very
 cold.
 'Tis clear and serene
 Weather.
 'Tis dark Weather.
 'Tis cloudy Weather.
 Doth it rain?
 I do not believe it.
 It rains.
 It doth not rain.
 It rains as fast as it can
 pour
 It begins to rain.
 It will rain all this Day.
 The Rain will soon be
 over.
 It hails.
 It thunders.
 It lightens.
 It snows.
 It freezes.
 It thaws.
 The Wind blows hard.
 The Wind is changed.

*Comincia a scbiarire,
Fa una gran nebbia,*

*La nebbia comincia a dis-
siparsi,*

Per andare a spasso,

*Fa un bellissimo tempo,
Questo giorno chiaro e se-
reno c'invita ad andare
a spasso,*

*Andiamo a spasso,
Volete andare a fare una
spassggiata.*

Volete andar meco?

*Molto volontieri,
Dove anderemo?
Andiamo al parco,
Anderemo in Carozza?
Come vi piacerà,
Andiamo a piedi,
Voi avete ragione,
E buono per la salute,*

*Su, andiamo,
Per dove anderemo?*

*Per dove volete,
Per qui, o per là,
Andiamo per qui,
Alla dritta, o alla man
dritta,
Alla sinistra, o alla man
sinistra,*

It begins to clear up.
There is a great Fog, or
Mist.

The Fogg begins to go
off.

Of Walking.

It is very fine Weather.
This clear and serene
Day invites us to walk
out.

Let us walk out.

Will you go and take a
Walk.

Will you go along with
me?

Very willingly.

Whither shall we go?

Let us go into the Park.

Shall we go in a Coach?

As you please.

Let us go on Foot.

You are in the Right.

'Tis good for one's
Health.

Come, let us go.

Which Way shall we
go?

Which Way you please.

This Way, or that Way.

Let us go this Way.

On the Right, or on
the right Hand.

On the Left, or on the
left Hand.

<i>Voi camminate troppo presto,</i>	You walk too fast.
<i>Non posso camminar così presto,</i>	I cannot walk so fast.
<i>Di grazia andate un poco più piano,</i>	Pray go a little softer.
<i>Riposiamoci un poco, Sete lasso?</i>	Let us rest a little. Are you weary?
<i>Sono molto lasso,</i>	I am very weary.
<i>Corichiamoci sopra quest'erba,</i>	Let us lie down upon this Grass.
<i>Ritorniamocene a casa,</i>	Let us return home.
<i>Comincia a farsi tardi,</i>	It begins to grow late.
<i>Il sole tramonta,</i>	The Sun sets.
<i>Aspettate un poco,</i>	Stay a little.
<i>Via-via, se sete lasso, vi riposerete a cena,</i>	Come, come, if you are weary, you will rest your self at Supper.

Per andare a letto,

*Si fa notte,
Comincia a far bujo,
E' molto tardi,
E' tempo d'andare a letto,
Sono addormentato,
Fate scaldare il vostro letto, ed andate a dormire.
Dov'è lo scaldaletto?*

*Voglio andare a letto,
Dite alla serva, che mi dia lenzuola bianche,
Buona sera, o buona notte.*

Of going to Bed.

The Night comes on.
It grows Dark.
It is very late.
It is time to go to Bed.
I am sleepy.
Get your Bed warmed, and go to sleep.
Where's the Warming-pan?
I will go to Bed.
Bid the Maid to give me clean Sheets.
Good Night.

V'au-

<i>V' auguro la buona notte,</i>	I wish you good Night.
<i>Avete fatto il mio letto?</i>	Have you made my Bed?
<i>Il letto è mal fatto,</i>	The Bed is ill made.
<i>Tirate le cortine,</i>	Draw the Curtains.
<i>Datemi un toccato,</i>	Give me a Night-cap.
<i>Spogliatemi,</i>	Undress me.
<i>Scalzatemi,</i>	Put off my Shoes and my Stockings.
<i>Venite fra poco a cercar la candela,</i>	Come anon to fetch the Candle.
<i>Svegliatemi domani a boun' ora,</i>	Awake me to morrow betimes.
<i>Bisogna che mi levi doma- ni al far del giorno,</i>	I must get up to morrow by break of Day.
<i>Datemi un guanciale,</i>	Give me a Pillow.
<i>Avete portato l' urinale,</i>	Have you brought the Chamber-pot.
<i>E sotto il letto,</i>	'Tis under the Bed.
<i>Fermate la porta, ed an- date a dormire,</i>	Shut the Door, and go to sleep.

Per vestirsi,

To dress one's self.

<i>Vestitevi,</i>	Dress your self.
<i>Perche non vi vestite?</i>	Why do you not dress your self?
<i>Fate del fuoco,</i>	Make a Fire.
<i>C'è del fuoco Signore,</i>	There is Fire, Sir.
<i>Dite alla serva che mi porti una camiscia bian- ca,</i>	Bid the Maid to bring me a clean Shirt.
<i>Non importa, questa mi servirà, fin a tanto che mi vesti,</i>	'Tis no matter, this here will serve me till I dress my self.
<i>Datemi i miei calzoni,</i>	Give me my Breeches.

Dov'è la mia veste da camera?

*Datemi le mie calzette,
Quali calzette, quelle di sete, o di stame?*

*Datemi le calzette di refe, perchè fa caldo,
Le mie calzette sono rotte,*

*Dateci un punto,
Ecco le tue scarpe,
Datemi le mie pianelle,
Fate raccomandare le mie scarpe,
Calzatemi,
Pettinatemi,
Pettinate la mia parrucca,
I pettini non sono netti,
Imprestatemi il vostro pettine,*

Datemi un bacile con dell'acqua,

Datemi un bicchier d'acqua per lavarmi la bocca,

Dov'è la salvietta, per asciugarmi le mani,

Dov'è la mia camiscia?

Eccola qui,

Non è calda,

Se lei brama la scaldereò,

Non importa,

Datemi un fazzoletto bianco,

Where is my Night-gown?

Give me my Stockings.
Which Stockings, the silk, or the worsted ones.

Give me my thread Stockings, because 'tis hot.
My Stockings have holes in them.

Stich them up.

There is your Shoes.

Give me my Slippers.

Let my Shoes be mended.

Put on my Shoes.

Comb my Head.

Comb my Peruke.

The Combs are not clean.

Lend me your Comb.

Give me a Bason with Water.

Give me a Glas of Water to wash my Mouth.

Where's the Towel to wipe my Hands.

Where's my Shirt?

Here it is.

It is not warm.

I'll warm it if you please.

'Tis no matter.

Give me a clean Handkerchief.

Datemi

*Datemi quello ch'è nella
mia saccoccia,*

*L'ho dato alla lavandara,
era sporco,*

*Ha ella portate le mie bi-
ancherie,*

*Signor sì, non ci manca
niente,*

*Datemi il mio vestito,
Che vestito metterà lei
oggi,*

*Datemi quel di panno,
Ora son quasi in ordine,
Non mi manca altro, che
i guanti, il cappello, e
la spada,*

Dov'è 'l mio mantello?

Eccolo qui,

Chi è lì,

Che commanda V.S.

Chiamatemi una sedia,

Give me that which is
in my Pocket.

I gave it to the Washer-
woman, it was foul.

Has she brought my Lin-
nen?

Yes Sir, there wants no-
thing.

Give me my Cloaths.

What Cloaths will you
be pleased to wear to-
Day.

Give me the Cloth one.

Now I am almost ready.

I only want my Gloves,
my Hat, and my
Sword.

Where's my Cloak.

Here it is.

Who is there.

What do you want Sir.

Call me a Chair.



LETTERE

D E L

Cardinal Bentivoglio

A Monsignor di Mondigliana Vescovo di Borgo S. Sepolcro,

A R O M A.



ON Così tosto io giungo a Ferrara, che ne do parte a V. S. Revma. e posso dire, che dall' uscir di carrozza al pigliar la penna, non ho quasi fraposto alcun intervallo di tempo. Da Roma a Loreto il caldo è stato piacevole; ma da Loreto a Ferrara ho provato un' aria di fuoco. In Macerata

rata godei l' allogio del Sig. Cardinale Visconte; in Ravenna del Sig. Cardinale Aldobrandino; ed in Faenza, del Sig. Cardinale Gaetano; e tutti m' hanno raccolti con grand' onore, e benignità. Qui io riverirò, come debbo, il Sig. Cardinale Spinola nostro Legato; mi tratterrò una settimana co' miei, e poi seguirò il mio viaggio. Il più mi resta, e nel caldo più minacciante: se ben le ferite del sole fuori d' Italia saranno più oblique, e per conseguenza men fervide. Questo è il primo pegno, che dalla mia parte io do a V. S. Rev^{ma} della scambievol corrispondenza, che noi ci promettemmo nel dividerci l' uno dall' altro; e da lei anderò aspettando il debito cambio. Ma per ora non più. Da Brusselles il resto; e prima ancora, se ne potrò aver l' opportunità. E bacio a V. S. Rev^{ma} affettuosamente le mani.



Al Medesimo.

QUESTA seconda Lettera, ch' io scrivo a V. S. Rev^{ma} è un parto delle Alpi; onde le comparirà innanzi tutta alpestre, e tutta orrida. Che tem' ella? Teme di vederla, e di leggerla? Non tema, no, che d' alpi, e di balze non avrà altro, che i nomi; ladove io ne ho provati gli effetti per sette giorni montando, e scendendo continuamente, finche pur son giunto, lodato Dio, a Lucerna; che vuol dire alla parte più piana di questo paese implacabile degli Svizzeri. Da Ferrara venni a Milano. Passai per Modona, e per

Parma, raccolto, ed alloggiato con grand' onore dall' uno, e dall' altro di quei due Principi. In Milano fui ospite del Sigr. Cardinale Borromeo, che mi raccolse, e trattò veramente con umanità singolare; e dopo aver sodisfatto al debito ufficio col Conte di Fuentes, mene partij, e di la mene venni verso gli Svizzeri. A Varese, ultimo luogo dello stato di Milano, mi licenziai dall' Italia, ch' ivi ella comincia a perdere il nome, e la lingua. Tutto' l resto fin qui è stato alpi, balze, dirupi, precipizj, una sopr' all' altra montagna, e San Gotardo sopra di tutte, che porta le nevi in Cielo, e ch' a me ora ha fatto vedere il verno di mezza state. Ma finalmente io mi trovo, come ho detto, in Lucerna, fra mille comodità, e favori, che ricevo da Monsignor Nunzio Verallo. Lucerna è in bel sito. Siede sopra un gran lago in un angolo, il qual si passa con un lunghissimo, e bellissimo ponte di legno tutto coperto. Fieri Monsignor Nunzio mi condusse in Senato, al quale io presentai un Breve della Santità di Nostro Signore, accompagnandolo coll' ufficio a bocca, che bisognava. Lucerna ha il primo luogo fra i sette Cantoni Cattolici. Altri cinque vene sono d' eretici; ed uno misto d' abitanti dell' una, e dell' altra sorte. Questa è tutta l' Unione Svizzera. Ritengono l' unione di tutti insieme con una lega generale perpetua, e con una Dieta pur generale, che si fa una, o più volte ogn' anno; dove si tratta degl' interessi comuni; ed hanno ancora altre leghe particolari fra loro, secondo che i tempi, e gl' interessi hanno congiunto più strettamente questi con quelli. Nel resto ogni Cantone è Repubblica a parte, e son molto differenti i governi fra loro. Altri son popolari; altri d' Aristocrazia; altri misti. Tutti hanno abborrito sempre l' Imperio
d' un

d' un solo, da che i primi si sottrassero all' ubbidienza di Casa d' Austria. In Altorfo, per esempio, dove io sono passato, la moltitudine esce alla campagna, tutti concorrono a dare i suffragj, e gli danno alzando le mani. A questo modo fanno le leggi, ed eleggono i magistrati. Qui all' incontro il Senato governa, e si ristringe a certe famiglie; ed in altri Cantoni, il Senato non delibera in certe maggiori occorrenze, che non siano convocati i mestieri, che vuol dire la moltitudine. Con diversi Principi, e particolarmente coi due Re, hanno lega gli Svizzeri, ma con varie eccezioni, ed in varie maniere. I Cantoni Cattolici col Re di Spagna; I Cattolici, e gli Eretici col Re di Francia. Da tutte le parti ricevono danari; a tutti si vendono; vi son le particolari; ed un medesimo Cantone, anzi un uomo medesimo ha danari dall' una, e dall' altra corona. Vendono il servitio de' corpi ad altri, ma ritengon la libertà del paese per loro. Al che sono ajutati non meno dalle forze della natura, che dalla ferocia di loro medesimi. La natura è forte qui sopramodo, e sopramodo anche povera. Onde chi vorrebbe provarsi ad espugnar le Alpi? E chi vorrebbe desiderar di signoreggiarle? Le Alpi son per gli Svizzeri, e gli Svizzeri all' incontro per le Alpi. Ma non più delle cose loro. Dimani parto di qua, ed in un giorno e mezzo, piacendo a Dio, arriverò a Basilea. Questo ho avuto di buono fra tanti monti, che m' hanno difeso dal sole; e difeso in maniera, che qualche volta, fra le immense loro mura glie, sono stato un mezzo dì intiero senza vederlo. E per fine a V.S. Rev^{ma} bacio con ogni affetto le mani.



Al Signor Cardinal Spinola Legato di Ferrara.

FURONO come augurj per me di felice viaggio quei tanti favori, che V. S. Ill^{ma} si degnò di farmi in Ferrara. Onde con somma prosperità, e passai poi l' alpi degli Svizzeri, e son giunto dopo alla residenza mia di Brusselles. Fieri l' altro io feci l' entrata publica, ed' ieri mi fu data la prima udienza da queste Sereniss. Altezze, le quali mi raccolsero con ogni maggior dimostrazione di rispetto, e d'onore verso la Santa Sede; come appunto si poteva aspettare da Principi, che si bene con l' eminenza del sangue accompagnano quella insieme della pietà. Del mio arrivo, ed ingresso al carico io vengo hora a dar la parte, che debbo a V. S. Ill^{ma} col riverente ufficio di questa Lettera. Io la supplico a gradirlo con la solita sua benignità, che voglia farmi godere ancora i medesimi segni della continuata sua protezione in Fiandra, che n' ho provati sempre con sì gran mia fortuna in Italia. Nel resto ben sa V. S. Ill^{ma} ch' in ogni tempo sarà immutabile la mia singolar divozione verso di lei, e che i suoi comandamenti da niun' altro saranno mai ne con maggior desiderio aspettati, ne con più viva prontezza eseguiti. E per fine le bacio umilissimamente le mani.



Al Signor Antonio Querengo.

CONFESSO il vero. Mi pare un sogno l'aver lettere da V.S. E' pur sua lettera quella, che ricevo da lei. Anzi pur non è sua, ma sotto il suo nome è lettera più tosto del Sigr. Livio nostro, che mi dichiara il desiderio del Sigr. Cardinale in proposito de' cavalli. Contuttociò voglio al dispetto di V. S. e del poco amor suo verso di me, che questa sia lettera sua, e che in ogni modo abbia luogo l'inganno, ed in lei l'avermi scritto, se ben non voleva, ed in me, d'aver ricevute sue lettere quando men ci pensava. Crudel Sigr. Querengo! Dopo un silenzio ostinatissimo di quattro anni, dopo esser morta, si può dire, in voi ogni memoria di me, scrivermi una lettera, ch'è quasi più non vostra, che vostra. E non vi par giusto ch'io mi risenta? Amico matabile, amico ingrato, amico sol di se stesso, amico in somma, che non è amico. Ma non più di vendetta. Torno come prima all'amore. Ch' al fine essendo io amico altrettanto immutabile, ed avendo raffinato me stesso in questa distanza di paesi e diversità di nazioni, non posso non amar voi come prima il mio Sigr. Querengo, e non esser più che mai parziale del vostro merito singolare. M'è stata dunque carissima questa occasione d'aver ricevute lettere da V. S. per confermarle di nuovo (come fo vivamente) l'antico desiderio mio di servirla, col quale anderrà sempre accompagnata la memoria di quei tem-

pi dolci di Padova, e di Roma, che infinite volte, con infinito gusto mi si rappresentan nell' animo. Del precorrer V. S. a Roma il Sig^r. Cardinale, credo, che facilmente cio debba riuscirle. Del riveder me troppo incerto ne resta il quando. Ne in questa parte è buon giudice l' affetto di V. S. O quante cose diremmo, e con quanto gusto, se spuntasse l' aurora, che conducesse quel giorno! In tanto io ho acquistata in Fiandra molto miglior sanità, Dio lodato, che non godeva in Italia. Questa mutazione, o d' aria, o di vini, o di cibi, o di vita, o d' ogni cosa più tosto insieme, n' avranno forse partorito l' effetto. Da quest' aria in particolare umida, e fredda vien temperata mirabilmente la mia complession calda, e secca. Ne puo esser invero maggior la sodisfazione, e che in tutto' l' resto ricevo da questa corte. E per fine a V. S. bacio le mani.



A l Signor Paolo Gualdo.

ERA ben tempo, che dopo un secolo di silenzio spuntasse un giorno dell' antica memoria di V. S. verso la mia persona. Ma quante cose ha bisognato, che vi concorrano? Che Monsignore Ortembergo fosse fatto Vescovo d' Aras, ch' egli venisse in Fiandra, che passasse per Padova, che fosse alloggiato da V. S. e ch' egli poi al fine le rapisse più dalle mani, che dalla volontà la lettera scrittami. Diciamo il vero, il mio Sig^r. Gualdo. Chi è lontano riman semivivo nella memoria, e nell' affezioni degli amici. Ma io stimai sempre
si

si affettuosa la volontà di V. S. verso di me, che mi pareva di poter credere, che niuna cosa, nè pur il mar gelato di queste nostre settentrionali contrade, pòtesse aver forza d' intiepidirla. Torno alla lettera, la quale finalmente, o data, o rapita, m' è stata carissima, e due dì fa solo, mi fu inviata da Monsignor vescovo d' Aras. Di cotesta università, di cotesti amici, e particolarmente del proprio stato di V. S. ho avuto gran gusto d' intendere quel ch' ella men' ha avisato. Ma come tralasciò ella di far commemorazione del nostro buon vecchio Pigna? forse perch' egli s' è dimenticato di me? Io qui vivissima conservo, e conserverò sempre, la memoria di Padova. Ne già quella delle mura Antenoree ne dell' altre parti inanimate di cotesta Città, ma delle parti animate, e spiranti, che mi rappresentano di continuo gli antichi gusti degli anni, ch' io vi spesi fra la dolce, e fruttuosa conversazione di tanti amici. Resta, che V. S. emendi il silenzio passato, nell' occasione di scrivere per l' avvenire. Io invitato risponderò, e non invitato, provocherò. In tanto si conserverà in me sempre l' antico affetto verso la sua persona, e la stima, ch' ho fatta in ogni tempo della sua molta virtù? E le prego per fine ogni vero bene.



Al Signor Marchese Spinola, Cavaliere del Tosone, e Mastro di Campo Generale D. S. M. C. in Fiandra.

E PER nobiltà di sangue, e per eminenza di merito, portò seco in Ispagna il Grandato V. E. anche prima di conseguirlo. Onde non è maraviglia se da tutte le parti si concorre quasi a gara nell'applauder a questo successo. E veramente si può stare in dubbio, qual sia per sentire maggior piacere, o l'Italia, che diede V. E. alla Spagna, o la Spagna, che conferisce in lei quest' onore, o la Fiandra, che le ha somministrata la materia principalmente da meritarlo. Io posso affermare a V. E. ch' in questa corte l' allegrezza non poteva apparirne maggiore; e qual sia la mia propria; non ho parole, che possono esprimerlo. Supplisco V. E. a gradire questo debole testimonio, che gliene invio. E poichè dovremo riaverla qui presto fra noi, allora io spererò di supplir meglio con la viva mia voce al difetto presente di questa lettera. Io prego Iddio intanto, ch' a V. E. conceda felicissimo ritorno, con ogni altra prosperità più desiderata. E per fine le bacio umilmente le mani.



Al Medesimo.

HA mostrato il solito singolar suo valore V. E. nell'acquisto di Vesel, e ha data nuova occasione alla lega cattolica d'averle nuovi obblighi d'un successo così importante. Io mene rallegro nel più affettuoso modo che posso con V. E. e come tanto interessato nella particolar gloria di lei, e come tenuto per tante cagioni a desiderar prosperi avvenimenti a quell'armi, che difendono sì buona causa. Piaccia a Dio di secondarle ogni giorno più: Che la mano di V. E. ch'ha saputo con celerità così grande, e mettere insieme l'esercito, e condurlo contro i nemici, sia l'istrumento, dal quale abbia in queste parti a ricevere altrettanto di vigore la Religione Cattolica, quanto essa prevale di giustizia all'Impietà Eretica. Io diedi subito pieno ragguaglio alla santità di Nostro Signore di quello, che fu veduto da me medesimo, per quel poco tempo, ch'ebbi fortuna d'esser soldato anch'io di V. E. sotto Aquisgrano. Hora invierò a Sua Santità le relazioni, che vengono dagli altri intorno a cotesti felici progressi di V. E. e quelle particolarmente, che ne fa risuonare la fama pubblica, degna tromba delle sue lodi. E perfine le bacio reverentemente le mani.



Al Signor Cardinale de' Medici.

NAcque alle grandezze V. S. Ill^{ma} e doveva la dignità del Cardinalato ricever da lei non men di splendore, che dargliene. Onde non è maraviglia, se la sua promozione è seguita con insoliti applausi. Io, che professo una servitù sì divota verso la sua Serenissima Casa, vengo ora con ogni più umile affetto a rallegrarmi con lei di veder collocata in grado sì eminente l' Illustrissima sua persona. Prego Dio, ch' a lei renda questo successo così felice, come al sacro Collegio, ed alla Chiesa è per riuscir fruttuoso. Vengo insieme a far quella parte che debbo a V. S. Ill^{ma} del ritorno ch' ho fatto di Fiandra in Italia, ed a passar riverente scusa con lei, se non ho potuto prima d' ora, per l' impedimento del viaggio, sodisfare all' obbligo del presente mio ufficio. E per fine le bacio umilissimamente le mani.

IL FINE.

a
n
-
-
-
n
r
a
-
a
a
-
r
-
s
o